£ 16865

HISTORY

BRITISH EMPIRE.

By

WILLIAM FRANCIS COLLIER, LL.D.,

Author of "Great Events of History," "History of English Literature," "History of Greece," "History of Rome," &c.

Senior Class Book.

LONDON:
T. NELSON AND SONS, PATERNOSTER ROW;
EDINBURGH; AND NEW YORK.

1880.

PREFACE.

THIS Senior Class Book contains a considerable amount of matter not to be found in my former work.

The text of the book consists of an Outline of the National Story, extending from Cæsar's Invasion to the year 1869, and possessing sufficient clearness and fulness of detail to answer the purposes of school tuition. The volume will, moreover, be found to contain all that is necessary to work a British History Paper for any of the ordinary Military or Civil Service Examinations.

The special features of the work are as follows —

1. **Key-words.**—What may be called the "Key-words" of each paragraph are printed in a bolder type, a device by which the general scope of the sentences is condensed into a single point, attracting the pupil's eye and so impressing his memory.

2. **Chronology.**—In addition to the Tabular List of Sovereigns at the beginning of each Period, and the Classified Table of Events at its close, Dates have been appended to the chief Events selected as Headings of Chapters, and Tables of Contemporary Foreign Events have been placed in connection with every reign throughout the book.

3. **Genealogy.**—The relationship of successive Sovereigns can be traced in the Chronological Lists of the different Dynasties; while clear Genealogical Trees, appended in suitable places, serve to illustrate the lineage and the collateral branchings of the various families that have held the thron

4 **Life and Manners**.—Each Period closes with a chapter describing the Daily Life and Manners of the Time To the last Period have been added special chapters on the "British Constitution," and the "Progress of the Nineteenth Century"

5 **Scotland and Ireland**.—So long as these portions of the Empire have a separate history, it is traced in connection with that of the successive Periods

6 **Authors, &c**.—Under each Dynasty will be found a full List, with condensed notes of their lives and most famous works, of the Authors and other Eminent Men who flourished then Under the Brunswick Period these Lists are given with the various reigns

7 **Colonies**.—The volume closes with an account of our Colonies and Dependencies, including numerous notes upon their geographical features and their historical importance

W F C

November 1881

CONTENTS.

Chap		Page
	INTRODUCTION	9
	ROMAN PERIOD	
I	Roman Period	13
	Leading Dates	18
	SAXON PERIOD	
I	Time of the Heptarchy	19
II	Early Saxon Kings	23
III	Time of Danish Rule	31
IV	Saxon Line restored	34
V	Scotland and Ireland during the Saxon Period	38
VI	Social Condition of the Anglo Saxons	41
	Leading Authors	45
	Leading Dates	45
	Genealogical Trees	46
	EARLY NORMAN KINGS	
I	William I	47
II	William II,	52
III	Henry I	55
IV	Stephen	59
V	Scotland during the Norman Period	62
VI	Social Condition of the Normans	64
	Leading Authors	69
	Leading Dates	69
	Genealogical Tree,	69
	PLANTAGENETS PROPER.	
I	Henry II	70
II	Richard I	75
III.	John	79

Chap.		Page
IV	Henry III,	83
V	Edward I,	87
VI	Edward II,	91
VII	Edward III,	94
VIII	Richard II,	100
IX	Scotland and Ireland during the First Seven Plantagenet Reigns	104
	Genealogical Trees	112
X	Social Condition of the People under the Plantagenets proper,	113
	Leading Authors,	115
	Leading Dates	116
	Genealogical Tree,	117
	HOUSE OF LANCASTER	
I	Henry IV,	118
II	Henry V,	122
III	Henry VI,	126
	HOUSE OF YORK	
I	Edward IV	132
II	Edward V,	137
III	Richard III,	138
IV	Social Condition of the People under the Houses of York and Lancaster	141
	Leading Authors	143
	Leading Dates	143
	Genealogical Tree,	144
	TUDOR PERIOD	
I	Henry VII,	145
II	Henry VIII,	155
III	Edward VI.,	166
IV	Mary I,	170
V	Elizabeth,	174
VI	Stuart Sovereigns of Scotland Ireland,	182
VII	Social Condition of the People under the Tudors,	194
	Leading Authors,	199
	Leading Dates,	200
	Genealogical Tree	202
	STUART PERIOD	
I	James I.,	203
II	Charles I,	208
III	The Commonwealth,	219
IV	Charles II,	226

Chap		Page
V	James II ,	236
VI	William III and Mary II ,	244
VII	Anne,	249
VIII	Social Condition of the People under the Stuarts,	254
	Leading Authors and Artists,	259
	Leading Dates,	260
	Genealogical Tree,	263
	GUELPH PERIOD	
I	George I ,	264
	Leading Authors,	269
II	George II ,	271
	Leading Authors and Artists,	279
III	Life in England under the Early Georges,	281
IV	George III ,	285
	Leading Authors, Artists, Inventors, &c.,	291
V	George III (continued),	293
	Leading Authors, Artists, Inventors, &c ,	304
VI	George IV ,	306
	Leading Authors, Artist, Inventors, &c.,	309
VII	William IV ,	310
	Leading Authors,	313
VIII.	Victoria,	314
	Leading Authors, Artists, Inventors, and Discoverers,	330
IX	Progress of the Nineteenth Century	332
X	The British Constitution,	336
	Leading Dates,	341
	Genealogical Tree,	343

BRITISH COLONIES AND DEPENDENCIES, 344

QUESTIONS FOR THE ANALYSIS OF ANY REIGN.

I Give the Period to which the reign belongs—its place in the Period—its opening and closing Dates

II Trace the Descent of the Sovereign from the Conqueror—name the father, mother, brothers sisters husband or wife, sons and daughters

III Describe the personal life character and death of the Sovereign

IV Describe the Foreign Policy of the reign—giving especially the Wars and Alliances

V Describe the Domestic Policy of the reign

VI Name and describe all important Laws, and other Constitutional

VII Give any dominions acquired or lost and Colonies planted, &c

VIII Name the leading Statesmen Warriors Authors Men of Science &c—and tell for what they are famous

IX Give and explain any Historical Names or Titles—such as **Triers, Ordainers, Field of the Cloth of Gold** &c

X State and describe the leading Events, classifying them as religious political social, commercial literary, &c

In describing an event there are six things always to be given 1 The Causes 2 The Time 3 The Place 4 The Persons concerned 5 The Circumstances 6 The Consequences.

HISTORY

THE BRITISH EMPIRE.

INTRODUCTION.

The British Isles
Etymology of Names
Earliest Inhabitants
Their Condition in Cæsar's time (55 B C)
Druidism

BRITISH ISLES.—The British Isles lie to the north-west of the Continent of Europe; the larger, Great Britain, being situated near the Continent; the smaller, Ireland, lying further west in the Atlantic Ocean Great Britain, called by the ancients Albion and Britannia, comprises the three countries, England, Wales, and Scotland

Origin of Names.—The origin of the names, Britain, Albion, Wales, and Scotland, is wrapped in much obscurity Some have supposed that the name Britain was derived from Brutus, a son of Ascanius the Trojan The name Albion—still used in the form Albyn, or Alpin, as the Highland term for Scotland—is supposed to have been given to the island by the Gauls, from the chalk cliffs of the south-eastern coast It is a Celtic word, meaning "White Island," and is most likely connected with *albus* and *Alp*. Wales, or Weallas, is thought to have been so named from a Saxon word, meaning "wanderers" or "foreigners," because it was peopled by British refugees. It was also called Cambria. The Welsh have always called themselves Cymri, a name which probably connects them with the ancient Cimbri. Scotland took its name from a tribe called Scoti—perhaps akin to the Scythians of Northern Europe—who, early in the Christian era. passed from the north of Ireland into Britain.

and, many centuries afterwards, gave their name to their new country At the time of the Roman invasion the southern Britons called the inhabitants of the northern part of the island *Caoill daoin*, or "people of the woods" Hence the Latinized name Caledonia The etymology of the word England admits of no doubt It is another form of Angle-land, and was derived from the Angli, the chief of the Teutonic tribes The smaller island was anciently called in Greek Ierne, a name which seems to have been formed from the Celtic word *eire*, meaning "west" The Romans called it Hibernia and Insula Sacra. Its present names are Ireland and Erin, in which can still be traced its old appellation.

These two islands, lying almost in the centre of the land hemisphere, form the nucleus of the British Empire, whose limits include the great colonies of British America, Australia, The Cape, India, and numerous smaller dependencies in every quarter of the globe The object of this work is to trace, from the earliest time, of which we have any sure knowledge, to the present day, the events which have united under one Sovereign so many scattered lands.

Races.—The original inhabitants of the British Isles were Celts The population now consists of two well-defined races—the Celtic and the Gothic, branches of the great Indo-European or Japhetic stock. The former are found in Wales, Cornwall, the Isle of Man, the Highlands of Scotland, and the south and west of Ireland,—in all places speaking the same language, though in different dialects, and still retaining in manners and dress many peculiarities of the ancient race, while the latter hold the lower and more fertile districts Akin to the Celts of Britain are the Bretons, or people of Bretagne, anciently Armorica, the most westerly part of France

First Glimpses.—Many centuries before the Christian era, Phœnician sailors from the colonies in Africa and Spain visited the British Islands, led thither by their rich stores of tin. Herodotus, writing about four centuries and a half before Christ, mentions the Cassiterides or Tin Islands (supposed to be the Scilly Isles); but the Greeks then knew nothing of them beyond the fact of their existence.

Ancient Britons.—From Cæsar, Tacitus, Diodorus Siculus, and others we learn a little about ancient Britain. The country seems to have been then full of marsh and forest, with a few patches of rudely tilled ground on the shore next Gaul. The natives of the interior sowed no corn, but lived on milk and flesh.

Those far north were often obliged to feed on the roots and leaves which grew wild in the woods. They clad themselves in skins, leaving their limbs bare; and on these they stained blue patterns with the juice of a plant called *woad*. They were a brave and hardy people, and had some knowledge of war. Cæsar describes them as fighting on foot, on horseback, and in chariots, which, from blades that have been dug up on ancient battle-fields, seem to have been armed with scythes attached to the axle. Although divided into many tribes, they chose a single leader when danger menaced their common country; and, thus united, they were most formidable. Those who lived in the south were, from their intercourse with Gaul, more civilized than the rest. They wore a dress of woollen cloth, woven in many colours, and were adorned with chains of gold, silver, or bronze. Golden and silver ornaments for the arms, neck, and head, rings of various metals, which, Cæsar says, were the only sort of money they used, spear and arrow heads of flint and bronze, shaped with a delicacy, which, with all our machinery, we cannot excel; and great circles of monumental stone, such as Stonehenge and Avebury in Wiltshire, are almost the only memorials by which we can judge of this ancient people.

Druidism.—The religion of the Celts was Druidism; their priests were called Druids, and their chief sanctuary was the Island of Mona, now Anglesey. The word Druid seems to be connected with *drus*, the Greek name of the oak, their sacred tree. In addition to their priestly duties, the Druids were the bards, the lawgivers, and the teachers of the people. They wore long white robes and flowing beards, to distinguish them from the people, over whom they had complete control. They believed in the transmigration of souls, and taught the worship of one God, but the serpent, the sun and moon, and the oak shared their veneration, and their altars were stained with the blood of men and women, whom, as Cæsar tells, they burned in large numbers, inclosed in immense cages of wicker-work. These victims were generally men who had been convicted of theft or some other crime, the sacrifice of these being deemed peculiarly acceptable to the gods, but in the absence of such, the priests never hesitated to immolate the innocent. The circles of stone, already referred to, are supposed by some to have been the scenes of these fearful rites; but it is more probable that they were sepulchral monuments erected in honour of departed chiefs. The oak groves were the dwellings of the Druids, and the temples for their daily worship. Their three chief feasts had reference to the harvest:

one was held after the seed was sown, another when the corn was ripening, and a third when the crop was gathered in. Besides these, a solemn ceremony took place on the sixth day of the moon nearest to the 10th of March, which was their New-year's day. The Archdruid with a golden knife cut the mistletoe from its parent oak, while attendant priests, with their white robes outspread, caught the sacred plant as it fell The traces of these customs linger still, especially in the south of England, where the sports of May-day, the fires of Midsummer-eve, the harvest-home, and the cutting of the mistletoe at Christmas are duly observed.

ROMAN PERIOD.

55 B C. to 410 A D —465 years

Leading Features THE DAWN OF CIVILIZATION, AND THE INTRODUCTION OF CHRISTIANITY.

CHAPTER I.

Julius Cæsar Lands (55 B C)
His Return
Intentions of Augustus and Caligula
Lieutenants of Claudius (43 A D)
Caractacus (51 A D)
Boadicea
Agricola (78–86 A D)
Roman Walls
Severus (209 A D)
Roman Division of Britain
Carausius and Allectus
Christianity Introduced
Withdrawal of the Romans (410 A D)
Scotland and Ireland during Roman Period
Roman Roads and Towns

JULIUS CÆSAR, having subdued the tribes of Gaul, desired to add Britain to his conquests He had left a legion under Publius Crassus to guard the Venetic Isles, the group of which Belle-isle is chief, and from the soldiers he learned the course, long and carefully kept a secret, by which the Gallic merchants reached the coast of Britain The valuable pearl fisheries, and the mineral wealth of the island were inducements additional to the glory which he expected to reap He first called together a number of Gallic merchants, but could learn nothing of value from them; then, having sent an officer with a ship of war to reconnoitre, he crossed the Strait of Dover, called in Latin "Fretum Oceani," with 80 ships, having on board two legions, or 12,000 troops He found the high white cliffs of Kent studded with bands of Britons, and had much difficulty in landing, however, the eagle-bearer of the Tenth Legion led the way, and Roman discipline prevailed. Four days later, a storm shattered the fleet, and Cæsar, having repaired his vessels, thought it best to return to Gaul He had been absent for seventeen days. 55 B C

Return of Cæsar.—Next summer he landed on the Kentish shore with five legions, comprising 32,000 foot and 2000 horse.

The British tribes had united their forces, and were led by Cassivelaunus, whose territory lay north of the Thames. He proved himself a brave and skilful general, and kept the Romans in check for some time, by taking advantage of the woods and rivers. However, Cæsar forced his way across the Thames, and came up with his foe, intrenched in the midst of thick woods and treacherous marshes. Here the British chief held out for a while, in hopes that the leaders of the Kentish tribes would take the Roman camp and burn the fleet, but, when he heard that they had been foiled in this attempt, he came to terms with Cæsar. Hostages were given, the amount of yearly tribute settled, and Cæsar went back to Gaul.

Until the reign of the **Emperor Claudius**, the Romans did not return to Britain. Augustus, first Emperor of Rome, had formed a plan to do so, but its execution was prevented. The foolish Caligula led his troops to the shore of Gaul, opposite to Britain, where, having shown them the faint outline of the cliffs in the distance, he set them to gather shells in their helmets, as the spoils of the conquered ocean. This he celebrated on his return to Rome with a triumph.

Plautius and Vespasian, the lieutenants of Claudius, after hard fighting, gained a footing on the island. Plautius, supplied from Gaul with all necessaries, drove the Britons across the
43 Thames, but further he could not go, until the Emperor
A.D. joined him with new forces. Then, having crossed the river, the Romans penetrated Essex, where they founded their first colony—Camulodūnum, now Colchester or Maldon. Vespasian fought more than thirty battles, before he subdued the tribes of Hampshire and Wight.

Plautius was succeeded by Ostorius Scapula, who disarmed all the Britons within the Roman bounds. This act roused the spirit of the natives. The Silures, a tribe of South Wales, took the lead; and under their chief, **Caractacus**, they kept the Romans in constant war for nine years. But at last the Romans, having forced their way into the British strongholds, routed the army of Caractacus; who, fleeing to his step-mother, Cartismandua, Queen of the Brigantes, was by her betrayed into their hands. He was led in triumph through the streets of Rome, and was doomed to die; but his dauntless bearing in the Emperor's presence won for him a free pardon.

Another leader of the Britons was **Boadicea**, who, in Nero's reign, was Queen of the Iceni, a tribe inhabiting Norfolk and Suffolk. She, having suffered shameful wrongs and insults from

the Romans, called her countrymen to arms. She led them to battle, destroyed Camulodūnum and London, which was, even at this early date, a flourishing commercial town, but, being defeated by Suetonius Paulinus, she killed herself 61 A.D.

To **Julius Agricola**, lieutenant of Domitian, is due the honour of making Britain a Roman province in more than name. We have an account of his operations in the works of Tacitus, his son-in-law. While he upheld the terror of the Roman arms and checked all revolt, he adopted also a milder policy. He taught the arts of peace to the conquered race, and many high-born Britons assumed the Roman toga, language, and manner of life. He did what no Roman general had yet done, in penetrating the pathless woods of Caledonia, and marching to the shores of the Moray Firth. In this expedition he had to contend with many fierce foes, and fought a battle at **Mons Grampius**, with the Caledonian chief Galgacus, before passing that great natural barrier. The scene of this battle is uncertain, many name Ardoch in Perthshire as the probable place. While cruising upon the northern coasts, the sailors of Agricola discovered Britain to be an island. 78 A.D. 84 A.D.

Roman Walls.—This great general built two banks of earth from sea to sea, for the protection of the southern provinces: one from the Tyne to the Solway Firth; the other, two years later, from the Firth of Forth to the Firth of Clyde. The Emperor Adrian, unable to hold the northern rampart, raised a stone wall called *Vallum Adriani*, or the Picts' Wall, close to the first chain of forts built by Agricola. In the reign of Antonine the Romans, under Lollius Urbicus, pushed their territory far north, and restored Agricola's second wall, which was then called *Vallum Antonini*, and at a later date Graham's Dyke. 79 A.D. 121 A.D. 140 A.D.

More than once a Roman governor of Britain assumed the imperial purple. This happened in one case during the reign of Severus, when Albinus led the British legions into Gaul to contest the Empire. **Severus**, victorious over his rival, divided the government of Britain between two of his lieutenants; but he was soon obliged, by the incursions of the Caledonians, to visit the island in person. He marched to attack his fierce foes in their mountain fastnesses. They, whose only weapons were a dirk, a heavy sword slung around them by an iron chain, and a lance with a bell at one end, and whose sole protection was a rude

target of hide, soon yielded to the skill and valour of disciplined legions. Severus traversed their forests, and, having inflicted heavy punishment upon them, repaired the breaches in the wall of Adrian. He had scarcely turned south when the Cale-
211 donians rose again, and in his northward march to reduce
A.D. them he died at York, then Eborācum. His son Caracalla yielded to the native chiefs all the territory north of Adrian's wall

By the Romans Britain was divided into six provinces These were as follow ·—

I **BRITANNIA PRIMA,** including all the country south of Gloucestershire and the Thames.
II **FLAVIA CÆSARIENSIS,** the central counties, forming a square whose angles rest on the estuaries of the Humber, the Dee, the Severn and the Thames
III **BRITANNIA SECUNDA,** Wales and that part of England west of the Severn and the Dee
IV **MAXIMA CÆSARIENSIS,** from the Humber and the Mersey on the south to the Wall of Adrian on the Tyne
V **VALENTIA,** the country between the Walls of Adrian and Antonine
VI **VESPASIANA** or **CALEDONIA,** the tracts north of Antonine's Wall

The first four provinces were completely reduced, the fifth was partially subdued by Agricola, Urbicus, Severus, and Theodosius, who lived in the reign of Valentinian, and gave his sovereign's name to the district; the last was merely traversed, but never conquered, by the Romans.

Our knowledge of Britain during the latter years of the Roman Period is very scanty For eleven years the island was an independent state. **Carausius,** appointed Count of the Saxon Shore by the Emperors Diocletian and Maximian, com-
289 manded a fleet, which was sent to defend the British coasts
A.D. from the Scandinavian pirates He established himself as Ruler of Britain, and actually forced the Emperors to
297 acknowledge his claim to the title He fell at York by
A.D. the dagger of a Briton named Allectus, who seized the throne; but, three years afterwards, he too fell in battle
300 with the Emperor Constantius Chlorus, and Roman
A.D. ascendency was restored Constantius married Helena, a British lady, by whom he had a son, afterwards called Constantine the Great.

It is an unfailing rule in history, that, when a civilized nation subdues one less advanced, the ultimate benefit derived by the conquered people far outweighs any temporary loss at first suffered. The early years of Roman rule in Britain were but

the dark hour before the dawn. **Christianity** was introduced into Britain about the latter end of the first century; some say by Peter or Paul The Britons suffered persecution for the Cross in the reign of Diocletian St Alban, the first British martyr for Christ, gave his name to the town of Hertford- 303
shire at which he suffered Constantine the Great hon- A.D.
oured Britain as the birth-place of his mother, and encouraged the teaching of the Christian faith in the island. Thus the Britons received from their Roman conquerors the greatest boon that could be conferred on a nation,—"to know Christ and Him crucified"

At last the incursions of the Goths and other northern tribes became so frequent and so fierce, that the Roman soldiers were withdrawn from Britain to guard the heart of the Empire. Levies of the British youth were employed in the Roman service in Gaul, and elsewhere on the Continent Soon, 410
the Emperor **Honorius**, finding it advisable to contract A.D.
the limits of the Empire, released the Britons from Roman sway, and withdrew all signs of authority.

Little can be said of **Scotland** and **Ireland** during this period. The remains of Roman baths and forts at Burgh-head, Ardoch near Dunblane, and other places, clearly prove that the Romans penetrated as far north as the Moray Firth But the wild forests north of the Forth were too dense for the manœuvres of disciplined troops, and the Roman legions made no permanent conquest of their savage denizens The Orkney and the Shetland Islands, with the northern counties, were, during the latter years of this period, seized by the Scandinavians, whose descendants may still be found there. Ireland, or the Sacred Isle, maintained intercourse with the Welsh, and was the abode of the older Celtic tribes, who long preserved the Druidical worship in its original forms.

The Romans taught the Britons to develop the resources of their country. They opened up the island by making roads paved with stone These were called *Strata*, whence our word Street They also laid the foundation of a lucrative trade, Rome and her continental provinces affording a good market for British produce The chief exports at this time were corn, cheese, lime, chalk, oysters, and pearls British cattle, horses, and dogs were much prized; and large supplies of tin, lead, iron, with some gold and silver, were drawn from the island. A gold coinage was in use shortly after Cæsar's time. Specimens have been found stamped with the figures of cattle, like the Latin *pecunia*

(from *pecus*) The Romans being essentially a military nation, the words introduced by them, and still used by us, relate to their position in the island, as an army in occupation of a conquered land. Their towns were military stations strongly fortified; and were called in Latin *castra*, or "camps" This word can be recognized in various forms in such names as Chester, Winchester, Leicester, and Doncaster The Latin word *colonia* can be traced in Lincoln and Colchester, and the city of Bath, although not now called by a Roman name, was a leading Roman watering-place, as recent discoveries of long-buried temples and statues have shown

LEADING DATES OF THE ROMAN PERIOD

Landing of Julius Cæsar,	B C 55	Adrian's Wall built,	A D 121
Return of the Romans in the reign of Claudius,	A D 43	Antonine's Wall built,	140
Death of Boadicea,	61	Death of Severus at York,	211
Agricola begins his government,	78	Britain independent,	289
Agricola builds his first Wall,	79	Roman rule restored,	300
Battle of Mons Grampius,	84	Martyrdom of St Alban,	303
		Romans leave Britain .	410

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

Murder of Julius Cæsar,	B C 44	Destruction of Jerusalem,	A D 70
Accession of Augustus,	27	Constantinople founded,	330
BIRTH OF JESUS CHRIST,	3	Alaric sacks Rome,	410
THE CRUCIFIXION,	A D 30		

SAXON PERIOD.

410 A.D. to 1066 A.D.—656 years.

CHAPTER I.

TIME OF THE HEPTARCHY.

410 A.D to 827 A.D —417 years.

Leading Features: BLOODSHED AND CHANGE.

Miserable State of the Britons.	Establishment of the Heptarchy.	Mission of Augustine (597 A.D.)
Arrival of Teutonic Tribes (449 A.D.)	King Arthur	Heptarchy Reduced to Three
	Bretwalda.	Wessex Survives (800 A.D.)

The Britons, who had lived in peace under Roman protection, were in a wretched plight when that was withdrawn. The Picts and Scots, breaking through the unguarded walls, pillaged the northern country; the pirates of the Danish and German coasts, who had hardly been kept in check by the Roman fleets, descending upon the east and south, sailed up the rivers in their light flat-bottomed skiffs, burning and slaying without mercy; while the land was torn by internal strife, between a Roman faction under Ambrosius and a British under Vortigern. The petty British states made a feeble attempt at union by the election of a monarch, whom they called **Pendragon**; but the contentions for this office only made things worse

Vortigern, it is said, asked the aid of the pirates, or sea-kings, as they called themselves They were fierce men of great size, with blue eyes, ruddy complexion, and yellow streaming hair, practised in war, using the axe, the sword, the spear, and the mace. Their chief god was Odin or Woden, their heaven was Valhalla. The story of their settlement in Britain, though true in some points, rests on uncertain tradition. It is, that two chiefs of the Jutes, or people of Jutland, named **Hengist** and

Horsa, were hired by Vortigern for the defence of his faction. They landed at Ebbsfleet, on the coast of Thanet in Kent; **449** but after they had repelled the enemies of Vortigern, they A.D. turned their arms against himself, seized Kent, and invited their kindred over to share the spoil Another story, of British origin, makes Kent a gift to the Jutes from Vortigern who fell in love with Rowena, the daughter of Hengist For more than a century after this, bands of invaders, from the countries lying between the Elbe and the Rhine, continued to pour upon the south and east shores of Britain, driving the inhabitants west and north before them, and seizing all the lowland territory These invaders were of three tribes, Jutes, Angles, and Saxons.

Seven kingdoms, called the **Saxon Heptarchy**, were thus founded These were,—

I **KENT**; founded by Hengist 457 A.D.
II **SOUTH SAXONY**, including Sussex and Surrey, founded by Ella, 490 A.D.
III **WEST SAXONY**, or **WESSEX**, including all the counties west of Sussex and south of the Thames, Devon and Cornwall excepted, founded by Cerdic, 419 A.D.
IV **EAST SAXONY**, including Essex and Middlesex, founded by Ercenwin, 527 A.D.
V **NORTHUMBRIA**, the land north of the Humber, extending to the Forth, founded by Ida, 547 A.D.
VI **EAST ANGLIA**, including Norfolk, Suffolk, and Cambridge, founded by Uffa, 575 A.D.
VII **MERCIA**, including the Midland counties, east of the Severn, north of the Thames, and south of the Humber, founded by Cridda, 582 A.D.

The chief opponent of the Saxon invaders was **Arthur**, King of the Silures in South Wales He won twelve battles The sixty "Knights of the Round Table" were his principal **542** officers He was slain in battle against his nephew, A.D. Mordred, and was buried at Glastonbury, where his coffin was found in the reign of Henry II.

The Kings of the Heptarchy were at constant war among themselves, and the bounds of the Seven States were always changing The King, who for the time had the ascendency, was called Bretwalda, a word meaning "powerful king"

Christianity, which had been forgotten in these wars, now began to revive, and Pope Gregory became desirous of bringing Britain under the rule of the Roman see. Purchasing some English youths in the slave-market at Rome, he endeavoured to train them for the work of missionaries; but soon abandoning this project, he sent **Augustine**, with forty monks, to preach the

Cross in Britain. The conduct of these emissaries of Pope Gregory has been variously represented, but this at least is certain, that God overruled all for good, and the heathenism of the Saxons gradually yielded to the power of Chris- 597
tianity. Ethelbert, King of Kent, influenced by his wife A D
Bertha, a professed Christian, was the first royal convert; and the chief church was built at Canterbury, which has ever since continued to be the ecclesiastical capital of England. Sebert, King of Essex, was also converted. He destroyed the temple of Apollo at Westminster, and built a church in honour of St Peter, where the Abbey now stands The temple of Diana fell too, and on its site was raised a church to St Paul. Edwin was a famous Bretwalda of this period, who subdued Anglesey and Man. His dominion extended over nearly the whole country from the Forth to the Thames On the southern shore of the Forth he founded a city, still bearing his name—Edwin's burgh or Edinburgh On becoming a Christian himself, he convoked the National Assembly, and explained the reasons of his change of faith His chiefs, following his example, solemnly renounced the worship of the ancient gods, and Coifi the high priest was the first to give a signal for destruction by hurling his lance at the idol in the pagan temple Thirty-four years previous to the mission of Augustine, **Columba** of Donegal had landed in Scotland with twelve companions, and established a Christian seminary in the Island of Iona His followers were called Culdees (worshippers of God) They founded institutions in many parts of Scotland, and penetrated into England Oswald, successor to Edwin of Northumbria, had, during an exile among the Scots, wandered to Iona, and received the lessons of Christianity. On his return he founded a monastery on Lindisfarne, thence called Holy Isle In their principles and practice the Culdees offered a vigorous opposition to the Catholic Church, but the followers of Augustine were determined to bring the whole of Britain under the spiritual supremacy of the Pope, and they ultimately triumphed. Many words connected with the Christian worship were brought into use by the Roman monks, such as minster, for *monasterium;* candle, for *candela*, preach, for *prædicare.*

The seven kingdoms were at last reduced to three, Northumbria, Mercia, and Wessex. Northumbria soon fell before the prowess of the Mercian Kings Two of these, **Penda** and **Offa** the Terrible, are worthy of notice. The latter conquered the Welsh, and confined them to their mountains by Offa's Dyke, a

ditch and rampart stretching from the mouth of the Dee to the channel of Bristol. He also subdued a great part of Wessex. He did much good to the Church, although not a pious man. His palaces, coins, and medals prove him to have been a man of some refinement

Wessex was the last surviving kingdom of the Heptarchy. When Offa died, Brihtric, a usurper, held the throne of that kingdom. He had married Offa's daughter, Eadburga, and was upheld by the influence of the Mercian King Soon after her father's death, Eadburga poisoned her husband and fled to France, but, being driven from that country, she fell into great want, and died a beggar on the streets of an Italian town **Egbert**, the true King, who had been living for fourteen years at the court of Charlemagne, returned to England on his rival's death, and received the crown of Wessex He defeated the Britons of Devon and Cornwall, overthrew Beornwulf, usurper of Mercia, who was killed in the battle, added Mercia to his kingdom of Wessex; and soon united under his sway all the territories south of the Tweed The kingdom thus formed was called **England**, or the land of the Angli, from the most powerful of the three invading tribes.

827 A.D

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS.

Clovis King of the Franks,	486–511	Battle of Tours,	732
Reign of Justinian,	527–65	Reign of Charlemagne,	771–814
The Hegira,	622	Crowned at Rome,	800
Saracens invade Spain,	710	Irene dethroned,	802

CHAPTER II

EARLY SAXON KINGS

827 A D to 1017 A D —190 years —15 Kings.

NINTH CENTURY	A D		A.D.
EGBERT—began to rule	827	**EDMUND I** (brother)	941
ETHELWULF (son)	836	**EDRED** (brother)	946
ETHELBALD (son)	857	**EDWY** (nephew)	955
ETHELBERT (brother)	860	**EDGAR** (brother)	959
ETHELRED I (brother)	866	**EDWARD the Martyr** (son)	975
ALFRED (brother)	871	**ETHELRED II the Unready** (half-brother)	978
TENTH CENTURY			
EDWARD the Elder (son)	901	ELEVENTH CENTURY	
ATHELSTAN (son)	925	**EDMUND II, Ironside** (son)	1017

Leading Features **LAW AND ORDER SLOWLY IMPROVING; THE DANES A CONSTANT SOURCE OF TROUBLE.**

The Danes (787 A D)
Peter's Pence
Alfred the first Earl
Alfred King (871–901 A D)
War with the Danes
Chippenham
Alfred's Hiding place
Ethandune (878 A D)
Landing of Hastings (893 A D)
Improvements in Education
Law and Justice
Bible Translated into Anglo-Saxon
The Five Burghs
Dunstan Archbishop (962 A D)
Dane geld
Massacre of Danes (1002 A D
Sweyn
Triumph of Canute (1017 A D)

EGBERT was crowned at Winchester, then the chief city His achievements prove him to have been a man of fortitude, valour, and decision He was called Egbert (Bright eye), according to the custom of half-civilized nations, whose names are often derived from personal appearance The Danes began to be troublesome in this reign They came, like the Saxons, originally from the forests of Germany, but, being worsted in war with Charlemagne, they removed to the country we call Denmark Akin to the Saxons—for they were both from a common stock—they hated these with no common hatred, as renegades from the faith of Woden and Thor Their first descent on the island was at Teignmouth They continued their ravages till Egbert defeated them at Hengsdown Hill in Cornwall Egbert died in the following year.

787 A.D.

835 A.D.

Ethelwulf, eldest son of Egbert, succeeded. He had been a monk. By his first wife, Osberga, daughter of Oslac his cup-bearer, he had four sons, all of whom in turn held the throne. In his latter days, he made a pilgrimage to Rome with Alfred, his youngest son, who had been there before. His second wife was Judith, daughter of Charles the Bald, King of France She was probably not more than twelve years old when the marriage took place. In this reign a tax called *Peter's pence* was levied by the Pope, to maintain an English college at Rome Tithes were also granted to the clergy, and every Wednesday was set apart for prayer against the Danes. Ethelwulf died at Stambridge in Essex, and was buried at Steyning in Sussex.

Ethelbald married his step-mother, Judith; but was induced by the Bishop of Winchester to give her up She retired to the court of her father, by whom she was imprisoned, but, escaping, she eloped with Baldwin, forester of France, on whom was afterwards conferred the earldom of Flanders She was the ancestress of the Conqueror's wife.

Ethelbert's reign is noted only for a descent of the Danes upon Thanet It closed in 866 A.D.

Ethelred I. was hardly pressed by the Danes, and fought many battles with them. Aston and Merton were the chief. In the latter he was mortally wounded His brother Alfred, who was by him created an Earl, was the first to bear that title in England. During this reign there was a great famine, followed by a pestilence upon men and cattle Edmund, Prince of East Anglia, was murdered by the Danes, near the town called on that account Bury St Edmunds.

Alfred, surnamed the Great, now became King. He was not the heir, for his brother's infant son, Ethelwald, was
871 living; but the nobles of Wessex, it being a time of peril,
A.D. transferred the crown to one better able to guard its rights. He was in his twenty-second year, and had been for some time married to Alswitha, daughter of a Mercian noble. Though the victim of an internal disease which left him few painless hours during twenty-four years, his energies never drooped through all the changes of a toilsome life. It is said that a love of literature was first stirred in his breast by his mother, Osberga, who promised a richly bound and illuminated volume of Saxon poems, greatly admired by her sons, to him who should first learn to recite them. Alfred won the prize, and from that time a great love of study distinguished him.

At first King Alfred, in his zeal for the reform of abuses,

excited so much discontent among his subjects, that they were unwilling to face the Danes for a monarch of such severity But the ravages of the invaders grew more formidable every day. A battle was fought at Wilton in Wiltshire, in which Alfred was defeated He then entered into negotiations with the Danes, who withdrew from Wessex on payment of a large sum Their ravages were afterwards directed to Mercia and Northumbria, where they burned and butchered without mercy

For many years Alfred held possession of the country south of the Thames. During this time he equipped a fleet that did signal service against the Danes After a period of prosperity, misfortune overtook the King once more Guthrum, a Danish leader, who had taken post at Gloucester, made **878** a night-march on Chippenham, a royal villa upon the A D Avon, where Alfred was then residing The King fled in disguise, and sought refuge in Somerset, while his adherents were scattered by the Danes. The chroniclers of his life tell a story of his retirement, which has formed a subject for picture and for poem The wife of his humble host, a neat-herd, sent him to watch cakes, but, in his absence of mind, he let them burn She scolded him soundly—some say struck him—saying that. lazy as he was in turning them, he would be active enough in eating them. His hiding-place was **Athelney** (Isle of Nobles), a marshy island formed by the meeting of the rivers Parret and Tone, and here he lay for some months, visited at times by his nobles, who were gradually and secretly gathering strength for a fierce struggle.

Hearing that the Danes under Ubba had been surprised and beaten by the Earl of Devon, Alfred resolved to strike the blow at once. In the disguise of a harper he visited the Danish camp, and, by the beauty of his music, won his way to Guthrum's tent, where he was feasted without suspicion He saw the carelessness of the Danes, heard their plans discussed, and then, stealing from the camp, called his friends together in Selwood Forest The summons was joyfully received The Saxons and the Danes met at the foot of **Ethandune**, a **878** hill in Somersetshire, and the victory was Alfred's He A D. laid siege to the Danish camp, and in fourteen days forced Guthrum to capitulate. This chief with many of his followers, having consented to be baptized as Christians, received a strip of the eastern coast from the Thames to the Tweed. This tract was hence called the **Danelagh.**

Once more the Danes, in 330 ships, under Hastings, landed

on the Kentish shore, and ravaged the south of the island for three years, but the genius of Alfred met every difficulty.

893 A.D. After defeating the invaders at Farnham, he invested their stronghold at Ware. Their skiffs crowded the Lea but Alfred, by digging a trench beside the river, shallowed the stream, and caused the Danish vessels to run aground, when they fell an easy prey to his troops This drove the pirates from England for a time The rest of his reign was peace

During his latter years he was engaged in carrying out those plans for his people's welfare, which he had conceived amid the storms of his earlier life He built strong castles, both inland and on the shore, where an enemy could be best withstood He organized a militia system, according to which all men capable of bearing arms were divided into three sets One body occupied the towns as garrisons, while the other two were by turns engaged in military service and the cultivation of the land He encouraged learning, both by his example and his laws His court was the home of many distinguished scholars, and we owe to the King himself several works, among which are Saxon translations of *Æsop's Fables* and of *Bede's History of the Saxon Church*. He founded a school at Oxford, and passed a law enforcing on the nobles the education of their children His day was divided into three parts one, devoted to business of state; a second, to prayer and study, a third, to sleep, meals, and recreation and these periods he measured by candles, burning one inch in twenty minutes

But perhaps Alfred's strongest claim to the name "Great" is founded on his political institutions He framed a code of laws, in which the chief enactments of Ethelbert and Offa had place, and these he executed with such stern impartiality that crime became rare We can trace to his wisdom the practical application of many principles of modern British law. He enacted that it was a capital offence to plot against the King Though not (according to the common story) the originator of trial by jury, he certainly aided much in establishing that safeguard of our personal rights. The division of the land into counties, hundreds, and tithings or tenths, which had existed before, but which he remodelled and improved, enabled him to hold all parts under strict control; and the terror of his name was so great, that it became a common saying, that golden ornaments might be hung up by the road-side, and no robber would dare to touch them

901 A.D. He died at Farringdon in Berkshire, and was buried at Winchester.

Edward, surnamed the Elder, Alfred's son, succeeded. He was the first to assume the title "King of England" Even Alfred, in his will, called himself "Alfred, of the West Saxons King." A cousin, Ethelwald, made a desperate attempt to seize the crown, but was defeated by Edward, and slain. This monarch is the reputed founder of the University of Cambridge, although a school had been established there by Sebert, of East Anglia nearly three centuries before. He left behind him many sons and daughters

Athelstan, illegitimate son of Edward, succeeded. The leading event of his reign is the overthrow, at **Brunnaburgh** in Lincolnshire, of a league formed by the Scots and the Danes (938 A D). He placed in every church a copy of the Anglo-Saxon Bible, which had been translated by his order, and he encouraged commerce by granting the title "Thane" to those merchants who made three voyages in their own ships He died at Gloucester. **925** A D.

Edmund, son of Edward the Elder, succeeded. He married Elgiva, and left two sons, Edwy and Edgar, who afterwards reigned, though at first passed over as too young. He routed the Danes, driving them from *the Five Burghs*, —Derby, Leicester, Nottingham, Stamford, and Lincoln —which they had long held In the height of his success he was stabbed, while sitting at supper in Pucklechurch, Gloucestershire Leolf, whom he had banished for robbery, six years ago, was the assassin. **941** A D.

Edred, brother of Edmund, was now elected by the Great Council or Witenagemot. He suffered from a painful disease, which weakened both mind and body, and for this reason public affairs were managed by his ministers. Turketul, at first Chancellor, and afterwards Abbot of Croyland, and Dunstan, Abbot of Glastonbury, were his chief favourites. He died at Winchester. **946** A D.

Edwy, surnamed the Fair, eldest son of Edmund, succeeded. He incurred the hatred of **Dunstan,** because he resisted the efforts of that prelate to make the Church supreme in the government of the country. A quarrel arose about Elgiva the Queen, and Dunstan was banished. Elgiva, who had been sent to Ireland to separate her from the King, having returned, was cruelly murdered by Odo, Archbishop of Canterbury. The Mercians and Northumbrians rose in revolt, and made Edgar, brother of the King, their ruler. Edwy was forced to content himself with the counties south of the **955** A D.

Thames, and soon died, it is said, of grief at the loss of his territory

The Witan then made **Edgar** King He was called the Peaceable; for during his reign no foe, foreign or domestic,
959 vexed the land His form was small and spare, but his
A D. mind was full of vigour All Albion and the isles owned his sway It was his yearly custom to make a progress through the land, and, on one occasion, eight princes rowed his barge on the Dee at Chester He favoured the clergy, especially Dunstan, whom he had, when King of Mercia, recalled from exile, and whom he now created Archbishop of Canterbury. He has been blamed for favouring the Danes of Northumbria It is true that he allowed them to choose their own laws, but he reduced their power, by dividing the earldom between two of his courtiers He permitted the Welsh to pay every year, instead of their money tribute, three hundred wolves' heads, a plan which, in four years, cleared their forests of these animals By his order, all weights and measures used in England were reduced to a standard He left two sons; Edward by his first wife, Elfleda; Ethelred by his second, Elfrida

Upon Edgar's death the succession was disputed, but Dunstan's influence secured the crown for **Edward.** His ele-
975 vation to the throne cost him his life; for, in less than
A D. four years, he was stabbed while drinking a cup of mead on horseback at Corfe Castle in Dorsetshire, the residence of his step-mother, Elfrida, who desired the crown for her son. This sad fate procured for him the surname of "Martyr"

The murder of Edward gained for **Ethelred** the throne, but not the hearts of the people At this time occurred a crisis in the struggle between the national clergy of Britain and the Church of Rome, as represented by Dunstan and the Benedictines The former claimed a right to marry, which the Church refused to permit The Witan met at **Calne** in Wiltshire to discuss the disputed points; and when Dunstan was appealing to Heaven for vengeance against his opponents, who were
978 all collected at one end of the room, the joists gave way
A.D. beneath the national party, and the prelate's enemies were hurled in a heap of dead and wounded to the earth. It has been said that he had caused the beam to be half sawn through, previous to the assembly of the Witan. Famine and plague cast a gloom over the land, which grew deeper when the Danes renewed their ravages The King, who was surnamed "Unready," attempted to buy them off; and for this purpose levied a tax,

called *Dane-geld*, amounting to twelve pence in the year upon each hide of land for all classes except the clergy, but this foolish policy had no other effect than to bring the pirates in larger swarms on the English shores This was the first direct and annual tax imposed on the English nation

Ethelred's difficulties increased, and, in his folly, he devised the mad scheme of a general massacre of Danes The bloody day was the festival of **St. Brice.** Burning with rage, Sweyn, King of Denmark, whose sister Gunhilda was among the slain, burst upon the coasts, and, returning again and again, took a terrible revenge. At last Oxford and Winchester fell before the invaders. **Sweyn** was proclaimed King at Bath, and soon after at London Ethelred fled to the Isle of Wight, and thence to Normandy, the native place of Emma, his second wife Sweyn died in three weeks afterwards, at Gainsborough in Lincolnshire, leaving his conquests to his son Canute. But the Saxons, having recalled Ethelred, supported him so vigorously that Canute was forced in turn to abandon the island When leaving, he took a barbarous revenge, by cutting off the noses, ears, and hands of the Saxon hostages whom he held. Ethelred, now triumphant, provoked renewed incursions by repeated murders of his Danish subjects; and his untiring foe, Canute, returning, landed at Sandwich, then the chief port The Dane was pushing towards the capital, leaving a track of blood and ashes behind him, when the death of Ethelred transferred the crown to his eldest son, Edmund. Ethelred was twice married; first to Elfleda, whose sons, Edmund, Edwy, and Athelstan, survived, secondly to Emma, daughter of Richard, Duke of Normandy, by whom he left two sons, Edward and Alfred

Nov 14, **1002** A D.

1013 A D

Edmund, surnamed Ironside, struggled bravely for seven months to secure the throne of his father, during which London was assaulted twice, without success, by the Danes under Canute. But at last, after a meeting at Olney, an island in the Severn,—where, some writers say, a duel was fought between the rivals,—they agreed to a division of the kingdom, the Saxon holding the counties south, the Dane those north of the Thames The Dane-geld was to be levied off both districts alike, but was to be applied to the support of the Danish fleet In a month after this agreement Edmund died, leaving Canute sole monarch The cause of his death is uncertain. He left two sons, Edward and Edmund.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

FRANCE

	A.D		A.D
CHARLEMAGNE, sole King,	771	**RODOLF**,	923
LOUIS I (le Debonnaire),	814	**LOUIS D'OUTREMER** (IV).	936
CHARLES the Bald,	840	**LOTHAIRE**,	954
LOUIS II,	877	**LOUIS V**	986
LOUIS III,	879	**HUGH CAPET**,	987
CHARLES the Fat,	884	**ROBERT I**,	996
CHARLES the Simple,	893		

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

Treaty of Verdun,	843	Otho the Great (Germany) crowned at Rome,	962
Ruric founds Russia.	862		
Rollo settles in Normandy,	911	Capet line begins (France),	987

CHAPTER III.

TIME OF DANISH RULE.

1017 A.D to 1041 A.D —24 years.—3 Kings.

	A.D.
CANUTE (son of Sweyn), ..	1017
HAROLD (son), ...	1036
HARDICANUTE (half-brother), ...	1039–1041

Leading Feature. ENGLAND DIVIDED BETWEEN THE SAXONS AND THE DANES.

Canute Secures his Power	Claims to the Title of "Great"	Sons of Ethelred in England.
Dismissal of Danish Troops.	Religious Acts	Hardicanute
	Harold	Earl Godwin's Present.

CANUTE now received the crown of England. His first care was to remove all rivals The surviving sons of Ethelred were Edwy, Edward, and Alfred. Edwy he caused to be murdered, Edward and Alfred took refuge in Normandy; while their mother, Emma, married the King The infant sons of Edmund Ironside were conveyed to Sweden, and thence to Hungary, where Edmund died in youth Canute at first divided his English dominions into four parts, reserving Wessex for himself, but, fearing treachery on the part of his lieutenants, he reunited all under his own sway.

Anxious to reconcile the Saxons to his usurpation, he dismissed the Danish soldiers to their own country, but not without first rewarding them with large sums He retained a body-guard of 6000 men, whom he ruled with the strictest discipline Having on one occasion killed a soldier in a fit of anger, he, in presence of this band, laid aside his crown and sceptre, and demanded that they should pronounce sentence on him. All were silent, and Canute imposed upon himself a fine nine times greater than the lawful sum. Again, at Southampton, he rebuked the flattery of his courtiers, by setting his chair upon the shore and commanding the waves to retire While the tide was flowing round his feet, he sternly blamed the presumption of those who compared a weak earthly King to the Great Ruler of the Universe. By such acts as these he won the title "Great."

Besides England, he ruled over Norway, Sweden, and Denmark, and is said to have exacted homage from Malcolm of Scotland In his latter days he became religious in life, after the fashion of the time He endowed monasteries, built churches, gave money for masses to be sung for the souls of those whom he had slain, and went, staff in hand, clad in pilgrim's gown, to Rome; where he obtained from the Pope that English pilgrims should be freed from the heavy dues then levied upon travellers. He also introduced the Christian faith into Denmark. He died at Shaftesbury, and was buried at Winchester By his first wife he had two sons, Sweyn and Harold His second wife, Emma, widow of Ethelred, bore him a son and a daughter—the former named Hardicanute To Sweyn was allotted Norway; Harold seized England; while Hardicanute was forced to content himself with Denmark

By Canute's desire, the crown of England was to have devolved on Hardicanute, but **Harold**, surnamed Harefoot, seized
1036 it without delay The Witan, meeting at Oxford,
A D. divided the country between the rival princes; assigning to Harold London and the counties north of the Thames, to Hardicanute the district south of that river The latter, however, trifled away his time in Denmark, and left the support of his claims to his mother Emma, and Godwin, Earl of Wessex. About this time, Edward, son of Ethelred, landed at Southampton, to assert his right to the throne; but, being menaced by a formidable force, he abandoned the enterprise. His brother Alfred, who was soon afterwards enticed over from Normandy by a letter from Emma, met a cruel death at Ely, where his eyes were torn out by the officers of Harold Emma in alarm fled to the court of Baldwin, Count of Flanders. Harold died at Oxford, and was buried at Winchester.

Hardicanute (Canute the Hardy) was on his way to England with a large fleet, when he heard of Harold's death.
1039 On his arrival he was at once acknowledged King, but
A D. great discontent was at first excited by the oppressive taxes he imposed He wreaked a poor revenge on Harold's dead body, which was by his order dug up, beheaded, and flung into the Thames Suspicion of being a party to Alfred's murder fell upon Earl Godwin, and he lost favour with the King; but, his peers having sworn to his innocence, he was reinstated. As a peace-offering, he presented to Hardicanute a ship, of which the stern was plated with gold, and which bore warriors glittering with decorations of gold and silver.

No striking event marked the reign of the last Dane that held the English throne He died suddenly at Lambeth, while engaged in celebrating the marriage of a Danish noble, and was buried at Winchester.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

SCOTLAND	A D	FRANCE	A D
DUNCAN I began to rule,	1034	HENRY I,	. .1031
MACBETH, ...	1041		

CHAPTER IV.

SAXON LINE RESTORED.

1041 A D to 1066 A D.—25 years.—2 Kings.

	A.D.
EDWARD the Confessor (son of Ethelred),	1041
HAROLD II. (son of Earl Godwin),	1066

Leading Feature: BEGINNING OF FRENCH INFLUENCE.

Opening of Edward's Reign	Godwin's Death (1053 A.D.)	Harold King
Favour shown to Normans	Power of Harold	Battle of Stamford Bridge (1066 A D.)
Revolt of the English	Arrangements for a Succes sor	Battle of Hastings (1066 A D.)
Visit of William of Nor mandy (1051 A D.)	Benefits of Edward	

EDWARD, son of Ethelred and half-brother of Hardicanute, being then in England, received the crown, chiefly through the influence of Godwin. The surviving son of Edmund Ironside had a prior claim to the throne; but this was forgotten in the joy with which the people hailed the restoration of the Saxon line. So great was the favour with which Edward was received, that he was permitted to take back all grants that had been made by his predecessors—an act rendered necessary by the poverty of the throne. His resources were further increased by the confiscation of treasure amassed by his unnatural mother, Emma. The King was about forty on his accession, and had spent twenty-seven years at the Norman court. It is not surprising, therefore, that he regarded with peculiar favour the friends of his youth, and bestowed upon Normans some of the chief offices of state. The French language and fashions were adopted at the English court. Lawyers wrote their deeds and clergymen their sermons in Norman French.

This displeased the English nobles, and **Earl Godwin** was foremost in revolt. Edward had married Edith, Godwin's daughter, and had advanced his sons to stations of honour, but the haughty noble snapped all ties of family union and personal gratitude by boldly refusing to acknowledge the King's authority. A bloody fray had taken place at Dover, a town under Godwin's protection, between the burghers and the retainers of Eustace, a Norman [illegible]nt, who had married the King's sister. Edward commanded

Godwin to punish the insolent citizens; but the Earl took the field rather than submit However, a delay took place, until the Great Council should decide the points in dispute, and in the meantime Godwin's army deserted him. He was forced to seek refuge in Flanders. The Queen was deprived of her lands, and placed in custody of Edward's sister, the Abbess of Wherwell in Hampshire.

As soon as this revolt began, Edward asked aid from **William, Duke of Normandy**; but, when the fleet of that prince appeared off the English shore, all need for help had passed away. However, the Norman landed with his knights, and was hospitably entertained by Edward, who, it is related, appointed him heir to the crown William heard French spoken on all sides, saw Dover, Canterbury, and the leading towns defended by Norman garrisons, and noted many other signs of Norman influence.

Next year Godwin returned, and Edward, by the advice of Stigand, an artful and ambitious priest, became reconciled to him. The Earl died soon after, leaving to his son Harold his title and his territory Edward, afraid of this new rival's growing power, gave to Alfgar the earldom of East Anglia, previously held by Harold. This led to war Alfgar was driven to Wales, but in the end he recovered his dignities. The appointment of Tostig, Harold's brother, to the earldom of Northumberland, and Harold's own successes against the Welsh, greatly extended his influence He so far reduced the Welsh spirit, that they submitted to a law dooming every Welshman found east of Offa's Dyke to the loss of his right hand. **1053** A.D.

The horrors of a disputed succession now seemed impending; and to remove this danger Edward, by the advice of the Witenagemot, sent for Edward, son of Edmund Ironside, then an exile in Hungary He came with his wife, Agatha, and three children, Edgar, Margaret, and Christina, but died immediately on his arrival About this time Harold, suffering shipwreck on the Norman coast, was seized by William, and made to swear a most sacred oath to favour his pretensions to the English throne.

Edward died at the age of sixty-five, and was buried in Westminster Abbey, which had been erected by himself on the site of the old church to St. Peter. About a century after his death his name was ranked among the saints of the Catholic Church; and, from his religious character, he gained the name "Confessor" The chief benefits he conferred upon his people were, compilation of a code of laws, embracing all that was

former legislation; and the repeal of the tax Dane-geld in a time of sore distress from failing crops and dying cattle

Harold, son of Godwin, was at once chosen King by the Witan. Edgar Atheling being too young to wear a crown in times so stormy. But to compensate the Saxon prince for this injustice, the earldom of Oxford was conferred on him It was not the fate of Harold to wear his crown in peace; for, from the day of his accession, the dread of a Norman invasion haunted him William resolved to stake on the issue of a battle the crown, which he claimed as his own by the bequest of the Confessor, and all Normandy resounded with preparation

1066 A.D.

Meanwhile, unexpected foes descended on the shores of England Hardrada, King of Norway, and Tostig, the outlawed brother of Harold, sailing up the Humber, captured York, the capital of Northumbria Harold pushed northward, and was met by the invaders at **Stamford Bridge** on the Derwent There the Norwegian spearmen formed a glittering circle, their royal banner floating above them Again and again the English cavalry dashed upon the serried ring, but without avail, until the hot Norway blood led some to break their ranks in pursuit Instantly Harold poured his troops through the gap, and cleft the circle like a wedge. Hardrada fell shot through the neck, and Tostig soon lay dead beside him

1066 A.D.

This battle was fought on the 25th of September, and on the 29th William of Normandy landed on the coast of Sussex, near Pevensey, and at once pressed on to **Hastings**. Harold was sitting at a banquet in York when the news came Marching night and day, he reached the hill, Senlac, nine miles from Hastings, on the 13th October, and here he marshalled his men, all on foot, armed with heavy battle-axes. Early on the 14th the Normans advanced to the attack, led by the consecrated banner of the Pope, archers in the van, mail-clad infantry following, while the main strength of a Norman army, lines of knights, sheathed man and horse in steel, brought up the rear. The battle began. The English battle-axes did fearful execution, and the Norman lines gave way. A panic, increased by the report of William's death, was spreading fast, when the Duke rode bareheaded to the front, and restored their sinking courage. However, it was not till the wily Norman, detaching bodies of horsemen as if in flight, drew the English from their ranks, that the invaders

Oct 14, 1066 A.D.

gained any decisive advantage. Even then the islanders met the shock of their steel-clad foes with the courage of despair; nor was it until sunset, when their King fell pierced in the right eye by an arrow, that they broke and fled into the woods. Harold's mother offered for the body of her son its weight in gold, but the Conqueror refused to grant her request, and ordered the dead King to be buried on the beach. However, the remains were afterwards removed to Waltham Church In the following year William began to build Battle Abbey on the field of his victory, in order to commemorate a day on which the crown of England passed to a race of French Kings, who wore it during more than three centuries

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

SCOTLAND	A.D		A.D
MACBETH began to rule	1041	HENRY I.,	1031
MALCOLM (Canmore),	1056	PHILIP I.,	1060

CHAPTER V.

SCOTLAND AND IRELAND DURING THE SAXON PERIOD.

Early Scottish Tribes.	Duncan and Macbeth.	Patrick.
Fusion of Picts and Scots	State of Ireland	Brian Boru.

SCOTTISH history does not begin until the reign of Malcolm Canmore, the contemporary of Edward the Confessor and William the Conqueror Earlier events are wrapped in fable We know that the Romans traversed North Britain, or Caledonia, as they called it, more than once We know that a region called Strathclyde, consisting chiefly of the basin of the Clyde, was inhabited by Britons akin to those of Wales We find the tribes of North Britain called Picts and Scots at the close of the Roman Period; and we learn that the Scots had crossed from Ulster, and had gradually spread over the mountain districts Such names as Galloway and Arran, in the south-west of Scotland, show a connection between that part of Britain and the west of Ireland, where lie Galway and the Isles of Arran About 563 A D, **Columba**, crossing from Ireland, blessed the land with the knowledge of Christ The Culdees, as his followers were named, continued the good work. Under the influence of the gospel and kindred causes, the Picts and Scots were blended into the Scottish nation about 843 A D, when
843 A D Kenneth Macalpin ruled the whole land north of the Forth, and some hundred years later the country was first called Scotland But it must be remembered that the Border line ran at this time from the shore of the Forth west of Edinburgh to the mouth of the Solway The story of Duncan's murder and Macbeth's usurpation, as drawn by Shakspere, was derived by the great dramatist from "Holinshed's Chronicle," a view of Scottish history founded on the work of Hector Boece Both abound in historical legends The facts are these, so far as we can now judge Duncan, a prince young and inexperienced, ascended the throne in 1034. His cousin Macbeth, taking advantage of his defeat by the Earl of Orkney, seized and murdered him in "a smith's bothy" or cabin near Elgin (1041 A D) The reign of **Macbeth** lasted for seventeen years (1041–58 A D) He ruled with vigour and success but Malcolm Canmore, the son of Duncan, having grown to manhood at the English court, entered

Scotland with an army, resolved to strike a blow for his father's throne Macbeth suffered a terrible defeat from Siward, Earl of Northumbria, and was defeated and slain at Lumphanan in Aberdeenshire (1058 A.D.) Malcolm was then crowned King of Scotland

IRISH HISTORY UNTIL 1066 A.D.

Early Kings.—Previous to the Christian Era Irish history presents little more than long lists of legendary kings, engaged in constant wars with one another From a very early period the island seems to have been divided into five kingdoms—Leinster, Meath, Ulster, Connaught, and Munster. The eight sons of Milesius, leading an expedition from Spain to the south-west of Ireland, became masters of the land And one of their descendants, Ollav Fola (about 900 B C), was the great organizer and legislator of Erin He established a triennial *fez* or parliament at Tara. Kimbath (460 B C) formed a national police.

When the Irish gave aid to the Picts, Agricola formed a resolve, afterwards abandoned, of invading the island. And to that land Druidism shrank for safety after Paulinus had rooted it out of Anglesey.

In the reign of Cormac, grandson of Conn of the Hundred Battles, a body of 9000 men, led by Finn MacCoul or Fingal, performed wonderful exploits in war, until their destruction at the battle of Gabra in Meath. From the name of their chief has been derived the modern word Fenian

Nial of the Nine Hostages, who fought in Scotland, France, and England, was killed with an arrow on the banks of the Loire His successor Dahy was the last pagan King of Ireland.

St. Patrick.—In 430 A D, when Logaire was King of Ireland, Pope Celestine sent Palladius as a missionary to Ireland, but he was obliged to flee the land. Two years later, Patrick, a native of Kilpatrick at the mouth of the Clyde, landed at Wicklow with thirty-four monks He knew the language well; for Nial, during an invasion of Scotland, had taken him prisoner, and he had spent seven years of his youth as a swineherd in Ireland. He succeeded in impressing the chieftain of Ulster, and then boldly appeared before the council at Tara Logaire was converted; and Ireland became a part of Christendom. Armagh was the principal station of the monks; but Patrick lived chiefly at Saul near Downpatrick, in the abbey of which town he was buried.

432 A.D.

Ireland at this time was remarkable for the pious and learned men whom it gave to Europe While the Continent echoed with ceaseless wars, there were frequent pauses in Irish warfare—gleams of cherishing sunlight—in which learning and literature throve and brightened Students flocked from various lands to the Irish schools

Danes, &c —The Norse pirates began to make descents upon the coast of Ireland in the commencement of the ninth century. About the middle of the same period Turgesius, King of Norway, secured over the island a hold, which inflicted all the woes of tyranny upon the nation and for thirteen years the land groaned under his yoke Then, seized by conspirators, he was drowned in Lough Innel, while the invaders were forced to flee to their ships They returned, however, and made themselves masters of Dublin

Brian —A deliverer arose in the person of Brian Boru, King of Munster, who expelled the Danes from his own realm, and then received the crown of the whole island Driving all the Danes from Ireland, except such as became Christians, he confined these to the great seaports He was the Alfred of the western land Schools, bridges, roads, fortresses, ships—he omitted nothing that could strengthen and improve the kingdom At the end of a long reign the treachery of the King of Leinster induced the Danes to land near Dublin Brian defeated them signally on the sands of **Clontarf**, but a few of the fugitives, surprising the white haired monarch in his tent, killed him, as he was thanking God for victory—1014 A D This battle rescued Ireland from the Danes

CHAPTER VI.

SOCIAL CONDITION OF THE ANGLO-SAXONS

King and Queen	Crime and its Punishment	Coins
Freemen of different Ranks	Ordeals	Early Idolatry
Slaves.	Anglo-Saxon Houses	Occupations of the Monks
The Great Council.	Daily Life	Language

At the head of the Anglo-Saxon nation stood the **Cyning**, or King (from *cunnan*, to know, or *cyn*, a nation) He was elected by the Great Council from among the relatives of the late King; and was generally chosen on account of his fitness for the office. The name "Queen," and the honours of royalty, were conferred on the wife of the King, until Eadburga, Queen of Wessex, forfeited all distinctions by poisoning her husband. From that time the Anglo-Saxon Queens bore no title but "the lady;" and none except Judith, wife of Ethelwulf, received the crown, or sat on the throne beside her husband. Indeed, in style and position, the wife of the Anglo-Saxon monarchs resembled the lady rather than the Queen of our day The monk Ingulf tells us that, when he was a boy, Edith, wife of Edward the Confessor, would often stop him as he came from school, to make him repeat his grammar lesson; and, if he did well, would give him a piece of silver and send him to the pantry

Next to the King were the **Eldermen**, or Earls. Governing in the name of their sovereign districts called shires, they led to battle the men under their rule, presided with the Bishop over the courts of justice, and received one-third of the fines and royal rents paid within their counties The inferior nobles were called **Thanes** (from *thegnian*, to serve), and consisted of those who possessed at least five hides of land The lowest class of freemen were the **Ceorls** (hence churl) or husbandmen; with whom we may rank the Burghers, or inhabitants of towns. The latter were engaged in trade, and were in most respects freemen.

Two-thirds of the Anglo-Saxon nation were slaves (*theowes*). The largest class consisted of those who lived on the land of their lord, close to his castle (Norman *ville*, Saxon *tun*, whence our word town); and were called by the Normans "Villeins." Besides those born in bondage, all captives in war and persons arrested for debt or crime became slaves. Sad and humiliating was the ceremony of degradation. Before a crowd of witnesses.

the hapless man laid down the sword and the spear which he had borne as a freeman, and, whilst in a kneeling posture he placed his head beneath his master's hand, took up the bill and the goad Many slaves were released by the bounty of their masters; others, engaging in trade and handicraft, made money enough to buy their freedom. Sale and purchase of slaves were quite common, the usual price being four times that of an ox. Foreign slaves were often imported, and although all export was forbidden by law, the Anglo-Saxons of the coast carried on a profitable trade in men and women Bristol was long notorious for its slave-market.

The Great Council of the Anglo-Saxons was called **Witenagemot,** or "the assembly of the wise," and was formed of the higher clergy and the nobles. They met regularly at Christmas, Easter, and Whitsuntide, but were often summoned on special occasions. They were the advisers of the King, the judges of state criminals, and had the general superintendence of the courts of justice One important branch of their power has been already noticed—in their hands lay the appointment of a new King

Throughout the land justice was administered in various courts; in which also, before magistrates and witnesses, all bargains of purchase and sale beyond the value of twenty pennies were concluded. The execution of the laws was vested in officers called Reeves, of whom the chief in each county was called Shire-reeve, and was the original of our Sheriff The morality of the Anglo-Saxons was very far from being pure. The characters of even their best Kings were stained with drunkenness and worse vices. The chief crimes were murder and theft; and for these certain fines were inflicted On the life of every Anglo-Saxon freeman, according to his rank, was set a price, called *were-gild*, ranging from two to six thousand shillings. If a man was killed, the murderer, on conviction, paid *were-gild* to the widow or heir of his victim, — the transgressor of the law forfeited his *were-gild* instead of his life to the King. Slaves were imprisoned or whipped, but the meanest freeman was exempt from this disgrace. Theft became so common in the time of the later Anglo-Saxon Kings, that it was punished by death. This was abolished by Canute, who substituted mutilation, condemning a thief, three times convicted, to the loss of his eyes, nose, ears, and upper lip.

There were two methods by which a man accused of crime could clear himself. The first, called *compurgation*, was by swearing publicly to his innocence, and bringing a number of his neighbours—from four to seventy-two, in proportion to the

offence—to confirm his oath. If this plan failed, recourse was had to the **Ordeal.** Those most used were by hot water, and by fire For the former, a caldron of boiling water was set in the church, and a piece of stone or iron placed in it. Before witnesses, the accused plunged his bare arm into the water and took out the weight The priest, wrapping the scalded limb in clean linen, set on it the seal of the church It was opened on the third day, and, if the wound was perfectly healed, the accused was pronounced innocent. In the ordeal by fire, a bar of red-hot iron was placed on a small pillar, and the prisoner, grasping it, made three steps with it in his hand, and then threw it down. Innocence or guilt was decided in the same manner as in the ordeal by water.

The **houses** of the Anglo-Saxons improved very much during the six centuries of this period At first they were nothing better than thatched huts with holes in the walls to admit the light. Even the cathedrals and the houses of the Kings were built of wood, not very well jointed, for we read of Alfred making lanterns to protect his candles from the draughts that swept through the chinks in his palace-walls. The dwellings of the lower and middle classes continued to be built of wood; but about the seventh century masonry was used for the lower part of the chief buildings. The few still existing specimens of architecture ascribed to the Anglo-Saxons are built of small rough stones, in a rude and massive style But the evidence that these are Anglo-Saxon rests on very uncertain ground.

The **daily life** of even the noblest Anglo-Saxons was that of a half-savage people. The war and turbulence, which were the chief characteristics of at least four centuries of this period, were not favourable to the cultivation of the domestic virtues When not engaged in war, the nobles amused themselves in hunting and hawking, and when the sports of the day were over, all—master and servant—met in the great hall At the upper end of this, on a dais or raised part, was placed a rude table, canopied with hangings of cloth, to serve as a protection from draughts of air, and from the rain, which often leaked through the roof; and round this sat the lord, his family, and his guests. This table was served by slaves, who knelt as they offered to each huge joints on the spit, from which the chiefs cut slices with their daggers. The principal article of food was swine's flesh: besides this, game and fish of various kinds, coarse cakes, and green pulse were used The favourite drink was mead, a liquor fermented from honey and water. Wine, beef, mutton, and

wheaten bread were delicacies found only at the tables of the highest. The chief servants took their meal next, and in turn passed the joints to the lower end of the hall, where slaves, hounds, and hawks squabbled over the fragments of the feast The meal over, drinking began, and continued till all were intoxicated. To beguile the time, the Saxon harp of five strings was passed round, and each took his turn in singing verses to its music This general practice of the musical art is almost the only redeeming trait in a picture of coarse sensuality, but the tones of the harp were soon drowned in wild shouts of drunkenness, and often in the clashing of brawlers' swords, nor did the riot cease till sleep brought silence. They slept where they had feasted, lying on straw or rushes, and covered with their clothes The ladies spent their time more peacefully, and to more purpose, in the use of the needle and the distaff The linen and the woollen cloths, of which the long cloaks and close tunics of their lords were made, were the produce of their industry.

We know very little about the coinage of the Anglo-Saxons They had none but foreign gold the coin most used was the Byzant—that is, the Byzantine gold *solidus*, worth forty Saxon pennies Their silver coins were the penny, halfpenny, and farthing; which seem to have resembled in size and value our florin, shilling, and sixpence Their only copper coin, called "styca," was value for one-fourth of their farthing, or a little more than our penny

When the Anglo-Saxons settled in Britain, they were the slaves of a gross and absurd **idolatry**, which prevailed among all the northern tribes of Europe. They dedicated each day of the week to a particular deity, and we still name the days after their fashion. Sun daeg (Sunday) and moon daeg (Monday) were set apart for the worship of the great lights of heaven; Tuiscaes daeg (Tuesday), Wodenes daeg (Wednesday), Thores daeg (Thursday), and Freyaes daeg (Friday) were sacred to Tuisca, Woden, Thor, and Freya; while Saturnes daeg (Saturday) was devoted to the service of Saturn, a god borrowed from the Roman mythology. Though Christianity had been introduced into Britain before the time of Augustine, it was not till he and his followers landed in Kent that the heathenism of the Anglo-Saxons was overthrown. The Anglo-Saxon priests spent their leisure in the practice of many arts. Painting on glass and working in metals were favourite employments of even the highest ecclesiastics; and not a few churches owed their bells and their coloured windows to the Dunstans of this age The monasteries were now, as they

continued to be for many centuries almost the only seats of learning, and from their quiet cells issued the scanty pages of our Anglo-Saxon literature

It must not be forgotten that the great body of the pure English tongue, as we read it in the Bible and the Pilgrim's Progress, as we speak it in the street and by the fireside, had its origin in the Anglo Saxon Period The Danes introduced some slight changes of construction, and left a few geographical names, such as those ending in "by," the Danish word for town, but their rule in the island made no permanent impression on the language, which has continued, through all changes of the nation, to be in spirit and in structure essentially Saxon

LEADING AUTHORS OF THE ANGLO-SAXON PERIOD

GILDAS, the first British historian—born at Alcluyd (Dumbarton)—wrote a *History of the Britons* in Latin—died 570 A D

CAEDMON, a monk of Whitby—the earliest writer in Anglo Saxon—wrote religious poetry on the *Creation* &c —died about 680 A D

ALDHELM, a famous Latin scholar—Abbot of Malmesbury—died 709 A D

BEDE, called Venerable —born about 672 at Jarrow in Durham—chief work *The History of the Anglo Saxon Church*—died 735 A D

ALCUIN, born at York or in Scotland—teacher of Charlemagne—wrote poetry theology and elementary science—died at Tours 804 A D

JOHN SCOTUS ERIGENA, a native of Ireland—flourished about middle of ninth century—lived chiefly in France—said to have been the only learned layman of the Dark Ages

ALFRED, King of England—translated the *Psalms Bede's History Æsop's Fables* &c into Anglo Saxon—died 901 A D

ASSER, a Welshman—writer of *Alfred's life*—died 909 A D

ALFRIC, called the Grammarian from a *Latin Grammar* he wrote—Archbishop of Canterbury in close of tenth century—composer of *Eighty Homilies* in Anglo Saxon

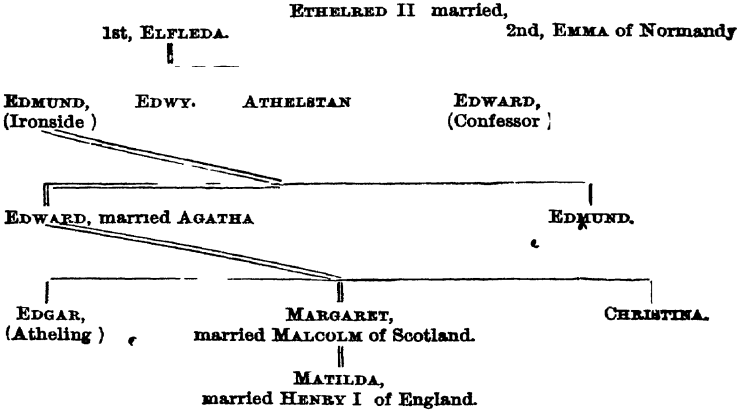
LEADING DATES—ANGLO-SAXON PERIOD

GENERAL EVENTS	A D		
Reputed landing of Hengist and Horsa,	449	Death of Alfred,	901
Heptarchy established,	582	Dunstan in power,	978
Landing of Augustine,	597	Massacre of Danes,	1002
Cambridge University founded by Sebert,	644	Treaty of Olney,	1017
First landing of Danes,	787	**BATTLES**	
Egbert King of Wessex,	800	Hengsdown Hill,	835
Alfred made King,	871	Merton,	871
Oxford University founded by Alfred,	886	Ethandune,	878
		Brunnaburgh,	938
		Stamford Bridge,	1066
		Hastings,	1066

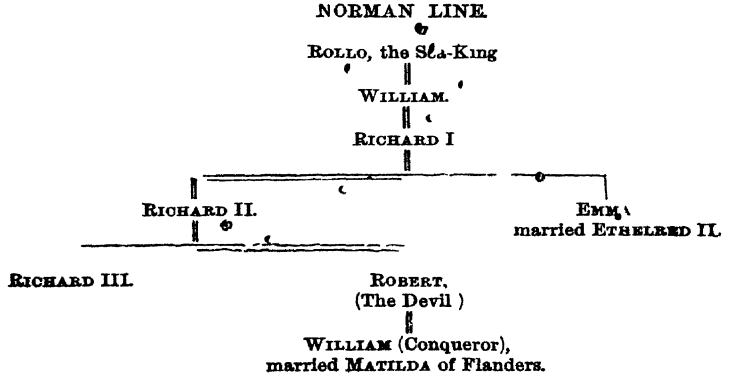
GENEALOGICAL TREES

CONNECTING THE ANGLO-SAXON AND NORMAN PERIODS.

SAXON LINE.



NORMAN LINE.



EARLY NORMAN KINGS.

From 1066 A D. to 1154 A.D —88 years.—4 Kings.

	A.D.
WILLIAM I. (The Conqueror),	began to reign 1066
WILLIAM II (Rufus), son,	1087
HENRY I. (Beauclerc), brother,	1100
STEPHEN (Count of Blois), nephew,	1135–1154

Leading Feature: ESTABLISHMENT OF THE FEUDAL SYSTEM.

CHAPTER I.

WILLIAM I —THE CONQUEROR.

Born 1027 A D.—Began to reign 1066 A D —Died 1087 A.D.

Edgar Elected King	Revolt in West and North (1069 A.D)	Domesday Book (1086 A D)
William's Coronation		Death
Visits Normandy	Hereward (1071 A D)	Character and Personal Qualities
	Bridal of Norwich (1075 A D)	

The Conqueror was the illegitimate son of Robert, fifth Duke of Normandy. His wife was Matilda, daughter of Baldwin V., Earl of Flanders.

After the battle of Hastings he pushed on to Dover, which surrendered. Here he stayed eight days, until reinforced from Normandy; and then he marched towards London. There the Witan had appointed Edgar Atheling King; his chief supporter being Stigand, Archbishop of Canterbury. Two Anglian Earls, Edwin and Morcar, received the support of a small faction. William fixed his camp at Berkhampstead, to cut off communication with the north. But disunion crept in among the adherents of the Saxon. Stigand was among the first to desert, and Edgar's hopes of a throne faded fast. Soon a message reached William, offering the crown, which he accepted amid the applause of the Normans.

He was crowned at Westminster on Christmas-day; but not without tumult. Aldred, Archbishop of York, during the ceremony, asked the Saxons if they received William as their King.

They assented with shouts. At once, as if on a given signal, the Normans round the Abbey, setting fire to the houses, began to plunder All rushed from the church William and the prelates stood alone by the altar In haste the oath was taken and the ceremony ended This event imbittered the feeling of the Saxons toward their conquerors.

William began his reign well He retained the Saxon laws, granted a new charter to the citizens of London, and received Edgar among his nearest friends. But this did not last long. He felt that the sword must guard what the sword had won; and, to retain the Norman lords in his service, he rewarded them with the lands of the conquered race The widows and heiresses of those rich nobles who had fallen on the field of Senlac were married to Normans The churches of Normandy were decorated with the spoils of England, and among other precious gifts from William to the Pope was the golden banner of Harold The Conqueror built a fortress, where the Tower of London now stands, and strengthened his position in Winchester—then the capital—by erecting a similar stronghold

Having thus spent six months, he passed over to Normandy, carrying in his train the flower of England's nobility His friend Fitzosbern and his half-brother Odo were appointed Regents: and they ruled with a rod of iron. The Saxons rose, and, when the Regents strove to trample out the flame of insurrection, it broke forth with greater violence than ever. After eight months William returned, and, though the spirit of revolt seemed to die in his terrible presence, it still lingered in the west and north.

1068 A.D. The fall of **Exeter** reduced the west to peace, and Edwin and Morcar, who had raised the standard of rebellion in the north, were surprised and forced to yield: York opened its gates, and even Malcolm of Scotland for a time retreated before the Norman

Twice the sons of Harold, who had taken refuge in Ireland, landed in England, once near Bristol, and once near Plymouth; but they were driven to their ships with great loss.

Again the English of the north rose, massacred a body of Norman horse at Durham, and laid siege to York. They were joined by Edgar, who, having set out with his mother and sisters for Hungary, was driven northward by a storm, and had been for some time the guest of Malcolm at Dunfermline. But William obliged them to raise the siege; and, having plundered the city, returned to the south. A Danish squadron arrived with timely help, and York was re-captured by the English. The King

again marched northward, the English rising everywhere as he passed. Turning upon these, he defeated them, and then carried the northern capital at the sword's point Here he kept his Christmas court, having sent to Winchester for his crown With fire and sword he now traversed York and Durham, taking a revenge so terrible, that from the Ouse to the Tyne there stretched for almost a century a vast wilderness, studded with blackened ruins, its soil unbroken by the plough. On his southward march he left behind him many strong castles, garrisoned by Norman soldiers **1069** A.D.

No dignity, no power, very little land were now permitted to remain with the Saxons Even the monasteries, which were the banks of that time, afforded no safety from the royal officers, who without remorse rifled the sacred treasuries The Saxon prelates, too, were obliged to resign their cathedrals to Norman strangers Of the latter, the most distinguished was Lanfranc, appointed Archbishop of Canterbury in the room of Stigand Many of the Saxon landholders, when driven from their estates, fled into the woods, and kept up an incursive warfare. **Hereward** the Saxon was the most noted. He built a wooden fort, called the "Camp of Refuge," in the Isle of Ely, where, surrounded by marshes, he long bade defiance to William Nor could all the efforts of the Norman soldiery, aided by the spells of witchcraft, avail to reduce this stronghold, until some treacherous monks of Ely showed the Conqueror a secret path over the encircling swamps. Malcolm of Scotland, who had married Margaret, sister of Edgar Atheling, now felt himself forced to be on a friendly footing with the Conqueror, though he refused to deliver up the Saxon refugees who had fled to the north. **1072** A.D

William's latter days were imbittered by many woes. While he was absent subduing a rebellion in Maine, a Norman plot, known as the **Bridal of Norwich** (1075 A D), because it was first broached at a marriage in that city, gathered to a head; but the rebels were defeated at Swaffham by Lanfranc, who was acting as Regent. Every prisoner lost his right foot. Waltheof, last of the Saxon Earls, being involved in this plot, was beheaded, although he gave evidence against his associates. Odo, having incurred the Conqueror's anger by aiming at the Popedom, was imprisoned in Normandy during his brother's life But William's chief troubles arose from his own children. Robert, the eldest, surnamed Curt-hose from his short legs, was nominal Duke of Normandy. His brothers, William and Henry, jealous

of his power, insulted him by throwing a pitcher of water on him from a balcony in the street of the small French town L'Aigle. He rushed with drawn sword to take vengeance on them; but, on his father's interference, he withdrew, and left the town that evening. For five years he wandered in neighbouring countries, secretly supported by his mother, Matilda. At length
1077 he fixed his quarters in the Castle of Gerberoi, which
A.D. William besieged, and before which the father and the son met unwittingly in single combat, when Robert wounded his father in the hand.

Among William's chief acts were the compilation of Domesday Book, the institution of the Curfew-bell, and the
1086 enactment of the Forest-laws. **Domesday Book** was a
A.D. register of English land, which still remains in two vellum manuscripts, one folio, the other quarto, recording the size of each estate, its division into arable, pasture, meadow, and woodland, the name of the owner, and other details. The Curfew-bell (from *couvre feu*, "cover fire") was rung at eight o'clock in the evening, as a signal for putting out all fires and candles; and, though long looked on as a tyrannical measure, may have been wisely intended to preserve the wooden houses from being burned. The Forest-laws—the origin of our game-laws—inflicted upon the man who killed a deer, a wild boar, or other beast of chase, the terrible punishment of having his eyes torn out. The land between Winchester and the sea was converted into an immense hunting-park by the King, who burned cottages and churches to clear the ground for his plantation. A portion of this park still remains, under the name of the New Forest. Justices of the Peace, and the Courts of Chancery, Exchequer, and Common Pleas had origin in this reign. The Cinque Ports—Dover, Hastings, Romney, Hythe, and Sandwich —were now fortified. To these have since been added Winchelsea and Rye. The Channel Islands were first annexed to England at the Norman Conquest.

The revival of the Dane-geld, forfeitures, royal rents, and tolls could not satisfy the King's avarice, although they raised his revenue to more than £1000 a day. His reign was to the Saxons one scene of misery; beginning in bloodshed and spoliation, it ended in famine and pestilence, caused by the rains and storms of 1086.

The French King sneered at William's corpulence when old; and from this trifling cause a war began. The English King, besieging Mantes, rode out to view the burning town; and the

plunging of his horse, which trod on some hot ashes, bruised him severely against the high pommel of his saddle The bruise inflamed, and, after six weeks, the Conqueror died near Rouen. His corpse, deserted by all his minions, who fled with the plunder of the palace, lay for three hours naked on the ground, and owed its burial to the charity of a French knight, who conveyed it to Caen.

The character and appearance of the Conqueror are sketched in the Saxon Chronicle. Stern and ambitious; avaricious in his latter days, and brooking no interference with his will; of short stature and corpulent, of a fierce countenance, and devoted to the sport of hunting he owed the terror of his name both to the force of his passions and to his immense bodily strength, which we are told was so great that he could bend on horseback a bow which no other man could draw on foot.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

SCOTLAND.	A.D	EMPEROR.	
MALCOLM III., began to reign	1056	HENRY IV., began to reign	1056
FRANCE.			
PHILIP I.,	1060		
		ALEXANDER II.,	1061
SANCHO II.,	1065	GREGORY VII. (Hildebrand),	1073
ALPHONSO VI.,	1072	VICTOR III.,	1086

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS.

	A.D
Papacy of Hildebrand,	1073–85
Seljuk Turks take Palestine,	1076
Henry IV. of Germany Excommunicated,	1077
Siege of Durazzo by Normans,	1081
Moorish Empire in Spain,	1087

CHAPTER II.

WILLIAM II.—RUFUS

Born 1057 A.D.—Began to reign 1087 A.D.—Died 1100 A.D.

William Seizes the Crown
Odo's Plot
Designs upon Normandy
Scotland and Wales
Revolt of Mowbray (1095 A.D.)
William's Extortion
Normandy Pledged by Robert (1096 A.D.)
Death of Rufus
Character and Works

WILLIAM, surnamed **Rufus** from his red complexion, was third son of the Conqueror. Robert, in accordance with his father's will, was acknowledged Duke of Normandy, but, while he was enjoying the new dignity of his coronet at Rouen, his more active and ambitious brother had crossed to England, and, within three weeks after the Conqueror's death, had secured the crown, chiefly by the influence of Lanfranc.

A deep-laid plot to set Robert on the throne, of which the leading spirit was **Odo**, Bishop of Bayeux and Earl of Kent, shook the newly-founded dominion of William. But the English, conciliated by some temporary concessions and still remembering the cruel regency of Odo, supported Rufus, and at their head, the King, storming the Castle of Rochester, drove into exile the rebellious prelate, who sailed for Normandy, followed by the deep curses of the Saxons.

The duchy of Normandy, feebly ruled by the indolent though brave Robert, had great attractions for Rufus; who, by the skilful use of the treasures hoarded by his father, soon made himself master of all the fortresses on the right bank of the Seine, and prepared to follow up his fraud by force. But the
1091 Norman Barons and the French King reconciled the A.D. brothers, who agreed that the survivor should hold the united dominions.

No longer occupied with Norman affairs, William led an army against **Malcolm** of Scotland. Peace was made between the two countries; but next year Malcolm, enraged at the settlement of an English colony at Carlisle, which he considered a Scottish town, invaded Northumberland. Here he died before Alnwick Castle, pierced in the eye, as some historians say, by Roger de Mowbray, who was handing him the keys of the castle on the point of a lance, and who afterwards bore the name Pierce-eye.

or Percy Wales, too, was traversed by Rufus, but with little success, and he was forced to content himself with the old plan of erecting a chain of forts round the mountain-land.

Robert Mowbray, the strongest of the Norman barons, rebelled, and within Bamborough Castle defied the attack of William. Being decoyed, however, from this strong- **1095**
hold, he was made prisoner, and was brought before the A.D.
castle walls, where Matilda, his wife, still held out She refused to yield until she saw an executioner preparing to tear out her husband's eyes, then, to save him, she gave up the keys. For thirty years he lingered in the dungeons of Windsor Castle

The extravagance of Rufus knew no bounds The chief instrument of his extortion was Ralph, surnamed **Flambard** or the Torch, a dissolute priest Among other means of raising money, this minister devised the plan of keeping abbeys and bishoprics vacant, that the King might receive their revenues, and of demanding, from those who obtained appointments, large sums as the price of the benefices One of the chief sufferers by this system was Anselm, successor of Lanfranc He had been forced by the King to accept the office, and yet the persecutions he endured from William and Ralph obliged him to leave England.

William had agreed to repay Robert for the lost castles; but the promise was never kept, for falsehood was a part of William's character, and again the sword was drawn by the
brothers. Just then came an offer from Robert to **1096**
transfer the government of Normandy and Maine to the A.D.
English King for five years, on receipt of 10,000 merks (the merk was 13s. 4d) The **Wars of the Cross** had begun. The appeal of Pope Urban II and the fierce war-cry of Peter the Hermit had stirred all Europe from Sicily to Norway, and the knights of the first Crusade were on the march to rescue from the infidels the sepulchre of our Saviour. Robert burned to join their ranks, and hence his offer. William at once agreed to the terms; and the merks, wrung from the hapless English, carried Robert and his vassals to Palestine. Edgar Atheling, too, followed the red-cross banner of France.

Rufus died by violence. He was at Malwood, a hunting-lodge in the **New Forest**, on the fatal day Disturbed by feverish dreams during the previous night, he had given up the
idea of hunting; but the wine he drank at dinner— **1100**
then a forenoon meal—scattered his fears, and he rode A.D.
into the forest. His train gradually left him in the heat of the chase, and at sunset they found him lying dead, with a

broken shaft sticking in his breast. A cart bore the corpse to Winchester, where it was buried within the cathedral, but with no religious service. Whose hand sped the shaft none can tell. The common story fastens the guilt on Walter Tyrrel. Some say that Tyrrel's arrow, aimed at a stag, glanced from a tree and pierced the King's heart, while a dark whisper of the time named his brother Henry as the murderer.

Rapacious, prodigal, debauched, and cruel, the character of Rufus bears no redeeming feature In person he was short and corpulent, with flaxen hair and red face, and he stammered in his speech. A wall round the Tower, a bridge over the Thames, and the Hall of Westminster were the chief public works of a King, who did little else for his people.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

SCOTLAND	A D	CASTILE	A D
MALCOLM III., began to reign	1056	ALPHONSO VI, began to reign	1072
DONALD BANE,	1093		
DUNCAN II,	1094	EMPEROR.	
DONALD BANE, again,	1095	HENRY IV.,	1056
EDGAR,	1098		
		POPES	
		URBAN II,	1088
PHILIP I.,	1060	PASCHAL II.,	1099

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

	A D
Portugal Separated from Castile,	1095
Council of Clermont,	1095
First Crusade,	1096
Crusaders take Jerusalem,	1099

CHAPTER III.

HENRY I —BEAUCLERC.

Born 1070 A.D.—Began to reign 1100 A D —Died 1135 A.D.

Henry Seizes the Crown
Early Acts and first Marriage
Tenchebrai (1106 A D)
Investitures (1107 A D)
Prince William Drowned (1120 A D)
The Queens
Maud
Henry's Death and Character
Improvements
Learning and Literature

HENRY, youngest son of the Conqueror, immediately after his brother's death, rode to Winchester and seized the royal treasures. These being secured, he hastened to Westminster, and was there crowned on the following Sunday by Maurice, Bishop of London. Robert, whose the crown was by right, still lingered in Italy on his homeward journey

The early acts of Henry, like those of most usurpers, were intended to please the people He published a charter of liberties, promising to abolish the Curfew and the Dane-geld, to restore the laws of the Confessor, and to redress the grievances under which the nation had groaned since the Conquest His marriage with Matilda, daughter of Malcolm III , the Scottish King, and niece of Edgar Atheling, united the Norman and Saxon royal lines, and thus began that blending of the races from which arose the true English nation.

To please the English, Flambard, the minister of Rufus, had been imprisoned in the Tower by the new King; but, a friend having conveyed to him a rope hidden in a jar of wine, he escaped by a window, and reached Normandy. Robert had just arrived with his Italian wife, and was easily induced to invade England. He was marching on Winchester, when Henry overtook him. The princes met in conference between the armies, and a few minutes decided the treaty. Robert agreed to give up his claim on England in return for a yearly pension of 3000 merks. This allowance, however, he was afterwards forced to resign as ransom to Henry, in whose power he had unsuspiciously placed himself. The disputes between the brothers grew worse daily, and ended in open war. The first campaign decided nothing; in the second Robert lost his coronet and his freedom at the battle of **Tenchebrai**. He was brought to England, and, after thirty years in prison, died at Cardiff Castle, a year

1106 A.D.

before his brother Some writers say that his eyes were burned out; and indeed the character of Henry seems to justify the charge The war lingered for many years, during which the claims of William, Robert's son, were supported by Louis of France, but Henry triumphed at the battle of Brenville, and his son received the dukedom

During these wars Henry had been involved in a dispute with the **Church.** The contested points were Henry's claims that the clergy should do homage for their lands, and that he should be permitted to use the right of his predecessors, who were accustomed to invest new abbots and prelates with the ring and crosier of their office Anselm, who sided with the Pope, was banished a second time, but at the Council of London Henry gave up his claims—a concession which, after all, did not affect the substance of his power

The King and his son, William, now aged eighteen, crossed to Normandy, to receive the homage of the barons, but on the voyage back the prince was drowned When about to embark with his father, a sailor named Fitzstephen, whose father had steered the Conqueror's ship to England, offered to the prince the use of "**The White Ship,**" manned by fifty skilful rowers. The other vessels left the shore early in the day, but the White Ship delayed till sunset, the crew drinking and feasting on deck They set out by moonlight, and were rowing vigorously along to overtake the King's ship, when the vessel struck on a rock in the Race of Alderney and went to pieces William might have been saved, for he had secured a boat, but, melted by a sister's shrieks, he returned, and the boat sank beneath the number that leaped from the ship's side None lived to tell the sad story but a poor butcher of Rouen, who floated ashore on a broken mast The news was kept from Henry for some days, when a page, flinging himself in tears at the monarch's feet, told all It is said that Henry never smiled again This event revived the hopes of Robert's son, who had meanwhile received the earldom of Flanders, but his death of a wound, inflicted at the gates of Alost, left Henry without a rival for the Norman coronet

1120 A D

More than two years before Prince William's death, Henry lost his wife Matilda. They had been estranged for twelve years, which the Queen had spent in devotion and quiet benevolence, music and poetry forming her chief amusements The first stone bridge in England was built over the Lea by her orders. She left two children—William, who was drowned, and Maud, who

married Henry V, Emperor of Germany, and was left a widow after six months Henry's second wife was a French princess, Adelicia, daughter of the Duke of Louvain She had no children.

Thus left without a son to inherit his throne, Henry exacted from the prelates and nobles an oath to support Maud's claim At the same time, to strengthen his connections in France, he caused her to marry **Geoffrey Plantagenet,** Count of Anjou, a boy of sixteen,—an alliance which pleased neither English nor Normans The marriage was not a happy one, and the broils between Maud and her husband disturbed the latter years of Henry's reign.

The King died at St Denis in Normandy, after seven days' illness, brought on by eating to excess of lampreys

He was, like Rufus, cruel, faithless, and debauched, but was more accomplished and refined He gained his surname, Beauclerc or "Fine Scholar," by translating *Æsop's Fables* Another title, "The Lion of Justice," was conferred on him by his people, owing to the stern impartiality with which he administered the laws

Henry was the first English King who delivered a formal speech from the throne During his reign silver halfpence and farthings, which had previously been formed by clipping the penny into halves and quarters, were made round, the coinage, which had been debased, was renewed, and laws were enacted against false coiners, making their crime punishable with blindness and mutilation; rents were paid in money instead of in kind, a standard of weights and measures was established, the ell being fixed at the length of the King's arm, and the woollen manufacture was introduced by some Flemings, who settled first on the Tweed, and afterwards at Haverfordwest in Pembroke, and Worsted in Norfolk

Himself a scholar, Beauclerc encouraged learning. English students might be found in Spain studying among the Moors medicine and mathematics; others remaining at home drew the truths of science from the pages of Latin writers A curious account is given of the teaching at Cambridge at this time. At first the students met in a large barn, but in **1110** the second year each teacher had a separate room Very A.D. early in the morning one master taught the rules of grammar; at six, a second lectured on the logic of Aristotle; at nine, Cicero and Quintilian were construed and expounded, and before twelve, a theological class received an explanation of difficult passages in the Scriptures.

Romances—so called from being written in a corrupted form of the ancient Roman tongue—now took the place of the Saxon poems. They described the adventures of some great warrior,—Alexander, Arthur, and Charlemagne were the favourites These were dressed up as feudal knights, and made the heroes of wild adventures,—slaying dragons and giants, storming enchanted castles, setting free beautiful ladies, and doing other wondrous deeds.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

	A D		
SCOTLAND			
EDGAR, . began to reign	1098	HENRY IV, began to reign	1056
ALEXANDER I.,	1107	HENRY V.,	1106
DAVID I,	1124	LOTHAIRE II.,	1125
FRANCE			
PHILIP I,	1060		
LOUIS VI,	1108	POPES.	
		PASCHAL II,	1099
CASTILE		GELASIUS II,	1118
ALPHONSO VI.,	1072	CALIXTUS II,	1119
ALPHONSO VII.,	1109	HONORIUS II.,	1124
ALPHONSO VIII.,	1126	INNOCENT II,	1130

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

	A.D
Contest between Emperor and Pope about Investitures Compromised,	1122
Franconian line ends (Germany),	1125

CHAPTER IV.

STEPHEN, EARL OF BLOIS.

Born 1105 A.D —Began to reign 1135 A D.—Died 1154 A D.

Stephen made King
Battle of the Standard (1138 A D)
War between Maud and Stephen (1139–53 A D)
Henry acknowledged Heir (1153 A D)
Death of Stephen
His Character

STEPHEN, third son of Adela, the Conqueror's daughter, who had married the Earl of Blois, claimed the vacant throne in opposition to Maud He was first prince of the blood royal, and had in his favour the feeling of feudal times, that it was disgraceful for men to submit to a woman's rule. His brother Henry, Bishop of Winchester, gained for him the leading clergy, and he was joyfully received by the citizens of the capital and of London.

The embalmed body of Henry was escorted to Reading Abbey by Stephen, who helped to bear the coffin After the burial, at a meeting of Prelates and Barons held at Oxford, the Earl, already crowned King, swore to abolish the Dane-geld, to preserve the rights of the clergy, and to allow the barons the privilege of hunting in their own forests, and of building new castles on their estates. These concessions gained a strong party for Stephen; but the immediate result of the last was, that there arose throughout England one hundred and twenty-six new castles, which, with those built before, long continued to be the strongholds of lawless robber nobles, who lived by plunder, and often headed their vassals against the King himself

David of Scotland was the first to draw the sword for Maud. Thrice in one year he ravaged with pitiless cruelty Northumberland, which he claimed as his own. In his third invasion he reached Yorkshire, but was there met at **Northallerton** by the northern Barons and their vassals, who had been roused to action by the aged Thurstan, Archbishop of York. There was fought the battle of the **Standard.** Above the English forces rose the mast of a ship, adorned with the ancient banners of three Saxon saints, and surmounted by a cross and a silver box containing the sacramental wafer; the whole being bound to a rude car. Hand in hand the English chiefs swore to conquer or die, then knelt in prayer, and rose to battle. The Scots rushed to the onset with shouts, and bore back the English van. The flanks,

1138 A.D.

Aug. 22.

too, yielded, but round the Standard the English spears formed an unbroken front For two hours the Scottish swordsmen strove, amid unceasing showers of Saxon arrows, to hew their way to victory, but they spent their strength in vain, and the dragon flag of Scotland was hurried from the field, blood stained, torn, and drooping, like the flying relics of that gallant army which had marched at sunrise beneath its brilliant folds More than 12,000 Scots lay dead David collected his scattered forces at Carlisle, where he was joined on the third day by his son Henry, who had escaped into the woods by following the pursuit as an English knight The energies of the Scottish King were not yet exhausted, but early in the next year peace was made All Northumberland, except Bamborough and Newcastle, was conferred on Prince Henry of Scotland, and five Scottish nobles were given as hostages to Stephen

Maud soon landed on the southern coast with 140 knights At first she occupied Arundel Castle in Sussex, but,
1139 with a generosity more chivalrous than politic, Stephen
A D permitted her to reach Bristol, the chief stronghold of
Sept 30 her half brother, Robert, Earl of Gloucester Civil war began The Barons, who lived like independent Kings within their strong castles, watched its progress without joining much in its operations, the people were mercilessly robbed, imprisoned, and tortured by them, trade and tillage were neglected, and a man might have ridden for a whole day in some districts without seeing a cultivated field or an inhabited dwelling

Maud's cause was at first successful At the battle of
1141 **Lincoln**, Stephen, whose sword and battle axe had been
A.D shivered in his grasp, was brought to the ground by a stone, and made prisoner Heavily fettered, he was cast into the dungeons of Bristol Castle, while his wife, Matilda of Boulogne, withdrew to Kent Maud was now acknowledged Queen by the clergy, but her arrogance soon estranged her warmest supporters The men of Kent, rising in Stephen's cause, entered London, and Maud, alarmed at the pealing of bells and the shouts of the citizens, fled on horseback to Oxford The failure of an attack on Winchester, in which her brother Robert was taken prisoner, ruined her cause, and Stephen, exchanged for the Earl of Gloucester, sat once more on the throne
1142 Maud still held **Oxford**, and was there besieged by the
A D. King She sustained the siege far into the winter, in hopes that Stephen would yield to the severity of the weather, but famine forced her to leave the castle With three

knights clad in white, in order to escape the eye of Stephen's sentinels, she fled over the snow, crossed the Thames on the ice, and reached Wallingford She remained for four years longer in England, holding Gloucester as the centre of her sway, which was acknowledged in the western half of the kingdom Then, having lost by death her chief supporters, Milo of Hereford and Robert of Gloucester, she retired to Normandy

Her son Henry had been meanwhile growing up He had been knighted at Carlisle by his uncle David, had succeeded, on his father's death, to Normandy and Anjou, and had gained Aquitaine by his marriage with Eleanor of Poitou, the divorced wife of the French King Thus powerful in France, he invaded England, to wrest from Stephen the crown of his grandfather, but the sudden death of Stephen's eldest son, Eustace, hindered the war, and a treaty was made at **Winchester**, by which Henry was acknowledged heir to the English throne, while William, surviving son of Stephen, was to inherit the earldom of Boulogne and the private domains of his father Stephen died in less than a year afterwards at Dover, and was buried in the tomb of his wife and son at Faversham Abbey in Kent

1152 A D

1154 A D

He seems to have been a man of courage, promptness, and perseverance, generous to friends, forbearing to enemies, and affable to all But the civil wars, which filled his reign, prevent us from judging of his character as a King His figure was tall, muscular, and commanding

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

SCOTLAND	A D	EMPERORS	A D
DAVID I, began to reign	1124	**LOTHAIRE II**, began to reign	1125
MALCOLM IV,	1153	**CONRAD III**,	1138
		FREDERIC I Barbarossa),	1152
		POPES	
LOUIS VI,	1108	**INNOCENT II**,	1130
LOUIS VII	1137	**CELESTINE II**,	1143
		LUCIUS II,	1144
CASTILE		**EUGENIUS III**,	1145
ALPHONSO VIII,	1126	**ANASTASIUS IV**,	1153

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

	A D
Justinian's Pandects Discovered,	1137
St Bernard of Clairvaux,	1091–1153
Second Crusade.	1147–49

CHAPTER V.

SCOTLAND DURING THE NORMAN PERIOD.

From 1056 A D. to 1153 A D.—97 Years—6 Kings.

MALCOLM III (son of Duncan), began to reign	1056	**DONALD BANE** again usurps,	1095
DONALD BANE (brother),	1093	**EDGAR** (son of Malcolm III.),	1098
DUNCAN (son of Malcolm III.),	1094	**ALEXANDER I.** (brother),	1107
		DAVID I. (youngest brother),	1124–53

Influence of Saxon Margaret
Death of Malcolm (1093 A.D.)
Contest for the Throne
Claims of the English Prelates
War with England.
The "Sair Sanct."

MALCOLM CANMORE.—Malcolm III. was surnamed Canmore, or "Bighead" Two years after the Normans had conquered England he married the Saxon Margaret, sister of Edgar Atheling, who, having come with some Saxon exiles to seek refuge in Scotland, was cordially received in Dunfermline, then the capital of the northern land Margaret's influence over Malcolm was great It is said that he often took up her books and kissed them, although he could not read himself. Queen Margaret did much to encourage religion and industry among the Scots; and, through her influence, Malcolm assumed more state than any of his predecessors had displayed. Gold and silver plate were to be seen on the royal table

At this time the Scottish Kings claimed Cumberland and Northumberland. In fact this "Debatable Land" was ravaged without mercy by both English and Scotch William the Conqueror penetrated Scotland, proceeding as far as Abernethy; and his son Robert, at a later date, marched to Falkirk Newcastle on the Tyne owed its origin to a fortress built on that river by the Norman prince

Malcolm met his death in this region desolated by constant war. Aroused by an insult received from Rufus, he entered England late in the autumn of 1093, and laid siege to Alnwick Castle. There he perished by treachery, while his army scattered in flight. Queen Margaret breathed her last at Edinburgh, almost immediately after hearing the fatal news.

War for the Throne.—Four years were occupied in a contest for the crown between **Donald Bane** (White Donald), a brother, and **Duncan**, an illegitimate son of Malcolm Canmore. Donald first seized the throne, but was soon expelled by Duncan. In

eighteen months Duncan was murdered, and Donald again became King, but in 1098 the old usurper was dethroned by an army from England, and blinded as a punishment for his usurpation.

Edgar, son of Malcolm Canmore, succeeded, and reigned peacefully for nine years Inheriting his mother's devotional spirit, he founded monasteries and cherished the priesthood by grants and other favours Among his foundations was the Priory of Coldingham, which he presented to the monks of Durham.

Alexander I.—His brother, Alexander I., then came to the throne Though of a temper totally unlike that of Edgar—his fits of fury gained for him the title of *Fierce*—he nevertheless resembled his brother in showing favour to the clergy. He presented a tract of land, known as the *Boar's Chase*, to the monks of St. Andrews A claim made by the English prelates as to the right of consecrating the Bishop of that ancient city was stoutly resisted by King Alexander, who finally succeeded in thwarting their attempt at intrusion. To him was due the introduction of written charters, to serve as evidence of right to freehold estates.

David I.—The youngest son of Malcolm Canmore then began a reign which lasted twenty-nine years Entering England in defence of the claims of his niece Matilda, he met Thurstan in the battle of the Standard, which has been already described.

In his reign some of the chief Scottish Abbeys—Melrose. Dryburgh, Jedburgh, Kelso, Cambuskenneth, Holyrood—were founded. He expelled the Culdees from the islet of St Serf in Lochleven. And, by insisting that every man "should find a lord," he consolidated the feudal system in Scotland. Violence was repressed with a high hand. "If any man drew his dagger on another, the guilty hand was transfixed with the weapon: if he actually stabbed, the hand was cut off."

Personally, David, whom one of his successors styled "ane sair sanct to the Crown," owing to his lavish gifts of land to the Church, was a man of gentle habits, who found his chief enjoyment at one time in the cultivation of trees.

At Carlisle, in 1153, he was found dead in his bed, with hands clasped in the posture of prayer.

Thus, while the early Norman Kings held the English throne, Saxons sat upon the throne of Scotland. The Scottish Court was the grand refuge of Saxon nobles who disdained to bow to the Norman yoke; and from it came the Saxon princess, daughter of Malcolm Canmore, whose marriage with Henry I. of England united the rival races.

CHAPTER VI

SOCIAL CONDITION OF THE NORMANS.

Feudal System	Norman Castles	Coins
Chivalry	Manner of Living	Language
The Joust or Tournament	Dress	

THE Normans brought with them into England the **Feudal System**, which continued to hold great power over English society until after the last Norman King fell on Bosworth field. It is true there were some traces of a similar plan among the Saxons, but the system was fully developed on the Continent, and chiefly among the Normans It derived its name from *feod*, or *feud*, a piece of land, and its leading feature was, that all land was under military tenure,—an expression which means that a tenant, instead of paying his whole rent in corn, or cattle, or money, gave only a small portion of these, and for the rest was obliged to fight under his lord's banner, without any pay, when called to arms

The King owned all land, he allotted large districts to the nobles, they subdivided these among the gentry (the Saxon *thanes*, called by the Normans *franklins*), these again sublet their land to their vassals,—in every case the higher requiring from the lower service in war When the King needed an army, he summoned his barons, they called to arms their franklins; these, their vassals and retainers and thus a large force was gathered round the royal standard By this system the barons had great power, and under the Norman Kings they often rebelled, and were constantly at war with each other. The lowest classes of society under the Normans were the *villeins* and the *serfs*.

Closely interwoven with the Feudal System was **Chivalry** or knighthood As a knight, the King was on a level with the poorest gentleman, and passed through the same training,—serving first as a page, and then as an esquire, before he received his golden spurs and took the vows of knighthood. The night before this ceremony, the candidate for knightly honours held his *vigil;* when, within some dark chapel aisle, amid the tombs of the fallen brave, he kept a lonely and silent watch over the arms he was about to assume.

The **Knight**, when fully equipped, was clad from head to heel

in armour, formed of plates rivetted firmly together; below this he wore a dress of soft leather. On his helmet was a crest; on his three-pointed shield a device,—the original of our coat-of-arms. His chief weapon was the lance; but, besides, he wore a two-handed sword, and a poniard called "the dagger of mercy," used to kill a fallen foe, and he not infrequently carried a battle-axe or mace. This last—a club with iron head studded with spikes—was the favourite instrument of war among the Norman clergy, who were often seen on the battle-field with a black cassock over their shining armour, and whose priestly vows, although they forbade the shedding of blood, said not a word about the dashing out of brains.

The Templars were a famous order of military monks, founded in 1118 A.D. They wore over their armour a long scarlet mantle, with an eight-pointed cross of white sewed on the right shoulder. Their robe of peace was white The Crusaders also were distinguished by crosses of various colours The English wore white, the French red, the Flemings green, the Germans black, and the Italians yellow.

The chief sport of chivalry was the **Tournament** or joust. It was held within an inclosed space called the lists. Ladies and nobles sat round in raised galleries, while the lower orders thronged outside the barriers to witness the sport At each end of the lists tents were pitched for the rival knights Then arose the clinking of hammers, as the rivets were closed by the armourers or smiths, at this time an important and honoured body of craftsmen. With flourish of trumpets the heralds proclaimed the titles of the knights, as they rode into the lists on their pawing chargers, and the cry, "Largesse, largesse!" with which the proclamation was followed, drew showers of gold and silver coin from the galleries. In the centre of the lists stood the challengers, awaiting their adversaries. These, riding up, touched with their lances the shields of those with whom they chose to contend. If the shield was touched with the sharp end of the lance, the combat was to be at *outrance*,—that is, with sharp weapons as in battle; while touching with lance reversed signified the more peaceful intention of using blunted weapons in a trial of skill. At sound of trumpet the combatants dashed at full gallop from opposite ends of the lists, and met in the centre with a terrible shock. If the knights were equally matched, the lances flew into splinters, and the horses were thrown back on their haunches; but if one struck with stronger and truer aim, whether the helmet or the shield of his rival, the

unlucky knight was hurled from the saddle to the ground, stunned, bleeding, and bruised by his heavy armour. This "gentle and joyous sport," as the Norman minstrels called it, generally lasted for two or three days The victor in the tilting of the first day, besides winning the horses and armour of those whom he vanquished, had the privilege of naming some lady, who, as Queen of Love and Beauty, presided over the remaining sports. The second day was often devoted to a *mêlée*, in which the knights fought in bands, till a signal to stop was given by the King or chief noble present casting down his baton The conqueror in the *mêlée* knelt, with all the stains of the conflict on him, to receive a crown of honour from the hands of the Queen of Love and Beauty

After the tilting, the lower classes held sports, the favourite being archery, bull-baiting, and playing at quarter-staff The last was a kind of cudgel-playing, the staff was a pole about six feet long, which the combatants grasped in the middle—striking, parrying, and thrusting with both ends Very similar to the tournament was the trial by combat, which, like the ordeal of the Saxons, was the Norman appeal to the justice of Heaven. In the reign of Henry II the *Grand Assize* was instituted as a mode of deciding a disputed case The verdict was given by four knights, chosen by the sheriff, and sixteen others named by the four.

The public business of the realm was transacted by the *Curia Regis*, which at the Conquest took the place of the Witenagemot.

The **Castles** of the Normans were built for strength and safety in turbulent days, and their grey ruins, still rising in solid grandeur here and there through the land, teach us how it was that the feudal Barons were able so often and so successfully to bid defiance to the King Their distinctive feature is the rounded arch, as opposed to the pointed arch and lancet-shaped window of the later Gothic style Encircled by the parapet and turrets of a wall about twelve feet high, stood the Keep. This was a square tower of five stories, with walls ten feet thick. The lowest story contained dungeons, the second was filled with stores, the third held the garrison, while the upper two were occupied by the Baron and his family. The entrance to the keep was in the third story, and was reached by a winding stair in the wall. In the middle of this stair was a strong gate; at the top was a drawbridge; while before the door, a portcullis, dropping from above with iron teeth, effectually barred the entrance against all foes. Round the whole castle ran a moat, or deep ditch filled with

water, over which was thrown a drawbridge, defended at its outer edge by a tower, called the Barbican. Close to the castle the shops and houses of those employed by the Baron and his vassals clustered together. Smiths, carpenters, workers in leather, bakers, butchers, tailors, and numerous other craftsmen lived there, having built their huts side by side for the safety that lies in numbers, and thus the Feudal Castle was often the nucleus of a Feudal Town.

In their **manner of life** the Normans were more temperate and delicate than the Saxons They had only two regular meals, dinner, taken by the higher classes at nine in the morning, and supper, about four or five in the afternoon. But a meal was often taken in private before going to rest. The Normans introduced the general use of the chief flesh meats found on our tables; —a change which is curiously illustrated in our language, where we find the words denoting the living animal, *ox*, *sheep*, *calf*, *pig*, to be Saxon; while the words applied to the flesh used as food, *beef*, *mutton*, *veal*, *pork*, are Norman or French in their origin. The banquets of this period were served with much state by attendants called sewers, who were under the direction of higher domestics, carrying white rods of office. The table was covered with varieties of meat, game, and pastry; and with cakes called by different names, such as wastel-cakes and simnel-bread. The higher Normans drank foreign wines, and closed their revelry with a draught called the grace-cup. The lower classes cheered their hearts with home-brewed ale A fixed etiquette was now observed at table, and much ridicule fell on those who neglected its rules. Thus we read of a Saxon who was laughed at by the Normans, because he dried his hands on a napkin, instead of waving them in the air until the moisture had evaporated. The sleeping rooms of the great contained rude wooden beds with coarse coverlets; but the mass of the people were obliged to content themselves with straw and sheepskins.

In **dress**, as in food, the Normans introduced many novelties. The gallant of this time, closely shaven, with long hair curling on the shoulders, wore a loose doublet reaching half way down the leg, girt with a gold-embroidered belt. Over this was a short cloak, richly furred and laced with gold. The shoes were the strangest article of dress. They had very long toes, pointed and twisted like the horns of a ram; and the fashion grew to so absurd a length that the toes were fastened with chains of gold or silver to the knees. A bonnet of velvet, and long hose fastened to the doublet by very many strings, called *points*, completed the cos-

tume. Many characters, strange to us, but illustrative of the social history of the time, might have been seen among the Normans;—the Minstrel, with his harp slung on his shoulder, a plate of silver on his arm, and a chain round his neck bearing the *wrest* or tuning key, the Fool or Jester, with his cap and bells, his dress of motley, and his stockings, one red and one yellow; the Palmer, or Pilgrim from the Holy Land, his hat bordered with cockle or scallop shells, sandals on his bare feet, carrying a staff shod with iron with a palm-branch on the top, the Saxon Serf, clad in untanned hide, with sandals of boar-skin, and leathern bandage rolled half way up the leg, wearing round his neck a collar of brass, engraved with his master's name, and the Jew, with yellow cap high and square, whose nation, reaching England during the Conqueror's reign, though abhorred, scouted, and plundered by all, continued to drive their trade in money-lending until the days of the first Edward The Norman ladies wore a kirtle or undergown of silk, over which hung a loose wide-sleeved robe reaching the ground The Clergy, whose professional mark of distinction was a heavy gold signet ring, often vied with the gallants of the day in the splendour and fashion of their dress.

The Saxon **coinage** was little changed. Some new foreign coins came into use, of which the chief were the merk, worth 13s 4d; and the zechin or sequin, an Italian coin, worth about 9s 5d, brought into use by the Crusades

The Norman **tongue**—rich in words relating to war, chivalry, law, and the sports of the field—being the language of the court, speedily became that of the church, the halls of justice, and the schools, where, we are told, the boys construed their Latin lesson into French The language of the Saxons, like the race that spoke it, made little progress during these days of bondage; and, from its loss of inflections, gets the name Semi-Saxon, until the reign of John Ever since the Conquest, a struggle for predominance had been going on between the Saxon and the Norman languages About the time of Magna Charta a reaction began, which ended in the triumph of the former tongue. Three-fifths of our modern English may be traced to the Anglo-Saxon.

Surnames were brought into general use by the Normans. They were derived from various sources, of which the most fruitful were personal qualities, as Armstrong, Whitehead, Swift; and occupations or trades, as Smith, Falconer, Taylor, Miller. Many were formed from Christian names by adding the Danish *son*, as Wilson; the Saxon *ing*, as Clavering; the Celtic *Mac* or *O*, as Macdonald, O'Connell; or the Norman *Fitz*, as Fitzgerald.

LEADING AUTHORS UNDER THE EARLY NORMAN KINGS

THE SAXON CHRONICLE.—This work, begun by Plegmund of Canterbury, was compiled from the registers kept in the monasteries—passing events from Alfred's time to the year 1154 are noticed

INGULF, (1030–1109)—Abbot of Croyland—chronicler.

GEOFFREY OF MONMOUTH, a Welsh monk—wrote a *History of the Britons* in Latin This work contains the Celtic legends of Arthur and his Knights of the Round Table Died in 1154

WILLIAM OF MALMESBURY, (1067–1143 —author of *History of the English Kings* to 1120, and *Historia Novella,* extending the narrative to 1142

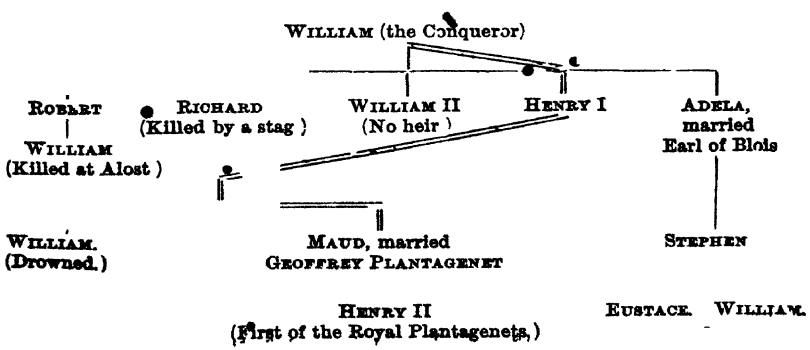
HENRY OF HUNTINGDON, chronicler—died 1168

LEADING DATES—EARLY NORMAN KINGS

GENERAL EVENTS	A D		BATTLES, SIEGES.	A D	
Court held at York,	1069	Wm. I	Storming of Ely,	1071.	Wm. I.
Bridal of Norwich,	1075.	—	Siege of Gerberoi,	1077.	—
Domesday-book compiled,	1086.	—	Battle of Tenchebrai,	1106.	Hen I.
Mowbray rebels,	1095	Wm II.	— of Brenville,	1119.	—
First Crusade,	1096	—	— of the Standard,	1138	Steph.
Investitures settled,	1107.	—	— of Lincoln,	1141.	—
P. William drowned,	1120.	Hen I	Siege of Oxford,	1142.	—
Maud lands,	1139.	Steph.			
P. Henry lands,	1152.	—			

GENEALOGICAL TREE

CONNECTING THE EARLY NORMAN KINGS WITH THE PLANTAGENETS



PLANTAGENET LINE.

1154 A.D. to 1485 A.D.—331 years—14 Kings.

Leading Feature: THE FEUDAL SYSTEM IN ITS PRIME AND ITS DECAY.

PLANTAGENETS PROPER

HENRY II., began to reign	1154	**EDWARD I.** (son), began to reign	1272
RICHARD I (son),	1189	**EDWARD II.** (son),	1307
JOHN (brother),	1199	**EDWARD III.** (son),	1327
HENRY III. (son),	1216	**RICHARD II.** (grandson),	1377–99

CHAPTER I

HENRY II.—CURTMANTLE.

Born 1133 A.D.—Began to reign 1154 A.D.—Died 1189 A.D.

The name Plantagenet
Henry's Power and Early Policy
Becket's Rise
Archbishop of Canterbury (1162 A.D.)
His Quarrel with Henry (1164 A.D.)
His Return and Murder (1170 A.D.)
State of Ireland.
Story of Dermot
Invasion of Ireland (1169–72 A.D.)
Henry's Penance
Capture of the Scottish King (1174 A.D.)
Henry's Death and Character
Changes in his Reign

THE heads of the **Plantagenet line** were Geoffrey of Anjou and Maud, daughter of Henry I. of England. The name is derived from *Planta genista*, the Latin term for the shrub we call broom; which, as an emblem of humility, was worn by the first Earl of Anjou when a pilgrim to the Holy Land. From this his successors took their crest and their surname.

Young Henry had a brilliant prospect before him. In France he held some of the fairest provinces, all the western coasts owning his sway. With his Queen, Eleanor, he received the crown of England at Westminster. During several years he was engaged in redressing the evils which had sprung from the turbulence of Stephen's reign. He issued

Dec. 1154 A.D.

new coins; drove from England the foreign hirelings, who had swarmed into the land during the civil war; and—hardest task of all—set himself to destroy the castles of the robber-barons.

The story of Thomas à Becket fills nearly one half of the reign. Tradition tells us that Gilbert Becket, a Norman merchant, was imprisoned in Palestine; that he was set free by a Saracen girl who loved him, and that she, feeling wretched after his escape, followed him to England. She knew only two English words, *London* and *Gilbert* the first gained for her a passage in an English-bound ship, and by crying the second in the streets of London, she at length found her lover. They were married, and **Thomas à Becket** was their son

While in Italy Becket obtained from the Pope a bull, forbidding the coronation of Eustace, Stephen's son. This, which gained for him the favour of Henry Plantagenet, may be regarded as the first step of his preferment By the advice of the aged Theobald, Archbishop of Canterbury, Henry appointed him Chancellor, and tutor to his son, and he speedily became chief favourite.

He outshone the King by his magnificence, had in his train thousands of knights, and lived in the height of the luxury which the times afforded His table was free to all: the uninvited guests were often so many that there were not seats for all, and numbers sat on the floor upon clean straw or rushes.

On the death of Theobald, Becket became Archbishop of Canterbury, then, as it is now, the highest dignity in the Church. At once he changed his conduct. He resigned his Chancellorship, became as frugal in his style of living as he had been dissolute and luxurious, and exchanged his gay train of knights for the society of a few monks

From this time he began to lose the favour of the King. Dislike deepened into hatred, hatred burst into open quarrel The rights of the clergy formed the immediate subject of contention. **Becket was the first man born in England who** had obtained the primacy under the Normans. He therefore enlisted the sympathy of all his countrymen in his struggle against the royal power. Henry required that priests accused of crime should be tried by the royal judges. Becket opposed him, maintaining the right of priests to answer for their conduct only to the courts of the Church. A **1164** council held at **Clarendon** in Wilts, where the articles A.D. known as the *Constitutions of Clarendon* were enacted, decided in Henry's favour. Becket yielded at first; but the struggle was resumed, and he fled to France to escape ruin.

After six years he was reconciled to Henry, by Pope Alexander III. and Louis of France Returning to England, he found the domains of his see forfeited Henry seemed unwilling to restore them, and this renewed the quarrel Becket then excommunicated all who held lands belonging to the see of Canterbury. The King, who was in Normandy when the news reached him, happened to say, "Is there none of the cowards eating my bread who will free me from this turbulent priest?" Four knights, who heard him, took an oath to slay Becket; and, travelling to England, burst into the Cathedral at Canterbury, **1170** where they cruelly murdered the prelate, scattering his A D brains on the steps of the altar The scene of the murder, and the saintly reputation of the victim deepened the horror with which the people looked upon this crime. The tomb of Becket became a resort of pilgrims

The great event of this reign was the invasion of **Ireland.** The island was then divided into six provinces,—Leinster, Desmond or South Munster, Thomond or North Munster, Connaught, Ulster, and Meath; the last being specially attached to the dignity of *Ard-riagh*, or supreme monarch, which was then claimed by the O'Connors, Kings of Connaught The ports were in the hands of Ostmen, or Eastmen, descended from the Danish pirates, and were very prosperous, the commerce of Dublin rivalling that of London. But the mass of the people fed cattle. Their clothing was spun from raw wool. Their houses were built of wood and wicker-work They had forgotten the art by which their ancestors raised those strange round towers that still puzzle the antiquary. Like the Welsh, they excelled in the music of the harp.

A feud arose between **Dermot MacMorrogh**, King of Leinster, and O'Rourke, Prince of Breffni or Leitrim. Dermot had carried off O'Rourke's wife; but she had been recovered by the aid of O'Connor, the Ard-riagh War ensued, and Dermot was driven from the island. From Henry he obtained leave to enlist soldiers in England. Richard le Clare, Earl of Pembroke, surnamed Strongbow, Robert Fitzstephen, and Maurice Fitzgerald accepted his terms.

Fitzstephen landed at Bannow Bay with 40 knights and 300 archers, and Wexford fell before him. Fitzgerald followed. Then came **Strongbow** with 1200 men. Waterford and Dublin **1171** were carried by storm; and no efforts of the Irish could A.D. dislodge the invaders from the fortresses, with which they rapidly secured their conquests. Henry now crossed by the usual route, from Milford Haven to Waterford; and

at Dublin received the homage of the chieftains. The princes of Ulster alone disdained submission On his return to England Henry appointed Prince John, a boy of twelve, to the lordship of the island The foolish boy and his Norman train mocked the Irish chieftains, as they came to pay homage, and insulted them by plucking their beards. Such treatment estranged the natives, and their revolts became fiercer and more frequent. These events are called the conquest of Ireland, but its final subjugation was of much later date.

Four years after Becket's murder, Henry did penance at his tomb Walking barefoot through the city of Canterbury, he threw himself on the pavement before the shrine, and was there scourged with knotted cords

Immediately afterwards he received news of the capture of **William the Lion,** King of Scotland, who had been surprised in a mist near Alnwick Castle by Glanville, the greatest of his generals This Henry exultingly ascribed to the mercy of reconciled Heaven, deeming it, according to the notions of the age, the direct fruit of his penance William was not released until he acknowledged his kingdom a fief, and himself a vassal of the English crown,—a forced submission which it is important to remember, for on it Edward I founded his claims to the lordship of Scotland.

Henry's sons, urged on by their mother and the French King, often defied his power, and the shock of finding his favourite son, John, mentioned in a list of rebels, whom he was asked to pardon, threw him into a fever, of which he died at Chinon. The Church of Fontevraud received his remains, over which his son Richard is said to have wept bitter but useless tears of remorse. Of his five sons—Henry, Richard, Geoffrey, John, and William—only two, Richard and John, survived him One of his daughters, Maud, married Henry, Duke of Saxony, and thus became the ancestress of the family now holding the English throne.

In character Henry was the type of his race. His pride was great. Equally great was his ambition, but tempered with caution. His passion has been called the fury of a savage beast His faithlessness was concealed by his winning tongue and pleasant manners. In person he resembled his ancestor, the Conqueror.

During this reign commerce was much extended. The Crusades had introduced the merchandise of the East, and gold, spices, gems, and rich cloths adorned the stalls of London. The

Continent received from England flesh, herrings, and oysters, lead and tin, skins and cloths. Glass was first used for the windows of private houses in 1180 A D Six circuits of justice were fixed, and three judges appointed to each. **London** now became the capital, the civil wars of Stephen's reign having laid Winchester almost in ruins.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

MALCOLM IV, began to reign	1153	**FREDERIC** (Barbarossa),	1152
WILLIAM THE LION,	1165		
		POPES	
FRANCE		**ANASTASIUS IV**,	1153
LOUIS VII,	1137	**ADRIAN IV.** (the only English Pope; true name, Nicholas Breakspear),	1154
PHILIP AUGUSTUS,	1180	**ALEXANDER III**,	1159
		LUCIUS III,	1181
ALPHONSO VIII,	1126	**URBAN III**,	1185
SANCHO III,	1157	**GREGORY VIII**,	1187
ALPHONSO IX,	1158	**CLEMENT III.**.	1187

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

	A.D
The Lombard League (Italy),	1167
Saladin Conquers Egypt,	1171
Battle of Legnano (Italy),	1176
Reign of Philip Augustus (France),	1180–1223
Saladin takes Jerusalem,	1187

CHAPTER II.

RICHARD I.—CŒUR DE LION, OR THE LION-HEARTED.

Born 1157 A D.—Began to reign 1189 A D.—Died 1199 A D.

Money Raised for a Crusade | Richard in Prison | His Death.
Sufferings of the Jews. | His return to England (1194 A D.) | Character
Third Crusade (1190–92 A.D.) | | Effects of the Crusade

CROSSING without delay to England, Richard received his father's crown at Westminster. But to rule England was not his ambition. He burned to win glory on the plains of Palestine, and his earliest measures were undertaken to raise money for a **Crusade.** To this he devoted the hoards of his father, for this purpose he sold the honours and offices in his gift, and gave up for 10,000 merks the homage wrested by his father from the Scottish King.

The **Jews** now suffered terrible woes. They were the bankers and usurers of the age, and their money-chests presented an irresistible temptation. From France their nation had been driven with the scourge and the axe, and, dreading like treatment in England, they approached the Abbey on Richard's coronation-day with splendid offerings. Their presence roused the mob, and the cry spread that the King had proclaimed a massacre. Every Jewish dwelling was soon in a blaze, and the streets were slippery with Jewish blood. But York Castle was the scene of a darker tragedy. Five hundred Jews, who had taken refuge there with their wives and children, were besieged by the citizens. They offered money, but in vain, and, to baulk those who thirsted for their blood, they hurled their treasures into the flames, slew their dear ones, and then stabbed one another. A few cried for mercy, and opened the gates, but the rabble rushing in put them to the sword. Lynn, Norwich, Stamford, Edmondsbury, Lincoln also echoed the dying groans of God's ancient people. The butchers received slight punishment; while Richard, although no doubt sharing the plunder, declared by proclamation that he took the Jews under his protection.

Richard of England and Philip Augustus of France then mustered their soldiers on the plains of **Vezelai** in Burgundy. It was the Third Crusade. The united armies numbered 100,000 men. At Lyons the Kings parted, to meet at Messina in Sicily. During the winter, which

July 1, 1190 A.D.

they passed in Sicily, Richard forced the King, Tancred, to restore 40,000 ounces of gold—the dowry of his sister Joan. Here, too, many petty jealousies arose between Richard and Philip Another delay took place at Cyprus, where Richard was married to Berengaria of Navarre. He stayed to conquer the island, and, having captured the King, Isaac, cast him into prison, loaded with fetters of silver Nearly twelve
June 8, months had passed before the English King reached
1191 Acre, then the centre of the war The graves of 200,000
A D. soldiers, slain before the walls, attested the fury of the strife. Saladin, the infidel Soldan, watched every movement of the besieging force from the mountains that overshadowed the city Philip had been for some time in the camp before the walls, but the presence of the Lion-heart alone could strike terror into the defenders. Four days after Richard's arrival, the gates were thrown open The jealousy, which began in Sicily and had since been increasing, now caused Philip, on pretence of ill health, to return to France. Before his departure he swore not to invade the dominions of Richard From Acre Richard led the Crusaders to **Jaffa**, inflicting upon Saladin, who strove to impede the march, a severe defeat At last the walls of the still fair Jerusalem rose before the soldiers of the Cross, but their ranks were so thinned by war, hunger, and disease, and their energies so weakened by disunion and national jealousy, that Richard, even with the prize, for which he had neglected his duty
Oct. 9, as a King, glittering before him, was forced to turn away.
1192 The Crusade was over, and the monarch of England
A D. soon took leave of the sacred shore, with outstretched arms commending it to the mercy of Heaven

Wrecked upon the northern shore of the Gulf of Venice, Richard resolved to cross the Continent in the dress of a pilgrim, under the name of Hugh the merchant. He reached Erperg near Vienna in safety, but there the imprudence of his page, who, going into the town to buy provisions, wore gloves—then a made of the highest rank—betrayed him into the hands of Leopold, **Duke of Austria**, whom he had beaten with his own hands in the town of Acre At first he was confined in the Castle of Tyernsteign, but the Emperor, Henry VI., who purchased the chained Lion for £60,000, flung him into a castle in the Tyrol. There is a legend that a French minstrel, named Blondel, discovered the place of Richard's captivity. Wandering through the land, he happened near a grated window to strike his harp to an air of Richard's own composing. The strain was answered from

within, and he knew it was the King of England who sang The secret of Richard's prison was really disclosed by the copy of a letter from the Emperor to Philip of France. At the Diet of Worms in 1193 A D Richard defended himself against all charges, and did homage to the Emperor for his possessions. After much debate, a ransom was fixed, 100,000 merks were wrung from the English people; and Richard was set free. He had been absent four years, of which fourteen months were spent in prison

1194 A D

As yet the King had spent only four months in England. He now spent little more than two. When he recovered his freedom, he found his crown of England and his French coronets equally in danger His brother **John,** having driven into exile the Regent, William of Longchamp, aimed at the one: Philip of France desired the others, and this, perhaps, was the true cause of his desertion at Acre. John's party melted away before his brother's presence, and he humbly sought for pardon; which was granted at the intercession of his mother.

The rest of Richard's reign was occupied by wars in France, carried on at the expense of his English subjects. In two years he drew from this country £1,100,000 In France he received his death-wound in a mean quarrel. A treasure had been found on the estate of his vassal, Vidomar. Richard received part, but demanded all Being refused, he besieged the Castle of **Chaluz,** from the walls of which an arrow struck him in the shoulder. The head was extracted by an unskilful surgeon, and mortification set in The castle being taken, the archer, Gourdon, was brought a captive to the monarch's dying bed; but Richard pardoned him In spite of this, the unhappy youth was flayed alive by Richard's general The dead King was buried at the feet of his father in Fontevraud · his heart was bequeathed to the citizens of Rouen.

The daring valour and muscular strength of this prince; his bright blue eyes and curling chestnut hair; his skill in music, and his accomplishments in the poetry of the Troubadours, have made him a favourite hero of historians and novelists He was, indeed, the very model of a feudal knight, but the King of England, who spent six months among his people during a reign of ten years, and whose brightest victories brought poverty and hunger to English homes, cannot but be deemed unworthy of the name.

The famous Robin Hood is supposed to have lived now. Heavy taxes stirred up a riot in London, headed by Fitzosbert, or Long-

beard, who was hanged. The three lions, still seen in the royal shield, were adopted by Richard.

The social effects of the Crusades began to be felt They excited a somewhat kindlier feeling among the nations leagued in a common cause, they opened the East to commerce, and poured its riches into England, they drained the country of those restless spirits, whose broils convulsed society unceasingly, lastly, and of most importance, by weakening the power of the nobles, whose estates began to pass into the hands of the wealthy commoners, they elevated the standing of the middle classes, and laid the foundation of those changes, by which was afterwards established our House of Commons.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

WILLIAM,	began to reign 1165	**FREDERIC I.,**	began to reign 1152
		HENRY VI.,	1190
FRANCE		**PHILIP,**	1198
PHILIP AUGUSTUS,	1180	POPES.	
		CLEMENT III.,	1187
		CELESTINE III.,	1191
ALPHONSO IX,	1158	**INNOCENT III,**	1198

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS.

	A.D
The Third Crusade,	**1189–92**
Teutonic Knights instituted,	**1191**
The Fourth Crusade,	**1195–97**
The Fifth Crusade begins,	**1198**
Florence an independent Republic,	**1198**

CHAPTER III.

JOHN—SANSTERRE, OR LACKLAND

Born 1166 A D —Began to reign 1199 A.D —Died 1216 A D.

John not the Heir
Loss of French Provinces (1204 A D)
Quarrel with the Pope (1207-13 A.D)
Philip in Flanders
Magna Charta (1215 A D)
Broken Oaths
Death and Character
Notes

RICHARD, who left no heir, bequeathed his throne to his brother John, Duke of Mortaigne. A council held at Northampton confirmed the choice, and John was crowned at Westminster He was not the lineal heir, for his elder brother, Geoffrey, had left a son,—**Arthur, Duke of Bretagne,** now aged twelve years. This boy's claim was supported by the French King, but at the Castle of Mirebeau in Poitou he fell into the hands of John, who cast him into the dungeons of Rouen Here all trace of him was lost There were some who said that John slew him with his own hand, and flung his body into the Seine Arthur's sister, Eleanor, called the Maid of Bretagne, another rival, was imprisoned within Bristol Castle till her death

John, having divorced Joanna, married Isabella of Angouleme, the affianced wife of the Earl of Marche, and this seduction, coupled with the murder of Arthur, roused against him enemies, who soon stripped him of Normandy, Bretagne, Anjou, Maine, Touraine, and Poitou **1204 A D.**

The see of Canterbury having fallen vacant, the monks nominated John de Gray, Bishop of Norwich, the Pope, Innocent III, appointed Stephen Langton The monks yielded to the Pope; but John, defying the Pontiff, drove them from their abbeys and seized their treasures, because they had deserted his minister and favourite, De Gray. This conduct drew upon the country the terrors of an **Interdict.** For six years there was no worship in the land; the churches were closed; their silent bells rusted in the steeples; the dead were cast without prayer into unhallowed graves; the statues of the saints were shrouded in black. The people groaned under the curse; but the King, unmoved, visited Scotland, Ireland, and Wales, exacting homage and imposing tribute. The Pope at last called upon Philip of France **1208 A D. to 1214 A D.**

to dethrone the impious monarch, and then John yielded. Sensible that of the 60,000 warriors who marched under his banner he could trust not one, he took an oath of fealty to the Pope, agreeing to pay to the Roman coffers 1000 merks as yearly rent for his kingdoms of England and Ireland.

Philip, who was at Boulogne ready to invade England, proposed to cross the Strait notwithstanding John's submission to the Pope. Ferrand, Earl of Flanders, objected; and the enraged monarch ravaged Flanders to the walls of Ghent The French fleet, however, was scattered by William Longsword, Earl of Salisbury, who commanded the navy of England. John, **1214** in the flush of this success, sailed to Poitou; but his A D. hopes of victory were blasted by the defeat of his allies, the Emperor Otho and Ferrand, at **Bouvines.** He then sought and obtained a truce for five years

A number of men from Anjou and Poitou, who had been allied with King John, sought an asylum in England. Adroit and insinuating, and better fitted to please a King than were the Normans settled in the country, they were received with favour at the Court, and speedily supplanted the old aristocracy in the good graces of the King He distributed among them all the offices and fiefs at his disposal, and, under various pretexts, deprived several rich Normans of their posts in favour of these new comers. He married them to the rich heiresses under his wardship, according to the feudal law, and made them guardians of rich orphans under age The new courtiers, by their exactions, soon rendered themselves as odious to the Saxon citizens as they were to the nobles of Norman origin, and thus the two races of men who inhabited England were, for the first time, brought together by a common feeling Here we may date the birth of a new national spirit, common to all born on English soil.

The Barons of England, roused by the dishonour and loss which the tyrant had heaped upon their noblest families, swore to suffer no longer. When John heard their demands, he cried, "As well may they ask my crown!" But he had to deal with stern and resolute men, and though he shifted and delayed while he could, yet the loss of London, which the Barons seized June 15, one Sunday when the people were in the churches, forced **1215** him to compliance. At Runnymead, between Staines A D. and Windsor, he signed **Magna Charta,** a document still preserved in the British Museum. The most important provision of this Charter was, that no "freeman should be arrested, imprisoned, outlawed, or dispossessed of land, except

by the lawful judgment of his peers, and by the law of the land" Besides, it confirmed the ancient charters of London and other cities, and granted to foreign merchants leave to reside in England or depart from it without exaction Thus does God's mercy turn evil into good. To a reign among the blackest in our annals we can trace much of the peace which cherishes our freedom and brightens our homes At the same time John signed the Charter of the Forests. These two documents have been confirmed by Act of Parliament *thirty-two times*.

John was bound by solemn oaths to keep the Charter, but oaths were nothing to him He was all courtesy and kindness at Runnymead, but, when the Barons had departed, he raved like a madman, and cursed the day he was born The first tidings the Barons heard were, that the tyrant, having raised an army of mercenaries, was laying waste the land The sky was red with the blaze of burning towns and corn-fields the people fled to the forests and hills

In despair, the Barons called **Louis of France,** who had married the niece of John, to take the crown; and then was England in peril On the one hand were the horrors of a second conquest and a new French dynasty, on the other, the fury of a savage, who, if successful, would stop at no revenge, however terrible. The hand of God interposed. Louis had landed at Sandwich, and John was marching to meet him, but on the shores of the Wash he saw his money, his jewels, and the records of the kingdom, swept away by the rising tide; and his agitation brought on a fever. Some writers say that he died by poison, others, that a surfeit of peaches and new ale laid him on his death-bed. He died at Newark Castle, and was buried at Worcester.

Oct 19. **1216** A D.

Of John we know nothing good. He was a mean coward, a shameless liar, the most profligate in a profligate age, the most faithless of a faithless race. In person he was tall, though corpulent; and his face was a true picture of his degraded mind.

By his last wife, Isabella, he left three sons—Henry, Richard, and Edmund; and three daughters—Joan, Eleanor, and Isabella.

During this reign London Bridge was finished; letters of credit were first used in England; and the custom of annually electing a Lord Mayor and two Sheriffs of London was begun, Henry Fitzalwyn being the first *Lord* Mayor. The fisheries were now very profitable, the salmon of the Dee and the herrings of the Sandwich shore being especially prized.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

EMPERORS.

					A.D
WILLIAM, ...	began to reign	1165	PHILIP, .	began to reign	1198
ALEXANDER II, .		1214	OTHO IV., ...		1208

FRANCE

PHILIP AUGUSTUS,		1180			

CASTILE

ALPHONSO IX., .		1158	INNOCENT III.,		1198
HENRY I, .		1214	HONORIUS III., ..		1216

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS.

	A.D
Constantinople taken by the Crusaders (Fifth),	1203
Zenghis Khan proclaimed (Asia),	1205
War against Albigenses (France), .	1208–13
The Boy Crusade, .	1212
Battle of Tolosa (Spain), ...	1212

CHAPTER IV

HENRY III.—WINCHESTER.

Born 1207 A D.—Began to reign 1216 A D.—Died 1272 A D.

Henry Crowned
Defeat of Louis (1217 A D.)
De Burgh and De Roches
Fall of De Burgh (1232 A D.)
War with France
Scotland and Wales
Discontent of the Barons
The Mad Parliament (1258 A D.)
Battle of Lewes (1264 A D.)
House of Commons Instituted (1265 A D.)
Battle of Evesham (1265 A D.)
Henry Dies
His Character.—Notes

Louis held London and the southern counties, but the Barons, whose feeling had changed on the death of John, rallied round young Henry, who was at once crowned at Gloucester with a plain golden circlet, for the crown had been lost in the waves of the Wash. All true Englishmen were at the same time commanded to wear round the head for a month a white fillet, in honour of the coronation. The King being only ten years old, the Earl of Pembroke was appointed Regent. The first act of the new reign was to confirm the Great Charter, its sixty one chapters having been reduced to forty two.

Louis did not leave the island without a struggle for the crown, which had been almost in his grasp, but he was forced to abandon the enterprise by a complete defeat sustained at **Lincoln**. At the same time his fleet was destroyed off Calais by Hubert de Burgh, who, causing powdered quicklime to be flung into the air, so that the wind bore it into the eyes of the French, took advantage of the disorder to cut their rigging. **May 19, 1217 A D.**

Pembroke having died in the third year of his regency, the power was divided between Hubert de Burgh and Peter de Roches, Bishop of Winchester, a Poictevin. They did not agree, and Pandulph, the legate, had much trouble in preventing an open quarrel. However, when Henry was declared of age at seventeen, De Burgh became chief favourite, and De Roches, feeling his cause grow weak, took the pilgrim's staff for the Holy Land. **1223 A D.**

At a great council one fifteenth of all movables was granted for an expedition to France, on condition that Henry should ratify the Charter for the third time. The expedition failed to recover Poitou and Guienne, which **1225 A.D.**

Louis had seized; and Henry incurred the charge of having wasted his own time and the people's money in idle revelry. He cast the blame on De Burgh, who speedily fell into disgrace An account of money received during this minister's time of office was demanded he could not give it, and fled to the altar of Boisars Church; whence he was carried, half naked and tied on a horse, to London The King, fearing that this violation of a sanctuary would rouse the anger of the priests, sent him back, but ordered the Sheriff to blockade the building A moat was dug, palisades were raised round the church, and in forty days hunger forced Hubert to yield Transferred from prison to prison, he at length escaped to Wales, and after some time made his peace with the King

Besides the expedition already noticed, Henry, at the urgent entreaty of his mother, who had married her former
1242 lover, the Count of Marche, engaged in a second war
A D with Louis The battles of **Taillebourg** and **Saintes**, though not decisive, inclined the balance in favour of the French King, and truces, often broken, often renewed, led to a peace, by which Henry received Limousin, Perigord, and Querci, as an equivalent for Normandy, Maine, Anjou, and Poitou, still held by Louis.

With Scotland the sword was never drawn during this long reign, although there were many disputes about the three northern English counties Two royal alliances united the sister kingdoms Joan, Henry's eldest sister, was married to Alexander II, and, at a later date, Margaret, the daughter of Henry, to Alexander III The armies of the English King often traversed Wales, but the Welsh princes still held their mountain thrones unconquered

Henry's fondness for the Poictevins, who swarmed around the restored De Roches, and the Provençals, who had flocked into England when their countrywoman, Eleanor, became its Queen, roused the spirit of the nation The Barons revolted under **Simon de Montfort**, Earl of Leicester, the husband of Eleanor, the King's sister. His desertion of his royal brother-in-law, together with the departure for Germany of Richard, Henry's younger brother, who had won laurels in the fourth Crusade, and had just been created King of the Romans, shook the throne, and raised the hopes of those who desired its overthrow.

At Westminster the Barons came to the council in full
1258 armour; and, when they again assembled at Oxford, in
A.D. C what is called the **Mad Parliament**, they appointed a com-

mittee of twenty-four to reform the State. This committee enacted—1. That four knights should come to Parliament to represent the freeholders of every county; 2. That sheriffs should be chosen annually by vote; 3. That accounts of the public money should be given every year, 4 That Parliament should meet three times a year—in February, June, and October. These enactments were called the *Provisions of Oxford*. But reform was delayed by disunion among the Barons, and the King of France, being chosen umpire, gave decision in Henry's favour This kindled the civil war Leicester held London, and, when the great bell of St Paul's rang out, the citizens flocked round his banner with riot, the pillage of foreign merchants, and the murder of unhappy Jews At **Lewes** in Sussex Henry was defeated and taken prisoner Prince Edward gave himself up next day A treaty, called the *Mise of Lewes*, was made for the liberation of the King, but was never fulfilled Henry and his two sons remained in close custody

May 14, **1264** A D.

Early in the following year a Parliament was called by Leicester; to which he summoned representatives from cities and boroughs, in addition to the prelates, barons, and knights of the shire, already constitutionally comprised in the assembly This was the first outline of our modern Parliament, the prelates and barons corresponding to the House of Lords, the others to the **House of Commons**, which accordingly dates from this time

1265 A D.

Prince Edward, having escaped from his guards, met Leicester at **Evesham** in Worcestershire The battle raged long and bloodily The captive King, who had been forced into the field by Leicester, fell slightly wounded, and would have been killed if he had not cried out, "I am Henry of Winchester, the King" Edward knew his voice, and rushed to his aid The body of "Sir Simon the Righteous," as the people called Montfort, who died fighting over his dead son, was mutilated by the victors

Aug 4, **1265** A D.

The crown sat firmly now on the monarch's head, and the civil war being over, the martial Edward joined the Crusade of St. Louis During his son's absence Henry died, worn out by the troubles of a reign—the longest in our annals except that of George III.

In character weak and credulous, Henry has been blamed for cowardice and indolence; but his lot was cast in stormy days, when it would have needed a strong hand to hold the helm of the State. In private life he was gentle and affectionate. He

was of middle size, and a droop of the left eyelid gave a strange expression to his face.

The introduction of the linen manufacture by some Flemings, the use of leaden water-pipes, and of candles instead of wooden torches were among the improvements of this reign A license to dig coal, a mineral whose abundance in Britain has so much advanced our national wealth, was now first granted to the people of Newcastle We may also trace to this reign our gold coinage Science was much benefited by the researches of Roger Bacon, a Franciscan friar of Oxford, whose magnifying glasses and magic lanterns gained for him the reputation of a wizard On the Continent, Paulus, a Venetian, is said to have invented the mariner's compass, the needle being placed between floating straws

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

ALEXANDER II	began to reign 1214	OTHO IV.,	began to reign 1208
ALEXANDER III,	1249	FREDERIC II,	1212
		Interregnum, 23 years,	1250
FRANCE		POPES	
PHILIP AUGUSTUS,	1180	HONORIUS III,	1216
LOUIS VIII,	1223	GREGORY IX,	1227
LOUIS IX (St. Louis),	1226	CELESTINE IV,	1241
PHILIP III,	1270	INNOCENT IV.,	1243
CASTILE		ALEXANDER IV,	1254
HENRY I,	1214	URBAN IV,	1261
FERDINAND III,	1217	CLEMENT IV,	1265
ALPHONSO X.,	1252	GREGORY X,	1271

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

	A.D		A.D
Victories of Zenghis Khan (Asia),	1218–27	Seventh Crusade,	1248–50
Sixth Crusade,	1227–29	End of the Abbaside Caliphs (Asia),	1258
Teutonic Knights invade Prussia,	1228	Latin Empire of Constantinople overthrown by the Greeks,	1261
Inquisition established by Gregory IX.,	1233	Eighth Crusade—Death of St. Louis,	1270
Hansa League formed,	1247		

CHAPTER V.

EDWARD I.—LONGSHANKS.

Born 1239 A.D.—Began to reign 1272 A.D.—Died 1307 A.D.

Edward's Return
Coronation (1274 A.D.)
Conquest of Wales (1282
Scottish Succession
French War
Baliol Deposed (1296 A.D.)
Death of Edward
Character
Constitutional Changes.
Notes

WHILE in the **Holy Land**, Edward was stabbed with a poisoned dagger by an infidel. Tradition ascribes his recovery to the affection of his wife, Eleanor of Castile, who sucked the poison from the wound. His crusading exploits were few and insignificant, and he left Palestine after a stay of eighteen months. In Italy he heard of his father's death, but his homeward journey was delayed by a disturbance in Guienne. Here a tournament, between Edward and the Count of Chalons, ended in a serious affray, in which the English knights were victors. Before passing into England, Edward arranged with the Countess of Flanders a quarrel, which had long interrupted the trade in English wool,—a commodity highly prized by the Flemish cloth-merchants.

The King and Queen were crowned at Westminster two years after Henry's death. Alexander of Scotland was present, and received £5 a day for the expenses of his journey. The great aim of Edward's ambition was to conquer Wales and Scotland, and thus unite under his sway the whole island.

Many English princes had tried to subdue **Wales**, but without success. Among the crags and forests of Snowdon and Plynlimmon, the mountain race baffled the Norman spears and defied pursuit. Merlin had prophesied that, when money was made round, a prince of Wales should be crowned in London. The time had come; a brave prince held Arthur's throne; and Welsh hopes were high. When Edward demanded homage, Llewellyn refused with disdain. But it was the pride that goes before a fall. For five years the English King traversed the land with foreign troops, skilled in mountain warfare; Llewellyn held out bravely; but his death from a lance-wound, received while he was surveying the valley of the Wye,

1282 A.D.

sealed the doom of Welsh independence. In mockery of his hopes his head was sent to London, where, crowned with ivy, it was fixed upon the Tower-gate His brother David held out for a while; but, being delivered up by his own countrymen, he was hanged by order of the conqueror. Edward is charged with a massacre of the Welsh bards at Conway, lest their songs should preserve the spirit of ancient freedom among the people. Upon this story, whether it is true or false, our poet Gray founded his celebrated Ode, called *The Bard* The title "Prince of Wales," borne by the eldest son of the British Sovereign, was first given to the young Edward, who was born at Caernarvon.

The death of Margaret, the "Maid of Norway," confused the succession to the **Scottish Crown.** Thirteen competitors appeared, but the claims of two, John Baliol and Robert Bruce, were superior. These were descendants of David, a younger brother of William the Lion; Baliol being the grandson of the eldest daughter, Bruce the son of the second. Edward claimed a right to interfere, on the ground that William the **1292** Lion, when the captive of Henry II, had acknowledged A D himself a vassal of the English Crown; and that Richard I. had no right to sell the deed of vassalage, since it was not his property, but that of all English Sovereigns. On this pretence to meddle with the affairs of Scotland, Edward appointed Baliol King.

Soon after these events a **naval war** arose between France and England. It sprang from a quarrel among sailors off the Norman Coast. An Englishman having slain a Norman, the Normans seized an English ship and dragged out of it a passenger, whom in revenge they hanged topmast high. The sailors of the Cinque Ports joined in the quarrel, privateers swarmed in the Channel and the Bay of Biscay; and engagements, in which the English were generally victorious, frequently occurred. Edward, as Duke of Aquitaine, was summoned to France; but he refused to appear, and prepared for war. His supplies were derived partly from the plunder of the Jews, and partly from heavy taxes. He raised the wool tax from half a merk to five merks on every sack, and twice he seized and sold all the hides and wool in the stores of the London merchants. The fleet lay at Portsmouth, but the King, when about to embark, was forced to turn by a Welsh rebellion; and, that being crushed, a Scottish revolt claimed his presence.

Baliol, called repeatedly to London to answer for his conduct, found his vassalage so irksome that he renounced his fealty and

rose in arms. But his feeble resistance was soon subdued. *Toom Tabard* (as he was styled in scorn) was ignominiously dethroned at Strath-kathro, near Montrose, whence he was after some time allowed to retire to Normandy. Edward marched through Scotland to Elgin, exacting homage; and, on his departure, left the Earl of Surrey guardian of the land. War soon broke out again; but the story belongs to Scottish history Its heroes were **Wallace**, and **Bruce**, the grandson of Baliol's rival; and it resulted in the independence of Scotland. **1306** A D. Three years before this event Edward recovered by treaty the province of Guienne, of which he had been deprived by the French King.

The news that Bruce had been crowned at Scone roused the old warrior of England, and the last effort of his life was to reach Scotland. He lay long at Carlisle on a bed of sickness, and died at Burgh-on-Sands His last wish was, that his bones should be carried at the head of the army as it marched onward. His first wife, Eleanor of Castile, who died in 1290, left four sons, of whom the eldest was afterwards Edward II , his second, Margaret of France, bore him a daughter and two sons, Edmund and Thomas July 7, **1307** A D

Edward possessed many good qualities He was a brave soldier, a sagacious and successful statesman. But cruelty, revenge, and excessive ambition seem to have been inseparable from the character of the early Plantagenets. His person was tall and majestic.

The chief constitutional changes of this reign were,—1. That no aid or tax was to be levied by the Sovereign without the consent of Parliament, 2. That the Commons began to couple with their grants of money petitions for the redress of their grievances,—a practice which gradually changed into the power of proposing new laws.

The Jews, having drunk the cup of suffering to its bitterest dregs, were banished from the kingdom in 1290 Goldsmiths from Lombardy, who came to take their place as money-lenders and bankers, gave a name to Lombard Street, which has ever since been the favourite resort of money-dealers. Wind-mills and spectacles, paper from the East, and looking-glasses from Venice were now introduced; while the use of coal was forbidden, from the public annoyance caused by the smoke. The regalia of Scotland and the ancient coronation chair were brought to England by Edward, who at the same time destroyed all Scottish records, which might keep alive the spirit of that nation.

The chair, and a stone on which, the legend says, Jacob laid his head at Bethel, were placed in the Abbey of Westminster, completed by Edward in 1285.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

		EMPERORS	A.D
ALEXANDER III., began to reign,	1249	RUDOLF, began to reign	1273
MARGARET,	1285	ADOLPHUS,	1292
Interregnum,	1290	ALBERT,	1298
BALIOL,	1292		
Interregnum,	1296	GREGORY X,	1271
ROBERT I. (BRUCE),	1306	INNOCENT V,	1276
		ADRIAN V.,	1276
		JOHN XXI,	1276
		NICHOLAS III,	1277
PHILIP III.,	1270	MARTIN IV.	1281
PHILIP IV.	1285	HONORIUS IV.,	1285
		NICHOLAS IV.,	1288
		CELESTINE V.,	1294
ALPHONSO X.,	1252	BONIFACE VIII,	1294
SANCHO IV,	1284	BENEDICT XI,	1303
FERDINAND IV.,	1294	CLEMENT V.,	1305

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

	A.D		A.D
Rudolf of Hapsburg, Emperor of Germany,	1273	Acre taken by the Turks—end of the Crusades,	1291
Prussia conquered by the Teutonic Knights,	1281	Battle of Courtrai (Flanders),	1302
The Sicilian Vespers,	1282	Papacy removed to Avignon,	1305
		William Tell defies Austria,	1307

CHAPTER VI.

EDWARD II.—CAERNARVON.

Born 1284 A.D.—Began to reign 1307 A.D.—Died 1327 A.D.

Rule of Gaveston
The Ordainers (1310 A.D.)
Bannockburn (1314 A.D.)
Famine and Plague
The Spensers
Quarrel of the King and Queen
Edward Dethroned (1327 A.D.)
His Murder
His Character
Notes.

THE bones of Edward I were buried at Westminster. The Scottish war was abandoned. So much for the wishes of a dead King. **Piers Gaveston**, a Gascon, the vicious companion of young Edward's boyhood, was recalled from exile, and to him was committed the regency of the kingdom, while Edward sailed to Boulogne to marry Isabella, the beautiful daughter of Philip, King of France. The splendour of Gaveston excited the jealousy of the Barons, the nicknames which he showered on them roused their anger. Twice the weak King banished him, twice he was recalled to his honours, but the confederate nobles, headed by the Earl of Lancaster, seized him at Scarborough Castle, and caused his head to be struck off at Blacklow-hill near Warwick **1312 A.D.**

Before the death of the favourite, a Parliament, sitting fully armed, appointed a council of twenty-eight peers to manage the King's household and to reform the Government. These peers were called *Ordainers*.

Linlithgow, Roxburgh, Edinburgh, and Perth had been taken by Bruce, when, to save Stirling, which was sorely beset, Edward marched northward. Bruce, with 30,000 picked men, met and routed the chivalry of England on the field of **Bannockburn**. Five years later, the English King besieged Berwick, "the key of Scotland," but again he failed, and a truce was made. About the same time Edward Bruce, brother of the Scottish King, landed in Ireland, and at Carrickfergus was crowned King. He held Ulster for two years, when his death in battle at Fagher, near Dundalk, restored the English ascendency. **June 24 1314 A.D.** **1318 A.D.**

The years 1314 and 1315 were darkened by the miseries of famine. Even the royal table was scantily supplied with bread.

The poor fed on roots, horses, and dogs. The breweries were stopped, to prevent the waste of grain. Plague followed the famine. The nobles dismissed crowds of their retainers · these had no resource but robbery. Ruin, pillage, and bloodshed filled the land

Edward's new favourites were the **Spensers**, son and father; who, acting the same part as Gaveston, met a similar fate. It would be useless to detail the story The elder was gibbeted at Bristol; the younger at Hereford

The execution of Lancaster, who was beheaded at Pontefract, had already shown that Gaveston's death rankled in the King's breast But the Lancastrian party still survived, and new events stirred it to more vigorous life. There was an open quarrel between Edward and his Queen. She fled to France; her son followed; Lord Mortimer, an adherent of Lancaster, joined them; and it was not long until the Queen landed at Orwell on the Suffolk coast with a foreign army. The King escaped into Wales, but upon his surrender, it was declared in Parliament that he reigned no longer, and that his son held the sceptre in his stead For eight months the dethroned monarch was removed from castle to castle, until within the walls of **Berkeley** Keep he died by violence. Nothing more is known than that fearful shrieks broke the stillness of one awful night, and on the next morning the citizens of Bristol were called to look on the distorted face of him who had once been King of England. The corpse was privately buried at Gloucester.

Jan 18, 1327 A.D.

Sept. 20, 1327 A.D.

His children were Edward, his successor; John, who died young; Jane, married to David II of Scotland; and Eleanor.

Edward was fickle and indolent. His days were spent in hunting, his nights in revelry, while the government of his kingdom was left to favourites. His figure resembled that of his warlike father.

During this reign earthenware came into use. The interest of money was 45 per cent. Bills of exchange were introduced, and the first commercial treaty was made between England and Venice. Following the example of Philip the Fair, King of France, Edward II. seized the English property of the Knights Templars, and imprisoned many members of the once illustrious Order. They were charged with idolatry, heresy, and profligacy.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

ROBERT I., began to reign	1306	ALPHONSO XI., began to reign	1312
		EMPERORS	
PHILIP IV.,	1285	ALBERT,	1298
LOUIS X.,	1314	HENRY VII.,	1308
PHILIP V.,	1316	LOUIS IV.,	1314
CHARLES IV.,	1322		
		POPES	
CASTILE.		CLEMENT V.,	1305
FERDINAND IV.,	1294	JOHN XXII.,	1316

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

Swiss Republic founded,	1308	Battle of Morgarten (Switzerland),	1315
Knights of St John conquer Rhodes,	1310	Death of Dante (Italy),	1321
The Knights Templars suppressed (France),	1312	Council of Ten at Venice,	1325

CHAPTER VII.

EDWARD III.—WINDSOR

Born 1312 A D.—Began to reign 1327 A D.—Died 1377 A D.

Invasion of the Scots	Nevil's Cross	Death of the Black Prince
Fall of Mortimer (1330 A D.)	Siege of Calais (1347 A D.)	and the King
Scottish War (1333 A.D.)	The Plague	Character
War with France	Battle of Poictiers 1356 A D.	Constitutional Changes
Battle of Creçy (1346 A D.)	Captive Kings	Notes

THE young Edward and the council of regency were but the instruments of Isabella and Mortimer, who held all power.

A Scottish army invaded the northern counties. It was difficult to follow their rapid movements, for they were all cavalry, carrying no food except a bag of oatmeal at every saddle bow. Edward offered knighthood, with £100 a year for life, to him who should discover their route. Thomas Rokeby won the prize, and led the English King to the Wear, on the opposite bank of which lay the foe. But no battle followed. In the dead of the fifth night the Scots retreated towards the Border, and a peace was soon made, in which Edward, by the advice of Mortimer, acknowledged Scotland to be a distinct and independent kingdom. The treaty was cemented by the marriage of Jane, the King's sister, to the Scottish Prince David.

The odium of this peace, the execution of the Earl of Kent, uncle of the King, and the growing manhood of Edward, now eighteen, overthrew the power of Isabella and her favourite. He was seized in Nottingham Castle, and hanged upon the elms of Tyburn. She dragged out the remaining twenty-seven years of her life in her mansion of Risings, where the King paid her a formal visit once a year.

The great Bruce was dead, and his son David was yet a child. Edward Baliol, making a bold push for the throne, which his craven-spirited father had held as a vassal of England, laid siege to Berwick. The Regent moved to save a fortress so
July 19, 1333 A D important, and was met at **Halidon-hill** by the English King, who supported Baliol. There was fought a battle so disastrous to the Scots, that Baliol gained the crown, and the eastern lowland counties south of the Forth were for a time under the sway of Edward.

To unite in his person the crowns of France and of England

was the great aim of Edward's policy. The three sons of Philip IV. had died heirless; and Edward of England and Philip of Valois were rivals for the vacant throne Edward's mother was a daughter of Philip IV : Philip was the nephew of that monarch. The Salic law, which enacted that no female could inherit the French throne, stood in Edward's way, and Philip was elected.

The English King seized all the wool and tin in his kingdom, pawned his crown and his jewels, quartered on his royal shield the golden lilies of France, and sailed to the Continent to assert his rights on the battle-field. Two campaigns were indecisive. A naval victory at **Sluys**, on the Flemish coast, was gained by the English, but they were beaten back from the walls of Tournay, and a truce for a year was made. Again the war was renewed, again it failed But in the seventh year an English army entered Guienne. Edward landed in Normandy with another, and bent his march towards Calais. He passed the Seine and the Somme in the face of French soldiers, and the way to Calais was opened by the victory of **Creçy.**

1338 A.D.

1340 A.D.

The morning of the battle broke with storm and rain, lightning and thunder,—a fitting prelude for a day of blood It was not until five in the afternoon that the cavalry of France under Count Alençon, with a band of Genoese cross-bow men, advanced to attack the English lines. They were met by clouds of cloth-yard shafts from bows of English yew, and their ranks wavered. Still the shower poured on; horses and men rolled on the earth, and the cavalry retired in confusion The men-at-arms now engaged; the second lines advanced,—France and England were locked in a deadly struggle. Edward, who watched the fight from a wind-mill, felt so sure of victory that he refused to send aid to the Prince of Wales, a lad of fifteen, who was sorely pressed in the front of the battle. "No!" said he; "let the boy win his spurs: his shall be the glory of the day" In vain the French King tried to pierce the phalanx of archers who stood between him and his routed horsemen; his bravest knights fell fast around him; the horse he rode was killed,—there was no hope but in flight. Eleven princes, twelve hundred knights, and thirty thousand common soldiers are said to have fallen in the battle and the carnage of the next day. John, the blind King of Bohemia, was among the slain. He was led into the battle by four attendant knights, whose bridles were interlaced with his. His crest and

Aug. 26, 1346 A.D.

motto—three ostrich feathers with the words *Ich dien*, "I serve" —have ever since been borne by the Prince of Wales We are told that cannon of a rude sort were first used at Creçy.

In the same year, but two months later, was fought the battle of **Nevil's Cross.** David of Scotland, having regained
Oct. 17. his throne, invaded England as the ally of France, but he was defeated and made prisoner by Philippa of Hainault, a Queen worthy of her warlike husband

The conqueror at Creçy at once invested **Calais.** He raised no mounds, directed no engines against the walls, but for almost twelve months he ground the garrison with the slow torture of famine, and thus forced them to open their gates
Aug. 4, 1347 A D He placed a colony of his own subjects in the town, which, for more than two centuries afterwards, was a flourishing mart for the exports of England

But the strife of men was now hushed before the breath of the Destroying Angel, for a terrible sickness called the Black Plague, which had swept over Asia and the south of Europe, broke out in France and England The London church-yards were soon filled, throughout the country the dead cattle lay rotting and poisoning the air, labour and trade stood still, the lower classes fell by hundreds in the day, the rich shut themselves in their solitary castles,—wailing and desolation filled every city Many evils followed the pestilence Nearly all the artisans and labourers had perished, for plague is always heaviest on the poor those who had escaped left the country. The crops were often allowed to moulder away for want of money to pay the exorbitant wages of the harvestmen, and the price of food rose fourfold. A popular superstition ascribed this disaster to the long toe-points and curled beards of the men, and to the masculine dress assumed by the belles of the day, and laws to curb extravagance in dress were enacted A set of enthusiasts, too, called Flagellants, came from Hungary, and passed through the country, lashing themselves till the blood ran down their shoulders, that the plague might be stayed. There can be no doubt that the plagues, which from time to time visited England, were rendered more virulent and lasting by the want of cleanliness in the houses, the streets, and the persons of the people. Good ventilation, proper sewerage, wholesome food, and the abundant use of water have banished from our shores the terrible plague, which still lurks in some close and filthy cities of the East, and have much lessened the violence of those epidemic diseases with which God is pleased still to smite the nation.

Philip of France had died, and his son John ruled. The war was renewed in 1355, chiefly under the conduct of the Prince of Wales, called the Black Prince from the colour of his armour. The first campaign was occupied in wasting the provinces round Bordeaux, the second was signalized by the battle of **Poictiers.** The prince had pierced too far into the centre of France, and on his return found an army, seven times as large as his own, between him and Bordeaux. A brave fight was his only resource Fortunately for him the battle-ground was among vineyards, which impeded the French cavalry. As at Crecy, the English archers won the day Protected by the hedges, they poured upon the French ranks shafts which no armour could resist The first and second divisions of the French fell back; the King on foot led on the third, but was beaten to the ground and made prisoner with his young son. Father and son were led to England by the triumphant Edward.

Sept. 19, **1356** A.D.

There were thus two royal captives in England,—David of Scotland, ransomed in 1357, the eleventh year of his imprisonment, and John of France The latter was freed by the **Treaty of Bretigny,** called "The great peace," by which Edward renounced all claim to the French crown, retaining, instead of his ancestral dominions, Poitou, Guienne, and the town of Calais Three millions of golden crowns were to be paid as the ransom of John; but, failing to raise this sum, he returned to his captivity, and died at the Savoy, a palace on the Strand, then a fashionable country suburb of London.

1360 A.D.

The Black Prince ruled in Guienne, but an expedition into Spain, in support of Pedro the Cruel, loaded him with debt and shattered his health. Meeting Du Guesclin, the greatest soldier of France, in battle at **Navarretta** near the Ebro (1367 A.D.), he won a glorious but thankless victory. He was soon obliged to visit England, where he wasted and died. He had married his cousin, Joan of Kent, and left a son named Richard.

From the time that the Black Prince left the French shores, the English cause grew weak. One by one the provinces won at Crecy and Poictiers fell from the now enfeebled grasp of Edward, until, of his once mighty French possessions, Calais, Bordeaux, and Bayonne alone were his. His latter days were sad The murmurs of an unruly Parliament and the death of his son weighed heavily on his soul: his once proud mind was degraded beneath the rule of Alice Perrers, a woman of wit and beauty,

but of bad reputation. The tree still stood, but its blossoms and its leaves had fallen. He died, a year after his son, at Shene near Richmond, and was buried in Westminster Abbey. His family was large, but only four of his children survived him The Black Prince, Lionel of Clarence, John of Lancaster —born at Ghent, and hence called, after an old form of the word, "John of Gaunt"—and Edmund of York were his most distinguished sons

The character of Edward III was good. He was brave, wise, and merciful; and we can pardon him if his ambition to wear the French crown carried him too far Under his rule the hatred, which had long severed Saxon, Norman, and Briton, began to disappear, and from the blended races rose the true British nation. Norman knight, Saxon bowman, and Welsh lancer fought side by side at Creçy and Poictiers, where a common danger and a common glory united them Then, too, the use of Norman-French in the courts of law, in the schools, and in the proceedings of Parliament, began to die out, and the simple manly English tongue to take its place

In this reign the Lords and the Commons were distinctly defined, and began to sit in separate chambers The Commons occupied St Stephen's Chapel, were presided over by a Speaker, and held the power of granting supplies; in return for which they gained from the King many beneficial laws. The *Statute of Treasons* (1351) was the chief enactment of the reign. A check was given to the great evil of *Purveyance*, by which the King's officers seized corn, cattle, forage, horses, carriages, and all necessaries for himself and his train, as he journeyed Edward III extended this system to the seizure of the lower orders for soldiers and sailors, and of merchant vessels for use in war This was the origin of the press-gang of later days.

The abolition of *first-fruits*, a tax by which the Popes received the first year's income from all clergy obtaining new appointments, took place in this reign and to this period are ascribed the institution of the Order of the Garter, and the revival in England of the title "Duke," the Black Prince being styled Duke of Cornwall. The invention of gunpowder, ascribed to Schwartz a monk of Cologne, and the use of fire-arms and cannon, produced a great change in the art of war.

In the later years of Edward, William of Wykeham, Bishop of Winchester, but celebrated in another sphere as the architect of Windsor Castle, held the Great Seal as Lord Chancellor for four years (1367–71).

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

	A.D
SCOTLAND	
ROBERT I., began to reign	1306
DAVID II,	1329
ROBERT II,	1371
FRANCE	
CHARLES IV.,	1322
PHILIP VI,	1328
JOHN II.,	1350
CHARLES V,	1364
CASTILE	
ALPHONSO XI,	1312
PEDRO (the Cruel),	1350
HENRY II, began to reign	1368
EMPERORS	
LOUIS IV.,	1314
CHARLES IV.,	1347
POPES	
JOHN XXII.,	1316
BENEDICT XII,	1334
CLEMENT VI.,	1342
INNOCENT VI,	1352
URBAN V.,	1362
GREGORY XI.,	1370

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS.

	A.D
Reign of Casimir the Great (Poland),	1333–70
Rienzi Tribune at Rome,	1347
The Eight Cantons of Switzerland united,	1352
Faliero beheaded (Venice),	1355
The Golden Bull instituted (Germany),	1356
Turks take a castle in Europe—their first footing,	1356
Battle of Navarretta (Spain),	1367
Return of the Popes to Rome,	1377

CHAPTER VIII.

RICHARD II.—BORDEAUX.

Born 1367 A.D.—Began to reign 1377 A.D.—Dethroned 1399 A.D.

Richard Crowned	The Wonderful Parliament	Fall and Death of Richard.
Tiler's Rebellion (1381 A.D.)	(1388 A.D.)	Character
Scottish War	The Rise of Lollardism	Notes

RICHARD, son of the Black Prince, was crowned in his eleventh year. In honour of the event, London was gay with banners and arches; the merchants of Cheapside erected in the market-place a fountain running wine. During the King's minority the power was vested in twelve councillors, his uncles being excluded.

The first memorable event of the reign was a rising, excited by a **poll-tax** of one shilling on every person above fifteen. It burst forth in Essex and Kent, but spread westward to Winchester, and northward to Scarborough. The leaders were Wat Tiler, and Jack Straw, a priest. In this insurrection we discover traces of the old hostility of the two races,—the Saxons and the Normans,—though the old English cry, "Down with the Normans!" no longer resounds in history. Instead of it, the enmity of the two races appears in the form of a struggle between the rich and the poor,—the motto of the English peasants being

> "When Adam delved and Eve span,
> Who was then a gentleman?"

Swarming in vast numbers to London, they sacked the private dwellings, burned the prisons, and slew many of the honest Flemish clothiers. Richard met them at Mile-end, and granted their demands, which were,—1. That slavery should be abolished; 2. That the rent of good land should be fourpence an acre; 3. That all should have liberty to buy and sell in fairs or markets; 4. That all past offences should be pardoned. The charter was no sooner sealed than the riots began again, and several murders were committed. Next day the King held a conference in Smithfield with Tiler, who was followed by 20,000 men. The rebel leader, happening to lay his hand on his dagger, was cut down from his horse by Walworth, the Lord Mayor, and as he lay on the ground was killed by one of the King's esquires. Richard,

regardless of the frowns and bended bows of the rebels, galloped up to them, crying, "Tiler was a traitor: I myself will be your leader!" This boldness had a great effect on the crowd: their numbers melted away, and the rebellion was over. But the promise of pardon was recalled, and fifteen hundred perished on the gibbet.

France and Scotland in alliance attempted an invasion of England, but met with little success. Richard, in return, penetrated the latter kingdom as far as Aberdeen, re- **1385** ducing to ashes Edinburgh, Dunfermline, Perth, and A.D. Dundee. But in 1388 the battle of **Otterbourne**, between the Douglases and the Percys, ended in the defeat of the English. This battle, better known as Chevy Chase, is celebrated in old English ballads.

Richard, young and inexperienced, trusted much to favourite ministers. But the jealousy of his uncles often interfered with the government, and ultimately one of them, the Duke of Gloucester, was elected head of the council. The **1388** Parliament, called both "Wonderful" and "Merci- A.D. less," put two of the favourites to death, and confiscated the property of the rest. Richard, watching his opportunity, at twenty-two shook himself free from the trammels of guardianship, and for some years ruled with justice and mercy; but he had not the iron will necessary to cope with the fierce and turbulent spirits that surrounded his throne.

The death of Anne of Bohemia in 1394 led to the King's second marriage with Isabella of France, then only eight years old. But an event much more important was the rise of the **Lollards**. They were the followers of John Wycliffe, who in the latter years of Edward III. began to attack the Mendicant Friars. When he was brought before the clergy at St Pauls in 1377, John of Gaunt, an uncle of the King, stood beside and defended him. Expelled from his professorship at Oxford, he retired to Lutterworth in Leicestershire, where he translated the Bible into English, and by his works sowed the first seeds of the Reformation in this land. He died in 1384. His disciples (who took their name of **Lollards** from the old German *lollen*, to sing) presented a *Remonstrance* to the House of Commons in 1395.

The removal of Gloucester, who was murdered mysteriously in the prison of Calais, the repeal of all Acts passed by the "Wonderful Parliament;" and the grant of a life-tax on wool made Richard in his last year an absolute King.

But his fall was at hand. A quarrel arising between the Duke of Norfolk and the Duke of Hereford, son of John of Gaunt, the King banished both—Norfolk for life, Hereford for ten years Norfolk never returned, but Hereford came, as he said, to demand the estates of his dead father, which Richard had seized He landed at Ravenspur in Yorkshire with only twenty followers, but, when he reached London, 60,000 men marched under his banner Richard, who was in Ireland, was delayed for three weeks by bad weather, and, when he arrived at Milford Haven, he found that the crown had fallen from his head. At Flint he became the prisoner of Hereford, and was led Sept 30, with mock respect to London The two Houses met in 1399 Westminster Hall, where stood the empty throne covered A.D. with cloth of gold Solemnly Richard was **deposed**, and the same shouts which greeted his downfall hailed Hereford as King Henry IV of England. Before the second month of 1400 closed, the dethroned King had died in the dungeons of Pontefract, either by starvation or by the axe of an assassin. A legend of Scottish history says that Richard fled to Scotland, lived long on the royal bounty, and died at Stirling He left no heir

The second Richard and the second Edward were much alike in their character, their policy, and their mysterious fate. Richard's ruling passion was the love of display His dress was stiff with gold and gems; his attendants numbered ten thousand. His last two years betrayed a spirit of reckless revenge and a thirst for absolute power, which cost him his life. He was handsome, but feminine His manner was abrupt, his speech impeded.

In this reign the Order of the Bath was instituted, and Windsor Castle was completed, the workmen being obliged, by the odious system of purveyance, to give their services for nothing. Peers were now first created by letters patent; and, for the first time, at the King's coronation a knight cast down his glove, daring any one to dispute the monarch's claim. This chivalrous ceremony, which then had meaning, still lingers, and is duly performed by the royal champion.

A remarkable statute of this reign was the law of **Præmunire**, passed in 1392 it forbade the purchase at Rome or elsewhere of excommunications, bulls, or other instruments, under penalty of forfeiture of property and loss of the King's protection.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

	A.D
SCOTLAND.	
ROBERT II., began to reign	1371
ROBERT III.,	1390
FRANCE	
CHARLES V.,	1364
CHARLES VI., .	1380
HENRY II.,	1368
JOHN I., . .	1379
HENRY III., began to reign	1390
EMPERORS	
CHARLES IV., . . .	1347
WENCESLAS,	1378
POPES	
GREGORY XI., .	1370
URBAN VI.,	1378
BONIFACE IX.,	1389

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

Genoese defeated at Chioggia by the Venetians,	1378	Battle of Nicopolis (Turks defeated Hungarians), .	1396
Battle of Sempach (Switzerland), .	1386	Union of Calmar (Sweden), .	1397
		Timur the Tartar sacks Delhi,	1398

CHAPTER IX.

SCOTLAND AND IRELAND DURING THE FIRST SEVEN PLANTAGENET REIGNS.

From 1153 A.D. to 1370 A.D.—217 Years.—8 Scottish Sovereigns.

	A.D
MALCOLM IV. (grandson of David I.),	began to reign 1153
WILLIAM I. (brother),	1165
ALEXANDER II. (son),	1214
ALEXANDER III (son),	1249
MARGARET (grand-daughter),	1286
JOHN BALIOL (descendant of David I.),	1292
SIR WILLIAM WALLACE (Guardian),	1297
ROBERT BRUCE (descendant of David I.),	1306
DAVID II. (son),	1329–1371

Cession of Northern Counties	William Wallace	Nevil's Cross
William the Lion	His Betrayal and Death	Confusion in Ireland
Disputed Succession	Bannockburn	Edward Bruce
		The Anglo Irish

MALCOLM IV, grandson of David I, succeeded His father was that Prince Henry who so narrowly escaped from the field of Northallerton This King was called "the Maiden," either from his girlish features or his timid nature Influenced by Henry II, he yielded to England all right over Northumberland and Cumberland Chief of Malcolm's achievements was the subjugation of Galloway The lord of that wild region was the leader of a treacherous band, who surrounded Perth with the object of seizing the young King. The prompt action of Malcolm foiled their plot: and as a reprisal he penetrated and subdued Galloway He died at Jedburgh in 1165 A.D.

William I., Malcolm's brother, then ascended the throne. He received the name of Lion, perhaps because he was the first to exchange the dragon on the royal shield of Scotland for a lion rampant While attempting to recover the lost territories of Northumberland and Cumberland, he was made prisoner at Alnwick by English knights, who, riding forward through a mist, surprised the royal party tilting in a meadow (1174 A.D.) Borne through England with his feet tied under the belly of his horse, he was carried over to the Castle of Falaise in France. After an imprisonment of six months he obtained his freedom by

taking an oath of allegiance to Henry II., and agreeing to hold Scotland as a fief of the English crown. This claim to the lordship of Scotland was sold for 10,000 merks by Richard Cœur de Lion.

William the Lion had a quarrel with the Pope regarding the see of St. Andrews. The clergy nominated John Scott to the vacancy: the King desired to confer it on his chaplain Hugh. Supporting the former, the Pope laid Scotland under an Interdict, but his successor wisely arranged the affair amicably by yielding to William

This monarch died in 1214, having reigned forty-nine years. His was the longest reign in Scottish history.

Alexander II., son of William, was the next King. He was chiefly occupied in quelling insurrections among the Danes of Caithness, the Highland Celts, and the wild Scots of Galloway. His reign seems to have been one of those periods of steady advancement and prosperity, that have little or no history He countenanced the English Barons, who wrung Magna Charta from John at Runnymead.

Alexander III. (Tamer of the Ravens) succeeded his father. He was then a child of eight, and at the tender age of ten was married at York to Margaret, daughter of Henry III. of England. His minority was troubled with the broils of factions contending for the custody of his person. The leading event of his reign was his successful resistance of a great Norwegian invasion. The Norsemen of the Hebrides were so formidable that Alexander sent a fleet and an army to subdue them; but they sought the aid of Haco, King of Norway, who entered the Firth of Clyde with 160 ships. A storm drove many of these ashore; and, when the Norsemen landed to rescue the vessels, Alexander assailed them at **Largs**, and after a day of storm and battle drove the invaders to their ships. Haco reached the Orkneys only to die of grief. By this victory the Western Isles were united to the Scottish crown; but Orkney and Shetland still remained under the sway of the Norwegian sceptre. Some time later, Margaret, daughter of Alexander, was married to Eric, King of Norway. **1263** A.D.

Alexander III. was the Alfred of Scotland. By limiting the number of their retainers, he repressed the power of his nobles; and, to secure the pure administration of justice, he divided his kingdom into four districts, through which he passed every year. Ship-building and the exportation of salt-fish were among the chief sources of commercial wealth. In the prime of life, while

riding along the shore on a dark night, he fell over a rock near Kinghorn, and was taken up dead This happened in 1286

The succession now rested in **Margaret**—daughter of Eric, King of Norway, and the Scottish Princess, Margaret Edward I, who had lately revived the claim of his ancestor Henry II to the lordship of Scotland, proposed a marriage between his son, afterwards Edward II, and the Maid of Norway, as young Margaret was called, but in 1290, aged only eight, this princess died at Orkney on her way to Scotland

Contest—Then began that struggle for the crown, which laid Scotland for many years under the English yoke Robert Bruce and John Baliol were the rivals, both tracing descent from David I Bruce was the son of Isabella, second daughter of David, Earl of Huntingdon, brother to William the Lion Baliol was grandson of Margaret, eldest daughter of the same noble. (*See Genealogical Trees on page* 112)

Edward I, meeting the Scottish lords at Berwick, decided in favour of **John Baliol**, who was placed on the throne as a vassal of England But so many indignities were heaped on the vassal King by his Lord Paramount, that the timid man, called to Westminster to answer in person every petty complaint that reached Edward from Scotland, was at last goaded to revolt.

Edward wished for nothing more After filling Berwick with slaughter, he defeated the Scottish army at Dunbar, where, owing to a mistake—repeated at a subsequent battle—they abandoned their position on the hills All the great castles then yielded and in the churchyard of Strath-kathro near Montrose the crown and the sceptre were plucked from the brow and hand of degraded Baliol, who was sent to a cell in the Tower of London (1296 A D)

The Earl of Surrey was appointed Guardian, Hugh de Cressingham, Treasurer, and William Ormesby, Justiciary of the kingless land And, in order to humble the national spirit, Edward destroyed historical documents, hoarded in the charter-chests of the monasteries, and carried to London that rough red block of stone, called *Lia Fail*, on which the Scottish Kings had been wont to sit during their coronation at Scone.

But a deliverer was at hand For eight years (1297 to 1305) **William Wallace** nobly maintained the cause of Scotland. He was the second son of Sir Malcolm Wallace of Ellerslie near Paisley While he was visiting his wife at Lanark, an Englishman began to jeer at Wallace for wearing a handsome green dress; and, when a mob had gathered, one of the band struck the

sheath of the hero's sword He killed the Southron, and was forced to flee into the woods. The English murdered his wife; and that night he burst into the governor's house, and cleft his head in two. A band of his countrymen gathered round him, and he began, with great success, to storm the castles held by English garrisons. Surrey and Cressingham moved with a large force to crush the daring Scot when he was besieging Dundee. Wallace took post near Stirling, where a narrow wooden bridge spanned the Forth His troops lined the north bank of the river; but the rising grounds concealed their full number. When Surrey saw the bridge, he halted, but at length, overcome by the jeers of Wallace and the reproaches of Cressingham, he gave the order to cross When half the English army had crossed the bridge, Wallace charged their scattered ranks, and a complete victory rewarded his generalship **1297** A.D. In a few weeks not a Scottish fortress was in the hands of the English, and a Scottish army ravaged the counties north of the Humber without hindrance Wallace was then elected Governor of Scotland.

Edward, hurrying from Flanders, raised a force exceeding 80,000 men, and marched to Scotland He found the southern counties all laid waste, and was about to lead his starving forces back over the Border, when, by the treachery of two Scottish lords, he heard that Wallace lay in Falkirk Wood. In spite of two broken ribs, caused by a kick from his horse as he slept on Linlithgow Moor, Edward headed his troops in person. The Scottish horse deserted the standard of Wallace, but his circles of spearmen stood firm until the English arrows so broke their strength that they were forced to yield to the shock of the mailed knights. For some years longer Wallace held out among the mountains of his native land, but in 1305, basely betrayed near Glasgow by a false friend, Sir John Menteith, he was sent in irons to London, where he was hanged, beheaded, and quartered **1298** A.D.

And now arose the second bright star in Scotland's history. **Robert Bruce**, Earl of Carrick, and grandson of that Bruce who had contended with Baliol, claimed the crown. His rival was the Red Comyn of Badenoch, who, however, made a secret agreement to take Bruce's lands, and assist him to secure the crown. This compact Comyn treacherously made known to Edward, who resolved to seize Bruce, but the Earl escaped from London. Meeting the Red Comyn in the Greyfriars' Church at Dumfries, Bruce taxed him with his treachery, and upon his denial struck

him down on the altar-steps with a dagger wound. Sir Roger Kirkpatrick, crying, "I mak siccar" ("I will make sure"), ran in, and killed the wounded knight This crime injured the cause of Bruce, but after some time he was crowned at Scone (1306) A defeat at Methven, inflicted by Pembroke, obliged Bruce to spend the winter of 1306 in Rathlin, an island off the Irish coast But, next year, the Scottish King was victorious at Loudon Hill The death of Edward I saved Scotland's freedom The war lingered for seven years, Bruce still holding the crown, and expelling the English garrisons, until Stirling Castle alone remained in possession of the Southron And this stood in great peril of surrender

Such a crisis stung Edward II into action With 100,000 men he crossed the Border Bruce could muster scarcely 40,000 troops. The armies met at **Bannockburn** near Stirling. On the evening before the great day, Bruce, mounted on a small pony, and armed only with a battle-axe, slew an English knight, Henry de Bohun, who attacked him in front of the lines.

June 24, 1314 A.D. Before the battle began, the Scots knelt to pray. On thundered the English cavalry, sure of victory, but they soon retreated in wild dismay, for the ground was full of pits, armed with sharp stakes and covered with hurdles. Then poured in a close and deadly flight of arrows from 50,000 English bows No instant was to be lost, for the Scots were falling fast. Bruce, with his light cavalry, drove the archers back, and, with a rapid charge of the men of Argyll and the Isles, shook the English ranks. Just then, a body of 20,000 men rushed down from the hill close by To the fearful eyes of the English, this was a new Scottish army; but it was only a band of camp-followers, eager to seize the plunder of the vanquished host The English broke into headlong rout, and the victory of Bruce was decisive On that day Bannockburn became one of Scotland's proudest names.

Edward in 1319 made a vain attempt to retake Berwick, which had been captured by Bruce. We find the independence of Scotland and the rights of her King acknowledged by an English Parliament, held at York in 1328 One year later, King Robert Bruce died, leaving a solemn charge with Lord Douglas to bury his heart in Jerusalem. Douglas, faithful to his promise, sailed for the Holy Land; but on the Spanish plains near Gibraltar he died in battle with the Moors. When he saw that death was certain, he flung the silver casket, inclosing the heart of Bruce, far into the Moorish ranks and cried,

"Forward, gallant heart, as thou wert wont; Douglas will follow thee or die!" He was found dead, with the casket clasped to his breast The heart of Bruce was carried back to Scotland, and buried in Melrose Abbey

David II. was only six years old when his father died His minority was spent chiefly in France Randolph and Murray held the regency in succession. The leading event of the minority was an attempt of the English King, Edward III, to seat Edward Baliol on the Scottish throne. Landing at Burntisland with a force, Baliol marched into the country, and defeated the Scots at Dupplin Moor by the Earn This victory gave him the crown (1332 A D), for which he did homage to the English monarch, yielding up to him the Border counties Having soon flung aside this usurper, the Scots met the English at Halidon Hill beside Berwick, but, rashly attacking a force strongly posted on a hill, they were signally defeated (1333 A D.)

When Edward III was engaged in his French war, David led an army into England. But Queen Philippa, marching northward, met him at Nevil's Cross (1346 A D), where he was not only beaten but made prisoner. He obtained his freedom after a captivity of eleven years, by promising a ransom of enormous amount To escape payment of this, he attempted to make the English King his heir, but the spirit of the Scottish people would not permit the degrading compact. During David's reign the Black Death ravaged Scotland

This unworthy son of a great sire died at Edinburgh in 1371. leaving no child,—a circumstance which opened the way for the succession of the Stuart line.

IRISH HISTORY FROM 1066 A D. TO 1400 A D.

Civil Wars.—When Brian fell, Malachy, whom indeed that great scourge of the Danes had deprived of a throne, was restored to the royal seat His death plunged the island into civil war, which did not slacken until Turlogh, a contemporary of William the Conqueror, secured the crown. A synod of the clergy, assembled at Kells in 1152 by the Papal Legate, acknowledged the supremacy of the see of Rome.

Macmorrogh.—Pope Adrian IV., an Englishman, who had won the tiara through the influence of Henry II., granted to the English monarch a Bull, permitting him to take possession of Ireland, which, as a Christianized island, was regarded as the property of the pontiff. Accordingly when Dermot Macmorrogh,

the deposed King of Leinster, entered the palace at Aquitaine in France, Henry readily gave him leave to seek aid from the subjects of England. Dermot, who had been expelled by Roderic O'Connor because he had carried off the wife of O'Rourke, lord of Breffni, secured the assistance of Richard le Clare, Earl of Pembroke, surnamed Strongbow, having promised that the English Earl should become his successor if Leinster was recovered

Fitzstephen was the first to invade Ireland. With 40 knights, 60 mailed soldiers, and 300 archers, he landed in the estuary of the Bannow. Wexford submitted He defeated the Prince of Ossory, and Roderic O'Connor was advancing with an army, when, upon the mediation of the clergy, Dermot was restored to his throne, upon condition that the invaders should be sent home

May 1169 A.D.

But **Fitzgerald** then crossed the sea with knights and archers, and soon after him came **Strongbow**, who had received a vague consent from Henry Leaving Milford Haven with 1200 men, the Earl landed near Waterford, which he reduced (Sept 1170). His marriage with Eva, Dermot's daughter, soon followed. But Strongbow was besieged in Dublin by a great host of Irish, aided by a Norse fleet from the Isle of Man. From this peril a brilliant sally saved him. So sudden was the attack on the Irish camp that Roderic, the besieging King, had scarcely time to escape from the bath in which he was surprised. Henry II then crossed the sea to dwell for a winter (1171–2) in a wicker palace at Dublin, where he received homage from every quarter of the island except the north

John, afterwards King of England, was sent over at the age of twelve to rule Ireland, but the insolence of his attendants, who mocked the Irish chieftains, and plucked their beards, when they came to pay homage, kindled a war Under De Courcy, a later ruler, Ulster was assailed, but with slight success

Ireland, troubled by the feuds of De Lacy and De Courcy, was visited by King John in person; English law was established within the *Pale*—that is, the portions (one-third of the country, or the maritime parts of the east and south) acknowledging English authority. The Castle of Dublin was founded in this reign.

Henry III. attempted to establish Magna Charta in Ireland. During his reign the country, now reduced to a miserable condition, was convulsed by a struggle against the English, in which O'Neill of Tyrone aided the Prince of Connaught to maintain his independence. The wretchedness of the land was increased by

the strife of rival barons in the reign of Edward I., when the De Burghs and the Fitzgeralds contended fiercely within the Pale The Irish were forced to pay heavily in money for the protection of the English laws · except by gold and silver there was no way of averting the iron gauntlet of the English barons, who displayed a brutal tyranny towards the natives, and a savage jealousy of each other

Encouraged by his celebrated brother Robert, who desired to sever Ireland from England, **Edward Bruce** invaded Ulster in 1315 at the head of 6000 men The Irish flocked to his banner. At Coleraine he defeated De Burgh, Earl of Ulster, and, penetrating into Meath, won a second battle at Kells over Butler, the Lord-Justice. Robert Bruce came to his aid, but there was not enough of food for both. The English barons, now beginning to stir, made their first move into Connaught, of which Feidlim the King supported Bruce Feidlim's defeat and death at Athenree destroyed all hope of a restored Irish monarchy. Turning aside from Dublin, owing to the bold front presented by its citizens, Edward Bruce ravaged Munster, but was forced by want of food and the approach of an army to make for Ulster again. But at Fagher near Dundalk an English army under Sir John Bermingham came up with him. Edward rashly gave battle with tired and hungry soldiers, and after a scene of carnage was found dead under the body of an English knight King Robert Bruce, who had been advancing to his aid, returned to Scotland at once.

Under **Edward III.** the woes of Ireland increased. The parcelling out of the country into *palatinates*, under the control of great nobles, who made war on one another regardless of the Deputy, was a fruitful source of evil, and, when engaged in quelling the insurgent Irish, the soldiers of these rulers were allowed to live at free quarters on the inhabitants.

About this time an Act was passed, displacing all holders of office in Ireland whose property lay exclusively in the island, and substituting for them persons of English birth A bitter feud arose between the descendants of the first English colonists and the newly imported men of English birth. The English by blood hated the English by birth, and allied themselves with the native Irish. This added a new element of discord.

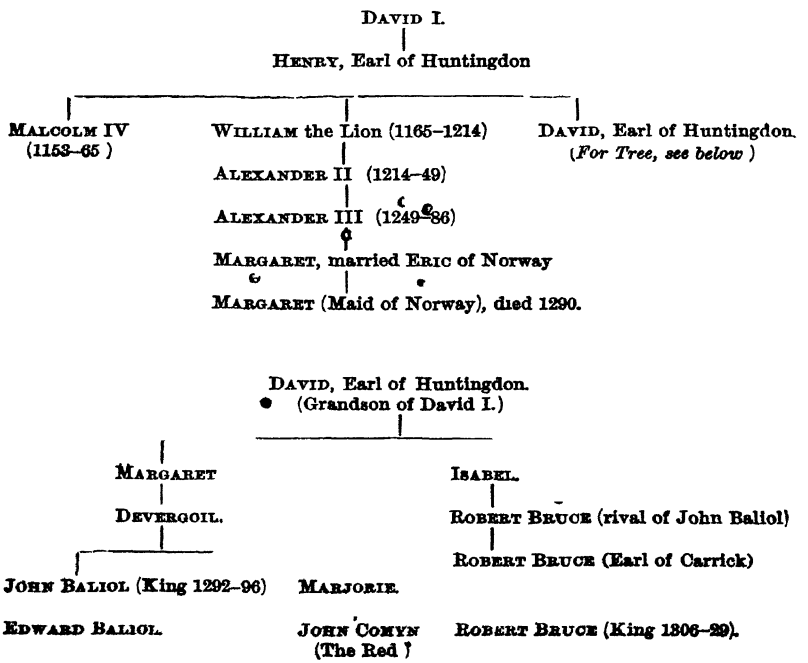
Lionel of Clarence, a son of Edward III., aggravated this feeling by banishing all but men of English birth from his vice-regal court in Ireland. A severe Act, called the **Statute of Kilkenny**, cut asunder the last links that might have bound the

native Irish slenderly to their conquerors It declared marriage with the Irish to be treasonable in an English subject, imprisonment and loss of lands awaited such as adopted the Irish dress, language, or names; and Englishmen were punished who allowed the cattle of Irishmen to graze on their fields, who admitted Irishmen into religious houses, or encouraged the Irish bards.

In the reign of Edward III. the power of the English law extended over only four counties—Meath, Louth, Dublin, and Carlow—which remained of the twelve counties forming the Pale under John.

Twice **Richard II.** led his army into Ireland, and the province of Leinster was reduced, by the presence of armed men, to a condition of comparative peace for a time; but during the second invasion the English King experienced considerable difficulty in forcing his way from Waterford to Dublin. From this expedition Richard returned to England to find himself discrowned.

GENEALOGY OF SCOTTISH KINGS.



CHAPTER X

SOCIAL CONDITION OF THE PEOPLE UNDER THE PLANTAGENETS PROPER

Houses and Furniture
Merchants, Soldiers, Labourers
Dress
Sports
Education
Language

THE Feudal System was in its prime when Cœur de Lion reigned its decay may be dated from the time that the Commons first sat in Parliament the Wars of the Roses laid its crumbling framework in ruins.

Food, &c.—Gradually the higher classes became more refined The use of spices in cookery gave new relish to their food glass windows, earthen vessels, coal fires, and candle-light added to the comfort of their homes. The use of tiles instead of thatch improved their dwellings The style of church architecture belonging to this period has been called the Decorated Gothic Pointed arches and profuse ornament are the distinctive features of the style, of which Melrose Abbey and Exeter Cathedral may be cited as specimens But furniture was still scanty A decent farm-house could boast of little more than one or two beds, a few seats, a set of fire-irons, a brass pot, with a dish and a cup of the same metal.

People, &c.—The leading merchants dealt in wool Even the Kings did not disdain to trade in fleeces. The Conqueror at Crecy, one of the bravest and best of them, was called in derision by his French rival, "The royal wool-merchant." The army was composed of four classes · 1 The men-at-arms, comprising knights, esquires, and their followers. These were heavy cavalry. 2. The hoblers, who were light cavalry, mounted on inferior horses, and were engaged chiefly in the Scottish wars. 3. The archers, whose skill gained some of the greatest victories of the period. Their bows were of two kinds,—long bows to discharge shafts, and cross-bows for bolts or quarrels. 4 The footmen, armed with spears, and wearing skull-caps, quilted coats, and iron gloves. Some idea of the value of money in these days may be gathered from the rate of wages. Haymakers got a penny a-day; labourers, three halfpence; carpenters, twopence; and masons, threepence. None were allowed to work out of their own neighbourhood, except the men of Staffordshire, Derbyshire,

Lancashire, and those from the marches of Scotland and Wales, who helped to reap the English harvest. Agriculture was a favourite employment of the clergy: we read of even Becket and his monks tossing hay, and binding sheaves in the fields. Many of the improvements of the time in gardening were owing to the monks.

Dress.—The dress of Edward of Windsor's court may be taken as a specimen of the fashion prevailing during the period The exquisites wore a coat, half blue, half white, with deep sleeves; trousers reaching scarcely to the knee, stockings of different colours; and shoes with toes so long that they were fastened with golden chains to the girdle Their beards were long and curled; their hair was tied in a tail behind; while a close hood of silk, embroidered with strange figures of animals and buttoned under the chin, inclosed the head. The most striking part of the ladies' dress at this time was a towering head-dress like a mitre, some two feet high, from which floated a whole rainbow of gay ribands. Their trains were long, their tunics were of many colours. They wore two daggers in a golden belt, and rode to the tournament and the forest on steeds of fiery spirit.

Sports.—The tournament was still the first of sports · but there were also tilting at the ring, when knights strove at full horse-speed to carry off on the point of a levelled lance a suspended ring; and tilting at a wooden figure, called a Quintain, which, swinging on a pivot, bore with outstretched arm a wooden sword. He who struck fairly in the centre was untouched; but, if the lance struck too much on one side, the awkward tilter caught a sound blow from the wooden sword as he rode past the whirling image. Horse-racing and bull-baiting were sports in which high and low took equal interest but the great pastime of the lower classes was archery, which they were bound by royal proclamation to practise on Sundays and holidays after Divine service; upon which occasions other sports, such as quoits, cock-fighting, foot-ball, hand-ball, were forbidden.

Learning.—In an age when "might was the only right," and the qualities most prized were personal strength and skill in arms, it is not strange that education, according to our notions of it, was neglected. War and woodcraft were all that the great cared to know. They neither read nor wrote; or, if they *did* read, it was, as has been humorously said, "by spelling all the small words and skipping all the large ones." The clergy alone were learned; but their knowledge was confined within a narrow circle. Theology was their favourite study; but glimmerings of other sciences

began to appear in the cloisters They represented all the peaceful professions They were the lawyers, the physicians, and the teachers of the day. Every monastery had its *scriptorium*, or writing-room, where manuscripts, of which every page was bordered with a beautiful design in gold and bright colours, were copied by the patient monks The books thus produced were very costly, as much as £40 being paid for a copy of the Bible.

Literature.—The Anglo-Saxon tongue, modified by the changes of the Conquest, became Semi-Saxon, a form which lasted till the time of Henry III From Henry III to Edward III was the Period of Old English The great law, which governs all such transitions of an old form of speech into a newer one, is,—"As the language advances, its grammatical terminations drop off, and their place is supplied by auxiliary words" As the language grows with the nation, with the nation also it gradually changes. Their history is inseparable It was not until the time of Edward III that England began to recover from the shock of the Norman Conquest Then the English mind awoke from the lethargy of bondage, and our literature had its birth. English prose and English poetry alike sprang to life. Inspired by Italian song, Geoffrey Chaucer wrote his *Canterbury Tales*, about the same time appeared the works of John Wycliffe, who, as Chaucer is called the father of English verse, may justly be styled the father of English prose. These writers inaugurated the Period of Middle English, which lasted till the reign of Elizabeth began.

LEADING AUTHORS OF THE PERIOD—(1154–1399).

SEMI SAXON

LAYAMON, a priest of Areley Regis in Worcestershire—wrote a rhyming *Chronicle of Britain* about 1200

OLD ENGLISH

ROBERT OF GLOUCESTER, (1230–1285)—wrote a *Chronicle of England* and *Lives and Legends of the English Saints*

ROBERT MANNING, of Brunne or Bourne in Lincolnshire—author of a rhyming *Chronicle of Britain*.

MIDDLE ENGLISH

JOHN GOWER, (1325–1408)—poet—wrote *Confessio Amantis*, and other works

GEOFFREY CHAUCER, (1328–1400)—first great English poet—lived at the courts of Edward III. and Richard II.—chief work, *The Canterbury Tales*.

JOHN MANDEVILLE, (1301–1372)—born at St Albans—wrote *Travels* in the East in English, French, and Latin.

ROBERT or **WILLIAM LONGLANDE**—born in Shropshire about 1300—Fellow of Oriel College, Oxford—author of *Vision of Piers Plowman*, a satire on the clergy

JOHN WYCLIFFE, (1324–1384)—a native of Yorkshire—Professor of Divinity, Baliol College, Oxford—translator of the *Bible into English*—earliest English Reformer

JOHN BARBOUR, Archdeacon of Aberdeen—wrote about 1376 a rhyming chronicle called *The Acts of Robert Bruce*

LEADING DATES OF THE PERIOD—(1154–1399).

GENERAL EVENTS

	A.D	
Becket murdered,	1170	Hen. II
Interdict,	1208–1214	John
Baliol King of Scotland,	1292	Ed. I.
Execution of Wallace,	1305	—
Robert Bruce crowned,	1306	—

CONSTITUTIONAL CHANGES

Council of Clarendon,	1164	Hen. II
Magna Charta,	1215	John
Provisions of Oxford,	1258	Hen. III
House of Commons founded,	1265	—
Ordainers,	1310	Ed II
Statute of Treasons,	1351	Ed. III.
Wonderful Parliament,	1388	Rich. II
Statute of Praemunire,	1392	—

WARS, BATTLES, TREATIES

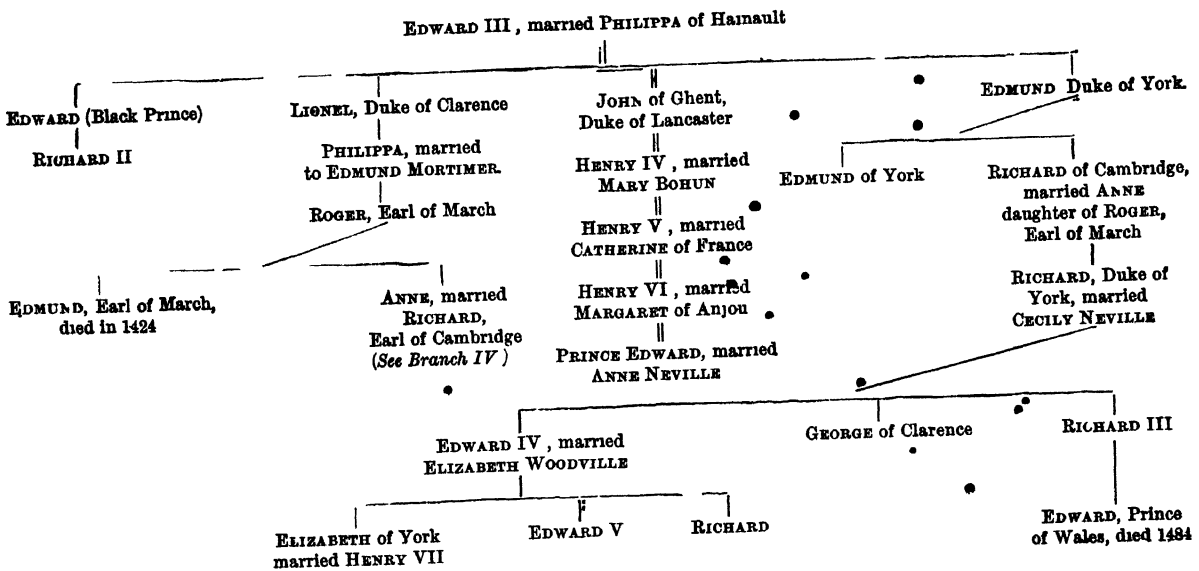
Third Crusade,	1190–92	Rich. I.
Battle of Bouvines,	1214	John.
— Lincoln,	1217	Hen. III.
Battle of Lewes,	1264	Hen III.
— Evesham,	1265	—
— Stirling,	1297	Ed. I.
— Bannockburn,	1314	Ed II
— Halidon-hill,	1333	Ed. III.
French war begins,	1337	—
Battle of Sluys,	1340	—
— Crecy,	1346	—
— Nevil's Cross,		
— Poictiers,	1356	
Treaty of Bretigny,	1360	—
Battle of Navarretta,	1367	—
Tiler's rebellion,	1381	Rich II
Battle of Otterbourne,	1388	—

CHANGES OF DOMINION

Ireland invaded,	1169–72	Hen. II.
Loss of Normandy,	1204	John.
Wales Conquered,	1282	Ed. I
Calais taken,	1347	Ed. III.
Poitou and Guienne acquired,	1360	—
These provinces lost,	1375	—

GENEALOGICAL TREE

CONNECTING THE PLANTAGENETS PROPER WITH THE HOUSES OF YORK AND LANCASTER



The double line marks the direct descent of the House of Lancaster, the dotted line that of the House of York, but the intermarriage of the second and fourth branches gave colour to the Yorkist claims

HOUSE OF LANCASTER.

	A.D.
HENRY IV (son of John of Gaunt),	1399
HENRY V. (son),	1413
HENRY VI. (son),	1422–1461

CHAPTER I

HENRY IV.—BOLINGBROKE

Born 1367 A.D.—Began to reign 1399 A.D.—Died 1413 A.D.

Henry Succeeds	Glendower	Death of Henry
Scottish War (1402 A.D.)	The Percys (1403 A.D.)	Character
Plots	France	Power of the Commons
	The Prince of Wales	Notes

THE representative of the **House of Lancaster** now sat on the throne. He detained in close custody the young Edmund, Earl of March, who, being descended from an elder branch of the royal Plantagenets, was, according to our law of inheritance, King by right. It was not, however, until a later period that the law of primogeniture became the leading principle of succession to the English throne.

A Scottish war was the first undertaking of the new King. The old hostility of the Border Lords, Douglas and Percy, flamed out anew. On Nesbit Moor and at Homildon (or Humbleton) Hill near Wooler, the Scots suffered severe defeats.

1402 A.D.

Several insurrections shook the power of Henry. There was a common report that Richard was living and in Scotland. The Earl of March, too, lived; and the King's title was defective. Upon grounds like these plots were built up, but none succeeded.

Throughout the entire reign a Welshman named **Owen Glendower** maintained his independence among the hills. He had been educated in the law-schools of London, and had served as an esquire at the court of Richard II; but on his return to Wales,

where his superior learning gained for him the reputation of a wizard, a part of his estate was seized by Lord Grey of Ruthyn, a near friend of the King; and his anger drove him to revolt.

But Henry's greatest enemies were the Percys, father and son. The father was Earl of Northumberland; the son, from his dashing and fiery spirit, was named **Hotspur**. It is uncertain why they drew the sword against the monarch whom they had helped to place on the throne. Perhaps the cause may be found in Henry's refusal to ransom from the Welsh Sir Edmund Mortimer, a kinsman of Hotspur. Glendower and the Scots joined the Percys The King met them at **Shrewsbury**. The battle was long and bloody, but was decided in favour of Henry by the death of Hotspur Northumberland, who had been detained from the field by illness, submitted at once, and was pardoned; but revolting again, he led a wandering life for many years in Scotland and Wales, and was at last slain near Tadcaster in Yorkshire (1408 A.D.).

1403 A.D.

With France a dispute arose about the jewels and the dowry of the widowed Isabella; which, according to agreement, should have been returned on her husband's death. The English King met the demand by a counter-claim for the ransom of John, who had been captured at Poictiers. For some time there was no open declaration of war, but the French nobles were allowed to hurl insulting challenges at Henry, and even to ravage his coasts in their privateers. Two events, however, gave Henry the ascendency in Scotland and in France. James, the eldest surviving son of the Scottish King, when on his way to the schools of France, being driven by a storm on the English coast, was captured, and was imprisoned at Pevensey The murder of the Duke of Orleans kindled in France a civil war between the adherents of the houses of Orleans and Burgundy, called respectively the Armagnacs and Bourguignons. Henry, becoming in turn the ally of each, regained the sovereignty of Aquitaine, Poitou, and Angouleme.

Henry's declining years were vexed by the vicious conduct of his **eldest son**; who, however, sometimes showed gleams of a better nature. Once, when Chief-Justice Gascoigne had sentenced to imprisonment a riotous companion of the Prince, the royal youth drew his sword on the judge; who, nothing daunted, sent him too to the King's Bench; thus vindicating the power of the laws even over the royal line. The Prince submitted with a good grace, and bore no malice against Gascoigne, whom he afterwards treated with much kindness. Again: hearing that some

unguarded words had excited a suspicion that he aimed at the crown, this Prince entered his father's closet, and, casting himself at the royal feet, held out a dagger, demanding death rather than disgrace.

Fits of epilepsy wore out the strength of Henry at a comparatively early age The last seized him at Westminster, and he was buried at Canterbury He was married twice, first to Mary Bohun, daughter of the Earl of Hereford, then to Jane of Navarre Jane had no children; Mary's were Henry—afterwards King, Thomas Duke of Clarence, John Duke of Bedford, Humphrey Duke of Gloucester, Blanche, and Philippa.

Henry IV. was daring, watchful, active He well understood the temper of the nation and the Parliament Some idea of his difficult position may be gathered from the fact, that in the first Parliament of his reign forty gauntlets of defiance were cast on the floor, while "liar" and "traitor" were common words of debate He was of middle size, and in his last years his face was disfigured by an eruption, which the superstition of the time ascribed to the judgment of Heaven for the execution of Scroop, Archbishop of York, an adherent of the rebel Percys

Step by step the **Commons** extended their power They confirmed the privilege by which they and their servants were free from arrest or imprisonment They secured the right of presenting their petitions by word of mouth, instead of writing them The addresses from the Speaker's chair took a bolder tone They established their claim to vote supplies of money, to determine the particular object of the sums voted, and to inquire into the expenditure

During this reign occurred the first execution for religious opinions The victim was the Rev **William Sawtre**, chaplain of St. Oswith's in London Condemned for preaching heresy after the tenets of the Lollards, this priest, the first English martyr on the Protestant side, was unfrocked and burned at the stake in Smithfield (1401 A D).

The earliest mention of cannon in England occurs in the narrative of the siege of Berwick by Henry in 1405, in which we are told that a shot from a great gun shattered one of the towers so much that the gates were thrown open by the alarmed garrison. An important constitutional change may be noted in this reign. The insecurity of the King's position made him so dependent on Parliament that he agreed to a clause depriving him of the right to raise aids without the assent of Lords and Commons.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

			EMPERORS		A.D.
ROBERT III,	began to reign	1390	WENCESLAS,	began to reign	1378
JAMES I,		1406	RUPERT,		1400
			SIGISMUND,		1410
	FRANCE				
CHARLES VI (Well-beloved),		1380			
			BONIFACE, IX,		1389
			INNOCENT VII,		1404
	CASTILE		GREGORY XII.,		1406
HENRY III,		1390	ALEXANDER V.,		1409
JOHN II.,		1406	JOHN XXIII,		1410

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

	A.D.
John Huss preaches in Bohemia,	1400
Timur defeats Bajazet at Angora (Asia),	1402
Contest for the Regency in France,	1404
Duke of Orleans murdered in France,	1407
Battle of Tannenberg (Prussia),	1410

CHAPTER II

HENRY V.—MONMOUTH.

Born 1388 A D.—Began to reign 1413.—Died 1422 A D.

Henry Reforms
Sir John Oldcastle (1414–17 A D.)
A French War
Battle of Agincourt (1415 A D.)
Henry Regent of France (1420 A D.)
Glorious Position
Death and Character
The Commons
Notes

THE riotous Prince Hal was suddenly transformed into the brave and spirited King Henry V. His earliest act was to discard his old companions, and to call around him the wisest of the land, conspicuous among whom was Sir William Gascoigne. He set free the Earl of March. He restored the Percy estates to the exiled son of Hotspur.

Early in his reign the sect of the **Lollards**, by their efforts for religious reform, drew upon themselves the royal anger. Chief among them was Sir John Oldcastle, or the Lord of Cobham. He had been one of the Prince's former intimates, and some have considered him the original of Shakspere's Falstaff; but repenting of his follies, he amended his life, and made his castle of Cooling in Kent the central mission-station of Lollardism. Arundel, the primate, summoned him, but he refused to appear. Hence he was borne to the dungeons of the Tower by the soldiers of Henry; who, seeking to please the clergy, proclaimed the heresy, as it was called, a crime of the blackest dye. Escaping, he called his followers together in St Giles's Fields; but the vigilance of the King, who burst upon their meeting at the dead of night, scattered the Lollards. The leader fled, but many of those who were taken were doomed to death; and, three years afterwards, Oldcastle, who had left his hiding-place to join the invading Scots, was burned as a felon and a heretic.

The title "King of France" was claimed until lately by our monarchs; but Henry of Monmouth was the only English sovereign who really deserved the name. Taking advantage of the civil war which still convulsed France, he revived the claim of Edward III., and demanded that the Treaty of Bretigny should be fulfilled. For answer there came a load of tennis-balls—a gentle hint from the Dauphin that the English King was fitter for such sports than for war. Stung by the insult, Henry pre-

pared for battle The Duke of Bedford was appointed Regent; the royal jewels were pawned; loans were exacted; and the Barons were called to arms. But delay arose from the discovery of a plot in favour of the Earl of March. The King's nearest friends, Lord Scroop, who shared his bed, and his cousin Richard of Cambridge, suffered death for the treason

A fleet now bore Henry with 30,000 soldiers from Southampton to the mouth of the Seine. He took **Harfleur**, a strong fortress on the right bank of the river, in five weeks; and then, with an army reduced to one-half its former number by wounds and sickness, he formed the daring resolve of reaching Calais by the same route as that by which the troops of Edward III. had marched to victory He found the bridges of the Somme broken down, and the fords defended by lines of sharp stakes; but, after a delay of some days, an unguarded point was discovered high up the stream, near St. Quentin. Crossing rapidly, he moved straight upon Calais, while the Constable of France awaited his approach before the village of **Agincourt**. It was a dark and rainy night, when the wearied English saw before them the red light of the French watch-fires.

One hundred thousand French lay there. The odds were seven to one. But Crecy was not far distant, and the memory of former glory stirred in every English heart. The invincible archers led the way in the early morning. With a cheer they rushed on, bearing in addition to their usual weapons long sharp stakes. These they fixed obliquely before them, so that a wall of wooden pikes met the French charge, and, thus protected, they poured in their close and deadly arrows Then slinging their bows behind them, they burst with the men-at-arms upon the breaking ranks; and the first, the second, and the third divisions gave way in succession. Henry fought in the thickest of the battle; and, though mace and sabre were levelled at his life more than once, he escaped unhurt. The confusion caused by the tactics of the English King, who had secretly sent a body of archers to lie in ambush on the French flank, and another detachment to set the barns of Hesdin on fire, completed the rout The Constable, the flower of the French nobility, and eight thousand knights and esquires fell in three hours on this fatal day the victors lost only sixteen hundred men.

Oct. 25, **1415** A.D.

Without following up this terrible blow, Henry crossed to Dover. No welcome seemed too warm for him. The people rushed into the sea to meet his ship, his journey to London was

through shouting crowds and beneath waving banners The Parliament, unasked, voted him large sums, and granted to him for life a tax on wool and leather.

The war was renewed in 1417 Slowly but surely the King of England extended his conquests, until the fall of
1419 **Rouen,** after a siege of six months, laid Normandy at
A D. his feet His path to the French throne was opened by an unforeseen occurrence The Duke of Burgundy was foully murdered; and his faction, thirsting for revenge, threw their whole weight on Henry's side. He was thus enabled to dictate terms of peace to the French monarch, and the
1420 **Treaty of Troyes** was framed. Its leading conditions
A D were three —1 That Henry should receive in marriage the French princess Catherine, 2 That he should be Regent during the life of the imbecile Charles; 3 That he should succeed to the French throne on the death of that prince.

A short visit to England with his bride was suddenly clouded by sad news, which recalled him to France The Dauphin, reinforced by a large body of Scots, under the Earl of Buchan, routed the English troops at Beaujé, and slew the Duke of Clarence, Henry's brother In hopes that the Scots would not fight against their own King, the English Sovereign led into battle the captive James The hope was vain; but, ever invincible, Henry drove his foe into Bourges, and paralyzed all hostile efforts by the capture of Meaux, a stronghold near Paris.

He had now climbed the highest steeps of his ambition. He was master of Northern France to the banks of the Loire; no leaf had fallen from the laurels won at Agincourt and Rouen, a son had been lately born to inherit his honours and his name; when Paris was gay at Whitsuntide, the splendour of the Louvre, where the Regent held his court, far outshone the petty pomp of the real King. But in the very noon of his glory he died His disease has been variously named; one thing is sure, that the debaucheries of his early life sowed the seeds of his early death. In gorgeous state his remains were borne to England, and were there laid in the vaults of Westminster. He left one son, afterwards Henry VI His widow, Catherine, married Owen Tudor, a gentleman of Wales; and thus was founded the line of royal Tudors

Henry was a warrior and a statesman. His arrogance often wounded, but his even justice atoned with his people for many faults. He was the darling of the soldiers whom he led so often to victory. In figure he was tall and slight.

The Commons gained during this reign an important point—that no law should have force unless it had received their assent. At no time were supplies of money more freely given, for the King had so dazzled his people by the lustre of his victories that they never denied his requests. Taxes were granted for life, and on the security of these he was allowed to raise heavy loans. The yearly revenue was nearly £56,000, but the expenditure often passed that sum. Calais alone is said to have cost close upon £20,000 a year

The foundation of the British Navy may be ascribed to this reign, for Henry caused a ship of considerable size to be built for him at Bayonne The fleets already spoken of were either merchant vessels or ships hired from foreign states Richard Whittington, a merchant of London, was during this reign three times Lord Mayor He made a great fortune by the voyages of a ship called the *Cat*—a name which has given rise to the well-known nursery tale

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

JAMES I.,	began to reign 1406	**SIGISMUND,**	began to reign 1410
FRANCE		POPES	
CHARLES VI.,	1380	**JOHN XXIII.**	1410
		MARTIN V,	1417
JOHN II,	1406		

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

	A D
Huss burned at Constance,	**1415**
Portuguese take Ceuta,	**—**
Council of Constance closes,	**1418**
John Duke of Burgundy murdered.	**1419**

CHAPTER III.

HENRY VI.—WINDSOR.

Born 1421 A.D.—Began to reign 1422 A.D.—Dethroned 1461 A.D.

The Regency	Loss of French Dominions.	The Compromise
Bedford in France	Richard of York	Margaret in the Field
Siege of Orleans (1428 A.D.)	Death of Suffolk (1450 A.D.)	Henry Deposed (1461 A.D.)
Joan of Arc Burned (1431 A.D.)	Cade's Rebellion (1450 A.D.)	Power of Parliament
	Wars of the Roses begin (1455 A.D.)	The Revenue
		Notes

THE successor to the throne was an infant nine months old. A council of twenty managed the affairs of the kingdom. The **Duke of Bedford** was made Regent of France, while Humphrey of Gloucester bore the title, "Protector of the Realm of England."

After the death of the French King, which followed close upon that of Henry V., the Dauphin assumed the title, Charles VII. The Loire now separated the English provinces from the French. Bedford nobly maintained the honour of England in the battle of Crevant (1423), while Salisbury won laurels at Verneuil (1424). But Gloucester, having married Jacqueline of Bavaria, claimed a large part of the Netherlands as her inheritance. The Duke of Brabant, also claiming to be the husband of this princess, opposed the demand of Gloucester, and was supported by his cousin, the great Duke of Burgundy, who thus became estranged from the English alliance. At home, too, Gloucester quarrelled with Beaufort, Bishop of Winchester, a haughty and powerful prelate. So Bedford's hands grew weak.

In 1428 it was resolved in council, contrary, we are told, to the will of the Regent, that the English army should cross the Loire, and ravage the provinces which owned the sway of Charles. As a preparatory step, **Orleans** was besieged. While the English troops lay before the walls, a skirmish took place which has received a strange name,—"*The battle of herrings.*" At Roverai an English knight beat back a body of French cavalry, who attacked him as he was escorting a train of provision-cars to the camp of the besiegers. Salted herrings formed a large part of the stores, and hence arose the name. This success, and the energy with which the English carried on the siege, dispirited the French, who now looked upon Orleans as lost.

But suddenly there came a change. **Joan of Arc**, the servant in a village inn of Lorraine, sought the presence of the French King at Chinon, and there proclaimed that **1429** she had a mission from Heaven to drive the English A.D. from Orleans and to lead Charles to Rheims. Either believing her story or desirous to work upon the superstition of his soldiers, the monarch paid her every honour. Clad in white armour, she rode on a black steed to the rescue of Orleans. She passed the English lines, when the sentinels had deserted their posts during a thunderstorm; took the fortress before the gate; and drove the English from before the walls, thus winning her name,—"The Maid of Orleans" In two months more Charles was crowned at Rheims, and her mission was fulfilled. But soon began a reaction. In a sortie from the town of Compèigne, she was pulled from her horse by an archer, and made prisoner She was sold to the English Regent; and **1431** after twelve months' imprisonment was burned as a witch A.D. in the market-place of Rouen.

The young Henry was now crowned at Westminster and at Paris,—a step considered necessary after the coronation of Charles at Rheims. But the crowning at Paris was an empty form. A congress was held at **Arras** in 1435, at which the clergy strove in vain to bring about peace Then two great blows shook the English power in France the great Bedford died; and the Duke of Burgundy made peace and alliance with France The loss of Paris speedily followed, and in 1444 the English were glad to make a truce for two years.

In the following year Henry married the beautiful and high-spirited Margaret, daughter of Renè, Duke of Anjou and Maine. These provinces were now, by a reversal of the ordinary custom, restored to the father of the bride. They were called the keys of Normandy; and deep murmurs resounded through England when they were severed from the crown. French troops poured across the Loire; and soon Rouen and all Normandy submitted From the north of France Charles turned to the south. Gate after gate of the Gascon cities opened to his triumphant march, until in 1451 the banner of England waved nowhere, from the Strait of Dover to the Pyrenees, except on the citadel of Calais. Thus ended the dream of an English empire in France. At Chatillon in the Gironde (1453 A.D.) fell John Talbot, the last of the great English soldiers, nurtured by this Hundred Years' War in France—a war which in its earlier decades had been waged by the Black Prince and John Chandos, the foe of Du Guesclin.

Early in this reign (1423) James of Scotland was released, and returned to his own country. He brought with him to Scotland, to share his throne, an English wife, Jane Beaufort, daughter of the Earl of Somerset.

The great pillars of the House of Lancaster were the Duke of **Gloucester**, and his uncle, Cardinal **Beaufort**. Though rivals for political fame, they united in upholding the throne of Henry, who, as he grew to manhood, gave every day clearer signs of a weak intellect But they died within six weeks of each other; and then visions of a throne began to rise before the mind of **Richard, Duke of York**, sprung by his mother from the second son, by his father from the fifth son, of Edward III.

The removal of a faithful minister from Henry's councils gave new colour to the hopes of York. The loss of the French provinces had excited great discontent throughout England, and the Duke of Suffolk, by whose advice Anjou and Maine had been restored to Renè, was marked as an object of special hatred He was impeached, was banished, and had left Ipswich with the hope of being allowed to land at Calais But a war-ship bore down upon his frail craft, and he was summoned on board "the Nicholas of the Tower," where the captain received him with the words, "Welcome, traitor!" Two days afterwards, a boat reached the side, carrying a headsman, a block, and a rusty sword, and on this strange scaffold Suffolk died

This was a heavy blow to Henry. The rumour of preparations for a terrible revenge reached the men of Kent, who had furnished the ships to seize Suffolk. They were the descendants of those who had followed Tiler to Smithfield. They rose in arms under **Jack Cade**, who took the name of Mortimer, a cousin of York. The King's troops were defeated
1450 at Sevenoaks, and their leader was slain. Cade, arraying
A.D. himself in the armour of the fallen knight, marched to London, upon which Henry withdrew to Kenilworth. Unresisted the rebels entered the city, Cade cutting the ropes of the drawbridge with his sword as he passed. For two days they held the city, but on the third the pillage of some houses roused the Londoners, who seized the bridge and held it gallantly for six hours, when a short truce was made. The Bishop of Winchester took advantage of this interval to offer a free pardon to all who should return to their homes at once; and Cade was left with scarcely a follower. A second time he tried to raise a force, but failed; and fleeing, he was discovered in a garden, near Lewes in Sussex, by Iden, an esquire, who slew him, and re-

ceived 1000 merks as the price of his head. There is a strong probability that York was at the bottom of this plot, and that, if successful, the rebels would have placed him on the throne.

A cloud, at first no bigger than a man's hand, had long been darkening round the throne of the Lancasters It now burst in civil war. The **Duke of York** had matured his plans, and the time was ripe for action It is true, a son had been born to Henry amid general rejoicings, but the anger of the people had been excited by the bestowal of the King's favour on Somerset, whom they blamed for the loss of Normandy, and by the miserable failure of an attempt to recover Guienne At this critical point the King was seized with a fit of insanity, and the reins of government were thrown into the hands of York with the title of Protector. This, however, did not last long, for the recovery of Henry deprived York of his office But the Duke, having tasted the sweets of power, took up arms The famous **Wars of the Roses** began They were so called from the badges of the rival armies the ensign of the House of York being a white, that of the House of Lancaster a red rose. The chief supporters of York were the Earl of Salisbury, and his son, the Earl of Warwick **1455** A.D

This great contest was essentially a war of nobles, in which the mass of the people took but a slight part. It shattered Feudalism in England.

The first battle was fought at **St. Albans** in 1455, when the Lancastrians were defeated, and the King was made prisoner. He was, however, soon released, and a pretended reconciliation followed But, the war being renewed, the Yorkists were again victorious, at Bloreheath in Staffordshire (1459) At Northampton Henry was a second time made captive, by the Yorkists under Warwick (1460)

Now, for the first time, York, hitherto struggling for the Protectorship, publicly laid claim to the throne, as the representative of the eldest surviving branch of the royal family. The question was debated in Parliament, and an arrangement was made that Henry should reign during his life, and that the crown should then pass to York and his heirs.

This roused a mother's heart. Margaret of Anjou, burning with anger that her son Edward, Prince of Wales, should be thus shut out from the throne, called the Lancastrian lords to her side, and routed the Yorkists at **Wakefield Green** in Yorkshire; where, for the first time, the Red Rose triumphed (1460). Here the Duke of York was slain; and, according to the bar-

barous fashion of the time, his head, adorned with a paper crown, was fixed upon the walls of York.

This loss, instead of dispiriting, roused the Yorkists to fiercer efforts. Edward, Earl of March, the son of the fallen Duke, succeeded to the title and the claims of his father He was a brave and handsome youth of nineteen, and the hearts of the people leaned to him. At Mortimer's Cross he swept the royalist troops before him (1461) A few days later, Margaret, defeating Warwick in the second battle of St Albans (1461), released the King from confinement But, when Edward marched to London, he was received by the citizens with shouts of joy A great council having declared that Henry had forfeited the throne when he joined the army of the Queen, the young Duke was at once proclaimed King, with the title of Edward IV.

March 4, 1461 A.D

Henry of Windsor was weak in body and in mind His long minority formed in him the habit of trusting much to his councillors, and their faults were often visited upon him. But in his private character he was meek and inoffensive, more ready to forgive than to punish, and easily led, for the sake of peace, to betray his own interest.

The House of Lords still formed the governing body, and by their advice the King was ruled in all great transactions They appointed Regents, and it was by their vote that Henry was dethroned

The Commons gave *assent*, not advice They granted the supplies, however; and in this lay their real strength. They were not very regular in their attendance on the Parliaments, and it seems that the pay they received from those whom they represented, and the freedom from arrest or punishment which their office conferred, were the strongest motives to the discharge of their public duty. In this reign the franchise, or right of voting, was limited to those owning a freehold worth, at the least, forty shillings a year.

The revenue of the crown had lately very much decreased. Henry IV. drew from France a great part of his income. Henry VI. found his French dominions narrowed to a single town, and his direct income fallen as low as £5000 a year. Owing to the immense expense of the French wars, and other causes, the debts of Henry were far above £300,000

In this reign Eton College, and King's College, Cambridge, were founded (1440), and the establishment of Glasgow University followed in 1451. Halley's comet was first observed in 1456,

and the manufacture of glass in England was begun in 1457,—two facts which show that Science and Art were progressing, though slowly, amid the storms of civil war On the Continent might be seen the gradual development of an art destined to possess an influence such as no art had ever yet possessed In 1442 Faust printed from wooden blocks In 1444 Guttenberg cut types from metal In 1450 the roller press was invented In 1452 the types of Schoeffer, cast in hollow moulds, came into use

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

SCOTLAND	A D	EMPERORS	A D
JAMES I, began to reign	1406	SIGISMUND, began to reign	1410
JAMES II,	1437	ALBERT II,	1438
JAMES III	1460	FREDERIC IV,	1440
FRANCE		POPES	
CHARLES VII,	1422	MARTIN V,	1417
		EUGENIUS IV,	1431
CASTILE		NICHOLAS V,	1447
JOHN II,	1406	CALIXTUS III,	1455
HENRY IV.,	1454	PIUS II,	1458

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

Cosmo de Medici rules in Florence,	1429	Constantinople taken by the Turks,	1453
Guttenberg prints at Strasbourg,	1444	Council of Three at Venice,	1454
Constantine Palaeologus succeeds (Byzantine),	1445	John Huniades defeats the Turks at Belgrade,	1455
Francis Sforza takes Milan,	1450		

HOUSE OF YORK.

	A D
EDWARD IV (son of Richard of York),	began to reign 1461
EDWARD V (son),	1483
RICHARD III (uncle),	1483–1485

CHAPTER I.

EDWARD IV

Born 1443 A D —Began to reign 1461 A D.—Died 1483 A.D.

Wars of the Roses continued
Edward's Quarrel with Warwick (1466 A.D.)
Exile of Warwick
Edward flees (1470 A D.)
Battle of Barnet (1471 A D.)
War with France
Treaty of Pecquigny (1475 A D.)
The King's Revenue
Death of Clarence (1478 A D.
Death of Edward
Character
Notes

THE **Wars of the Roses** were not yet ended The north remained faithful to Henry, London and the south had declared for Edward. But a victory, won at Towton in Yorkshire, amid falling snow (1461), established the kingdom of Edward Margaret sailed to France in hope of aid. Again the shattered ranks of the Lancastrians were arrayed, but at Hedgeley Moor and Hexham (1464) they were again broken Henry fled from the field of Hexham to the wilds of Lancashire, where for more than a year he eluded pursuit, but, taken at last, he was thrown into the Tower of London.

In 1464 Edward married privately the Lady Elizabeth Grey, daughter of a knight named Woodville When she was crowned as Queen, her brothers and sisters received in marriage the richest and noblest wards of the court. This incensed the nobles, especially the haughty Nevilles, of which family the Earl of Warwick was head. Warwick, known in history as the "**King-maker**," was minister-in-chief, and governor of Calais, then the richest office in the King's gift, and could not tamely brook the loss of his influence with Edward The breach, growing daily wider, ended in an open quarrel. Warwick, aided by the Duke

of Clarence, brother of the King, raised an insurrection among the men of York and Lincoln But the Earl and the Duke were forced to flee to the court of Louis XI, where they met Margaret of Anjou Warwick and Margaret had now a common cause, and they united to dethrone Edward The union was cemented by the marriage of Prince Edward, Margaret's son, to Anne, daughter of Warwick

After an absence of five months, the King-maker landed without resistance near Plymouth (Sept 13, 1470) The hopes of the Lancastrians revived, when 6000 men cast the white roses from their bonnets and cried, "God bless King Harry!" Edward fled to Holland, and Henry was brought from his cell to wear the crown once more

The Duke of Burgundy was married to a sister of Edward, and from him the exiled Prince received men, money, and ships, and landed in a few months at Ravenspur in Yorkshire When Edward reached Nottingham, 60,000 men wore the white rose His brother Clarence, long an adherent of War- **1471** wick, rejoined the Yorkist ranks, and the army was soon A D within the walls of London The decisive battle was fought on Easter Sunday 1471 at **Barnet,** where every petal of the Red Rose was scattered from the stem Warwick, his brother Montague, every leader of the Lancastrians died on the bloody field. On that very day Margaret and her son landed at Plymouth

Three weeks later, their army was cut to pieces, and they were made prisoners at Tewkesbury in Gloucestershire They were brought before the victor, and the queenly heart of Margaret, which had borne her bravely through so many perils and disasters, now sank beneath the heaviest blow of all, when she saw the face of her darling son bruised by the iron glove of Edward, and his young life-blood streaming on the daggers of Clarence and Gloucester After five years in English prisons, Margaret was ransomed by Louis of France she survived Tewkesbury eleven years Henry died, probably by violence, in the Tower on the day of Edward's triumphal entry into London

A fierce dispute arose between the brothers of the King Clarence, as the husband of Warwick's eldest daughter, claimed the estates of the King-maker, Gloucester, who now sought out Anne, another daughter, the widow of the murdered Prince Edward, and married her, demanded a share. With difficulty both were satisfied, a division being made, by which the aged Countess was left penniless.

Edward then formed the project of a **French war,** reviving the

old claim to the French crown He had strong motives to such a war He was kinsman by marriage to the Duke of Burgundy, a deadly foe of France He wished to employ in foreign war those who might be inclined to plot against his government, or to stir up the embers of the civil strife In addition to the supplies voted by Parliament, he invented a new and most elastic method of raising money Calling rich subjects before him, he demanded presents of money, which they dared not refuse. These sums he called *benevolences* After much delay he invaded France, but found his allies unable to give him any aid In the midst of his uncertainty, there came a welcome mes-
1475 sage from Louis proposing peace and alliance At
A D **Pecquigny** a bridge was thrown across the Somme. Midway the monarchs met, and, shaking hands through a wooden grating, swore to observe the terms of the treaty The chief conditions were —1 That Louis should pay 75,000 crowns at once, and an annuity of 50,000 to Edward during his life; 2 That a truce and free trade should exist between the countries for seven years; 3 That the Dauphin should marry Elizabeth, Edward's eldest daughter. French gold, lavishly scattered among the English courtiers, bought this Treaty of Pecquigny, and many nobles were not ashamed openly to avow themselves the pensioners of Louis

The people of England murmured loudly at the disgraceful end of a war for which they had been heavily taxed, and a slight breath would have kindled an insurrection Edward had the sense to see this, and his future policy was directed to the support of his throne without drawing from the purses of his people By levying the customs more rigorously, by extorting tenths from the clergy, by taking back lately-bestowed grants, by exacting all feudal fines, and by trading in his own name to the Mediterranean ports, he was able, not only to meet all expenses, but to grow rich amid a tolerably contented people

The death of the Duke of **Clarence** left a dark stain on the memory of Edward. The brothers had been long estranged, chiefly because Edward prevented the marriage of Clarence with Mary, the rich heiress of Burgundy, and, when Thomas Burdett, a friend of the Duke, was executed on a charge of practising "the black art," Clarence loudly blamed the King. In revenge, Edward summoned him before the House of Lords He received sentence, and in ten days he died within the Tower. A common report said that he was drowned in a butt of Malmsey, a wine of which he was fond.

It was a strange feature of Edward's **foreign policy** that he endeavoured to make marriages for his children from the day of their birth; but none of his schemes succeeded His favourite project, the marriage agreed upon at the Treaty of Pecquigny, was frustrated shortly before his death by the marriage of the Dauphin to Margaret of Burgundy Some days later, a slight illness working on his frame, which was worn out by debauchery, suddenly assumed a fatal character. He died in his forty-first year, and was buried at Windsor. His children were Edward, now aged twelve, Richard, Duke of York; and five daughters, of whom the eldest, Elizabeth, was afterwards married to Henry VII

The love of vicious pleasures was the chief quality of Edward's character His lustful passions brought shame on many an honest household Gorgeous dresses, rich meats, costly wines were among his highest enjoyments He waded to a throne in blood, and he maintained it by a spy system, so perfect that nothing could happen around his court or in the most distant county without his knowledge He was handsome and accomplished, but his sensual indulgences rendered him, in his later life, bloated and unwieldy

The petitions of the Parliament were now framed into what we still call "Acts of Parliament,"—a plan intended to prevent the King from making any change in the law before he gave his assent to its passing.

The reign of Edward IV. is distinguished by the introduction of **Printing** into England While the Wars of the Roses were raging, a retainer of the Duchess of Burgundy—William Caxton by name, a retired mercer—amused himself at Bruges by turning a French work—*Recueil des Histoires de Troye*—into English. Having afterwards gone to Cologne, he learned to print; and the first-fruit of his newly-gained skill was this work, published at Ghent in 1471 Three years later, Caxton set up a printing-press in the Almonry of Westminster (1474 A.D.); and there for seventeen years the grey-haired man wrought at his new occupation, sending forth sixty-five volumes from the decayed Scriptorium. The first work printed on English soil was *The Game and Playe of the Chesse* Scotland received the boon of the Printing-press in 1508, Ireland, in 1551. Posts were now first used in England on the road from London to Scotland. Horsemen were placed twenty miles apart, and the despatches were thus passed on at the rate of one hundred miles a day.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

JAMES III., began to reign 1460

FRANCE

LOUIS XI, 1461

CASTILE

HENRY IV, 1454
FERDINAND and ISABELLA, 1474

FREDERIC IV, began to reign 1440

POPES

PIUS II, 1458
PAUL II, 1464
SIXTUS IV, 1471

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

Cosmo de Medici dies, 1464
War of the Public Good (France), 1465
Battles of Granson and Morat 1476
Mary of Burgundy marries Maximilian of Austria, 1477
Lorenzo the Magnificent rules Florence 1478
Castile and Aragon united, 1479
Martin Luther born, 1483

CHAPTER II

EDWARD V

Born 1471 A.D —Began to reign April 9,—Dethroned June 25, 1483.

Edward and his Brother	Richard of Gloucester
Hastings and Rivers	King

EDWARD V, the eldest son of the late King, reigned only eleven weeks During that time Richard Duke of Gloucester, who had assumed the title of **Protector,** and pretended the purest loyalty towards his royal nephew, was engaged in clearing his own way to the throne The boy-King was seized by the Dukes of Gloucester and Buckingham at Stony Stratford near Northampton, led with the mockery of public honours to London, and cast into the Tower The Queen-mother was forced to part also with her second son, Richard, Duke of York, who was committed to the same prison, and there the two boys, busied with their sports, lived all unconscious of the dark web which was slowly infolding them

Gloucester's next step was to remove those nobles who were faithful to the cause of the young Edward Of these Earl Rivers and Lord Hastings were most prominent The former, a maternal uncle of the King, was distinguished as the patron of Caxton, who printed for him the translation of a French book called *The Dictes, or Sayinges of Philosophers* Lord Hastings, arrested in the council-room as the accomplice of the Queen and Jane Shore, whom Gloucester charged with having wasted his body by means of witchcraft, was at once beheaded on a block of wood that lay in the chapel-yard of the Tower On the same day Lord Rivers was executed with Lord Richard Grey and Sir Thomas Vaughan at Pontefract Castle, into which he had been thrown when Edward was made captive.

When this was done, the **Duke of Buckingham,** a prince of royal blood, met the citizens of London at Guildhall, and in an earnest speech declared Richard of Gloucester the true heir to the throne A sermon at St. Paul's Cross had already prepared their minds for this announcement The citizens kept silence, but a few hirelings cried out "Long live King Richard!" and on the next day Buckingham, in the name of the English people, presented a petition entreating Gloucester to wear the crown. With feigned reluctance the Protector consented, and Edward's reign was at an end.

CHAPTER III

RICHARD III.—CROOKBACK.

Born 1452 A D.—Began to reign 1483 A D.—Died 1485 A D.

Richard's Progress
Story of the Young Princes (1483 A D.)
Henry of Richmond
Buckingham in Rebellion (1483 A D.)
Bosworth field (1485 A D.)
Character

A FORTNIGHT later, at Westminster, Richard was **crowned** with his wife Anne, the daughter of the King-maker. By raising the rank of many nobles, and by lavish distribution of the dead King's hoards, he gathered round his throne a band of adherents. Then making a progress through the country, for the purpose, as he said, of securing the peace of England and the pure administration of justice, he was crowned again at York.

But before he reached York a terrible crime is said to have been committed. Sir Thomas More tells us that James Tyrrel, Richard's master of the horse, was sent from Warwick to London with a royal letter charging Brackenbury, the governor of the Tower, to give up the keys of the fortress for twenty four hours. The dethroned **Edward** and his brother were confined there, and in the dead of night Forrest and Dighton, hired assassins, smothered the sleeping boys with the bed-clothes, showed the corpses to Tyrrel, and then buried them at the foot of the staircase. This story rests on the confession of the murderers. It is right to say, however, that strong, though not conclusive, arguments have been advanced to clear the memory of Richard from this foul blot, and the story must ever remain a disputed point in English history.

A strong party against Richard had always existed, and now that the sons of Edward IV had disappeared, they proposed a union of the Houses of York and Lancaster, by a marriage between Henry, **Earl of Richmond**, and Elizabeth of York. Henry was the great-great-grandson of John of Gaunt through his mother, Margaret Beaufort; Elizabeth was the eldest daughter of Edward IV.

Dangers grew thick around the usurper. **Buckingham**, changed at once into a deadly foe, declared in favour of Henry. A rising took place (October 18, 1483). But a storm beat back the Earl of Richmond from the shores of Devon as he was about

to land Buckingham, who had drawn sword at Brecknock, was hindered by a flood in the Severn from joining his confederates, and his army of Welshmen melted away Fleeing in disguise to the house of a retainer named Banaster, he was betrayed—some say by his host—and was beheaded in the market-place of Salisbury.

The marriage of Henry and Elizabeth was dreaded by the King, and he sought to unite the Princess to his own son, but the scheme was thwarted by the sudden death of the destined bridegroom He had then some idea of marrying his niece himself, and incurred the suspicion of having poisoned his wife, Anne, for this purpose But Ratcliffe and Catesby, his chief counsellors, dissuaded him from the unnatural union, and there was no resource left him but to await the result of that struggle which was fast approaching He did so with a troubled heart.

His gold had long been spent, and now that his power seemed tottering, the fidelity of his adherents began to fail Lord Stanley, whose estates were the richest in Lancashire and Cheshire, was the object of his greatest suspicion His nights were sleepless, and we are told that he often started from his bed with wild cries of horror Soon came the news that Henry with 3000 troops was at the mouth of the Seine Richard took his station at Nottingham, as the centre of the kingdom Horsemen were in the saddle on all the chief roads, to bring the earliest tidings of his rival's approach On the first of August Henry landed at Milford Haven in three weeks the armies met at **Bosworth**, Richard's weakened by repeated desertions **1485** There was fought a battle,—the last between the rival A.D. Roses,—in which Richard, who had cut down the standard-bearer of the Lancasters, was slain in the act of aiming a deadly blow at Richmond The crown, which he had worn on the battle-field, was found in a hawthorn bush close by, and was placed by Lord Stanley on the victor's head The body of Richard, carried to Leicester on a horse, was there buried in the church of the Greyfriars

The character of the last of the Plantagenets has been painted by historian and by dramatist in the darkest colours He is represented as a man cruel and treacherous, lured on by the demon of unbridled ambition to commit crimes most terrible and unnatural Though he cannot have been a good man, yet it is due to his character to remember that the picture of Richard III. familiar to our minds was drawn under the Tudor sovereigns; and that, on this account, some allowance should be made for the

rancour of a hostile feeling. He was of meagre and stunted body, with a withered arm and a deformity of the shoulders, from which he got his name of Crookback

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

JAMES III, began to reign 1460

FRANCE.

LOUIS XI, 1461
CHARLES VIII 1483

FERDINAND and **ISABELLA**, 1474

FREDERIC IV, began to reign 1440

SIXTUS IV, 1471
INNOCENT VIII, 1484

CHAPTER IV

SOCIAL CONDITION OF THE PEOPLE UNDER THE HOUSES OF YORK AND LANCASTER

Villenage Abolished
Government
Houses and Meals
Miracle and Moral Plays
Books

THE great social feature of the period was the extinction of **Villenage** or Slavery From the earliest Saxon times this evil had prevailed in England The Norman Conquest had changed the masters without freeing the slaves But about the reign of Henry II the good work began During three centuries it went on slowly, yet surely,—so slowly, indeed, that it was remarked by scarcely any writers of the time When it was a disgrace to be called an Englishman, Nicholas Breakspear, an Englishman, was made Pope About the same time Thomas à Becket, an Englishman, dared to oppose the Norman King of England Among the clergy there were soon found many who had sympathy for the enslaved race, and it became a custom, when a slaveholder was dying, to persuade him, by all the authority of the Church, to set free his slaves The civil war by breaking the power of the ruling race, aided this great movement, and the opening of the Tudor Period saw Villenage abolished in England for ever

The **Government** of the country was then, as it is now, a limited monarchy It was of a class which sprang up in Europe during the Middle Ages, and of this class the English Constitution was the best example The office of King had become strictly hereditary He possessed the chief power and was feudal lord of the whole soil But three great principles, existing from the earliest times, limited his power 1 He could make no law without the consent of Parliament 2 He could lay on the people no tax without the same consent 3 He must govern by the laws, and if he broke them, his agents and advisers were responsible

Instead of the Norman castles already described, the nobles now began to build large **manor-houses** of wood, decorated with carving and painting Their rooms were hung with tapestry. In towns, the upper stories jutted out over the lower, so that in

narrow streets the fronts of opposite houses were only a few feet apart This style may still be noticed in old towns like Chester. The people had not yet learned the value of clear light and fresh air to both mind and body.

The higher classes took four **meals** in the day They rose about five, took breakfast at seven, dined at ten, supped at four, and at nine had the "livery"—a slight repast of cakes and spiced wine—served in their bed-chambers The working classes dined at noon. This is nearly the same hour as at present, for, while the leisure of the great permits them to change the hours of their meals, the labouring classes are compelled by their daily toil to keep the same hours in all ages.

Dramatic performances now took a regular shape They were acted first in the churches, chiefly by the clergy, and were then called Miracle Plays, or Mysteries Although intended to teach the lower classes the history of the Bible, they seem to have been very profane In the reign of Henry IV a miracle play, performed in Smithfield, lasted for eight days. It began with the Creation, and took in almost all the sacred history. About the time of Henry VI Moral Plays came into fashion. These were a great improvement on the Mysteries the actors were laymen, and Scriptural characters were not assumed They have been called Allegories, since the performers personated Mercy, Justice, Truth, and such qualities Then followed, in the Tudor Period, the introduction of actual characters from history and social life From the grave portions of a Moral Play came Tragedy, from the lighter, Comedy

In all modern history, no event has had wider or more lasting consequences than the invention of **Printing.** A complete change took place in book-making The black-letter manuscript gave place to the printed volume The latter, however, had as yet no title-page, no capital letters, and no points except the colon and the period. The words were spelled without attention to anything but their sounds Hence every writer had his own style of spelling, and very often there were two or three different forms of the same word in a single page The language of the period was Middle English,—slightly different from that used in Chaucer's *Canterbury Tales*. In the *Paston Letters*, or *Bills* as their writers call them—the correspondence of one of the chief families of Norfolk—we find many valuable glimpses of the forms of social life prevailing at this period These letters contain the names of some of the leading men in English history, such as the Earl of Warwick, the Duke of York, and Lord Hastings.

LEADING AUTHORS OF THE PERIOD—(1399–1485).

MIDDLE ENGLISH

JAMES I, (1394–1437)—King of Scotland—a prisoner in England for nineteen years—studied Chaucer—wrote poems—only remaining work *The King's Quhair* or Book

JOHN LYDGATE, (flourished about 1420)—a monk of Bury—kept a school of poetry—chief works *History of Thebes* and *Siege of Troy*

SIR JOHN FORTESCUE, (flourished about 1450)—Chief Justice in 1442—chief works *De Laudibus Legum Angliae* and *Absolute and Limited Monarchy*

WILLIAM CAXTON, (1412–1491)—first English printer—wrote or translated about sixty works—among them *History of Troy* and *Playe of Chesse*

LEADING DATES OF THE PERIOD– (1399–1485)

GENERAL EVENTS			WARS BATTLES, TREATIES	A D	
Martyrdom of Sawtre,	1401	Hen IV	Battle of Nesbit Moor,	1402	Hen IV.
James I of Scotland released,	1423	Hen VI	— Homildon Hill,	1402	—
Joan of Arc burned,	1431	—	— Shrewsbury,	1403	—
Death of Talbot,	1453	—	— Agincourt,	1415	Hen V
First book printed in England,	1474	Ed IV	Siege of Rouen,	1419	—
			Treaty of Troyes,	1420	—
CHANGE OF DOMINION			Battle of Crevant,	1423	Hen VI
			— Verneuil,	1424	—
			Siege of Orleans,	1428–9	—
			Treaty of Arras,	1435	—
All French possessions except Calais lost,	1451	Hen VI,	Cade's rebellion,	1450	—
			Treaty of Pecquigny,	1475	Ed IV

WARS OF THE ROSES

From 1455 A D to 1485 A D —30 years —Twelve battles

		A D	VICTOR.
HENRY VI	First battle, St Albans,	1455	York
	Bloreheath,	1459	—
	Northampton,	1460	—
	Wakefield,	—	Lancaster
	Mortimer's Cross,	1461	York
	Second battle, St Albans,	—	Lancaster.
EDWARD IV	Towton,	—	York
	Hedgeley Moor,	1464	—
	Hexham,	—	—
	Barnet,	1471	—
	Tewkesbury,	—	—
RICHARD III	Bosworth,	1485	Lancaster.

GENEALOGICAL TREE

CONNECTING THE PLANTAGENETS WITH THE TUDOR LINE.

EDWARD III

JOHN, Duke of Lancaster (third son), had by CATHERINE SWYNFORD,

JOHN BEAUFORT, Earl of Somerset

JOHN BEAUFORT, Duke of Somerset — CATHERINE, widow of HENRY V, married OWEN TUDOR.

MARGARET BEAUFORT married EDMUND TUDOR, Earl of Richmond.

HENRY VII.
(formerly Earl of Richmond.)

TUDOR PERIOD.

From 1485 A.D. to 1603 A.D —118 years —5 Sovereigns.

HENRY VII, began to reign	1485	**MARY** (half-sister),	1553
HENRY VIII (son),	1509	**ELIZABETH** (half-sister),	1558–1603
EDWARD VI (son),	1547		

Leading Features: THE RISE OF PROTESTANTISM—THE REVIVAL OF LITERATURE—THE EXTENSION OF COMMERCE

CHAPTER I.

HENRY VII.

Born 1455 A.D —Began to reign 1485 A D —Died 1509 A D.

The Rivals of Henry
Early Disturbances
Lambert Simnel (1487 A.D.)
Rise of the Star Chamber
War in France (1488 A D.)
Perkin Warbeck
Lands in Cornwall (1497 A D.)
Surrender and Death (1499 A D.)
Marriage Projects
Henry's Extortion
Death and Character
Power of the Nobles lessened
Discovery of America

TRUE English history begins with the reign of **Henry VII.** As storm clears the air, so had the civil war swept from the land the relics of the decaying Feudal System, and a new and better order of things arose Knowledge, long pent within the monasteries, now began to be diffused in printed books among the homes of the people. Men began to read and think for themselves We have hitherto seen French Kings triumphing with English armies on French soil. We have seen the nobles of England little better than robbers, the peasantry of England little better than slaves. We shall now see British Sovereigns on the throne, the slaves set free, and a middle class of farmers and merchants arise During the Tudor Period we shall see the commerce, the literature, and the Protestantism of England in their dawn; still later, we shall see the Constitution of Britain, which had been

growing for centuries, receive the key-stone of its topmost arch; and, passing to the time of the illustrious dynasty now wielding the sceptre, we shall behold the nation, enriched with all the elements of national health and life, reposing in peace and freedom beneath the shadow of that august temple

Henry was not without **rivals.** There was living at Sheriff-hutton, in Yorkshire, a boy of fifteen, Edward, Earl of Warwick, son of the Duke of Clarence John de la Pole, Earl of Lincoln, the son of Elizabeth, eldest sister of Edward IV, had been appointed heir by Richard III Warwick was at once, by Henry's order, transferred to the Tower of London Lincoln, having paid homage to the new King, remained at liberty

The King's public entry into London and his coronation were delayed from August 22nd until October 30th, by a plague, called, from its strongest symptom, "The sweating sickness." When these ceremonies were at last completed, he called a Parliament to confirm his title He claimed the throne by right of inheritance and of conquest, but to secure his seat, and at the same time to lull for ever the hostility of the rival Roses, he married **Elizabeth of York,** the daughter of Edward IV He obtained, besides, from Pope Innocent VIII, a bull threatening with excommunication all who should disturb him or his heirs in the possession of the throne His chief confidence was given to John Morton and Richard Fox, two priests who had been faithful to him in his exile He made Morton Archbishop of Canterbury, and Fox Bishop of Winchester

Notwithstanding these precautions, his throne was, during the first fifteen years of his reign, a seat of much danger Plot after plot rose to disturb his tranquillity He was at Lincoln, on a progress through the north, when news reached him of a rising in Yorkshire under Lord Lovel, and another near Worcester under the Staffords But they were soon suppressed The elder Stafford was hanged, and Lord Lovel escaped to the court of Margaret, Duchess-dowager of Burgundy, a sister of Edward IV, whose court appears more than once during this reign as the asylum of pretenders to the English throne The royal progress was soon resumed In York the King spent three weeks conferring honours and reforming abuses Thence he passed to Bristol, escorted through each county by the nobles and the sheriffs In Bristol he did much good by encouraging the citizens to build ships and to renew their trade, which had greatly fallen off during the civil war.

This reign was the age of imposture. It has been already

stated that an heir to the throne was imprisoned in the Tower in the person of the young Earl of Warwick. Strange to say, although this was well known to all, there appeared in Dublin an Oxford priest named Simon with a boy whom he called Edward Earl of Warwick, but who was really a baker's son, by name **Lambert Simnel.** Richard, Duke of York, had governed Ireland under Henry VI , the Duke of Clarence had also been Lieutenant; and the white rose was the favourite in that island The Earl of Kildare, a keen Yorkist, was now Lord-Deputy, and by him the boy was received with all honours, as a prince of Yorkist blood The Butlers, four bishops, and the city of Waterford remained faithful to Henry, the rest of the island followed Kildare, and the pretender was proclaimed King with the title of Edward VI Henry, in alarm, called the peers and prelates round him, and by their advice granted a general pardon to his opponents of former days, led the real Warwick in view of the citizens from the Tower to St Paul's, and thence to the Palace of Shene,—and, what cannot well be explained, arrested the Queen-dowager, Elizabeth, and imprisoned her in the Convent of Bermondsey **1486 A D**

A new source of alarm was the desertion of the Earl of Lincoln, who had, ever since the death of Richard, appeared devoted to Henry's cause He fled to his aunt, the Duchess of Burgundy, and soon with 2000 troops joined Simnel at Dublin The impostor was now crowned, and a Parliament was called in his name While Henry was at Kenilworth, the residence of his Queen, he heard that Lincoln and Simnel had landed near Furness in Lancashire, and were marching to surprise him In haste the royalists mustered and moved towards Newark, but so bad were the paths and roadways that the King's army lost their way between Nottingham and Newark The rebels came upon them at **Stoke**, and attacked the royal vanguard With firm bravery Henry's soldiers met the onset and repulsed it His heavy cavalry poured in and completed the rout of the invaders Lincoln died on the field Lovel, who had joined the enterprise, was never heard of from that day. Simon and Simnel surrendered The former died in prison, the latter was employed in the royal kitchen as a scullion, but was afterwards raised to the post of falconer **1487 A D.**

The Queen, of whose better title Henry seemed to be jealous, and who had hitherto been kept in the back-ground, was now crowned with great pomp. This may be looked upon as the work of the people; for they felt and spoke so strongly on the

subject that the King dared not refuse the honours of royalty to his wife About the same time a court, known as the **Star-Chamber** from the decorations of the room in which it sat, received the authority of Parliament It consisted of the Chancellor, the Treasurer, the Keeper of the Privy Seal, one bishop, one temporal peer, and the chief judges The principal work it had now to do was the abolition of "*maintenance*,"—a system by which the nobles retained around them a band of lawless men wearing their livery and bound by oath to fight in their quarrels

The ruling principle of Henry's **foreign policy** was to maintain peace, and only once was he led into a foreign war Of all the great fiefs of France, Bretagne alone remained free, the rest had been gradually attached to the crown Duke Francis of Bretagne now died, leaving his coronet to his daughter Anne, a girl of twelve The French King claimed the dukedom Henry, who had spent a great part of his exile in Bretagne, was forced to send an army to aid the defenceless princess, but his help was burdened with the condition that she should give up two forts as security for the money spent in her cause, and that she should not marry without his consent The raising of taxes to equip this army excited a revolt in the north of England But the Earl of Surrey soon dispersed the insurgents, and John à Chambre, one leader, suffered death at York, while Sir John Egremont, the other, fled to the Duchess of Burgundy

Anne of Bretagne was betrothed to Maximilian, King of the Romans, with the consent of Henry. Charles of France, however, forced the princess into a marriage with him, and the King of England resolved on a French war This was pleasing to the English people. Henry had long been talking of war, and had often received supplies and extorted benevolences for a purpose never yet fulfilled Still he invented causes of delay, and it was not until October 1492 that he landed in France and laid siege to Boulogne But the French King knew that the love of money was Henry's master-passion, and by promising to pay a large sum he secured a treaty The voice of England was loud in murmurs; for many knights and nobles had almost ruined themselves, by borrowing money and selling their estates, that they might take a part in the expected conquest of France

The great impostor had just appeared. This was **Perkin Warbeck**, a native of Tournay, who called himself Richard Plantagenet, Duke of York and second son of Edward IV Though there is strong probability that the prince thus personated was murdered in the Tower, yet the affair is wrapped in mystery

so dark that many in Warbeck's day believed his story, and ingenious arguments have been advanced in his favour by modern writers

Appearing first in Ireland, he was soon invited to Paris, but, when peace was made with Henry, he was forced to leave that court Margaret of Burgundy, the untiring friend of Henry's foes, received him as her nephew, gave him a body-guard and all the honours of a prince, and named him "The White Rose of England" A Yorkist plot was at once set on foot Sir Robert Clifford was the agent in Burgundy, and he had several meetings with Warbeck, whom he declared, in his letters to England, to be without doubt the Duke of York But Henry was on the watch His well paid spies were everywhere Clifford turned traitor, and within the same hour, the chiefs of the plot in England were seized Their letters to Flanders were produced as evidence against them, and Simon Mountford, Robert Ratcliff, William Daubeney, and Lord Fitzwalter were executed Sir William Stanley, too, who had saved the King's life at Bosworth, and whose brother, Lord Stanley, had crowned Henry on the field, being charged with a share in the plot, confessed his guilt and was beheaded As Stanley was one of the richest men in England, his execution added much to Henry's wealth.

The spirit of Warbeck's faction grew faint under these losses The pretender, therefore, resolved on action Three years after his first appearance, he approached Deal with a few followers, and sent a small body ashore to stir up the people in his favour But the gentlemen and yeomen of Kent beat back the invaders, and took 150 prisoners Warbeck returned to Flanders In anger at the shelter afforded to Warbeck in Flanders, Henry had removed the English cloth market from Antwerp to Calais, had banished from England the merchants of Flanders, and had ordered his own subjects to leave the Low Countries This put a stop for a time to the traffic between the English and the Flemings, but, the latter growing restless under their losses, a new treaty of commerce was made, and Warbeck again lost an asylum

He sailed thence to Cork, but the English rule was too firmly founded there to leave any hope of a revolt This was chiefly owing to *Poynings' Law*, called after Sir Edward Poynings by which it was enacted that all former English laws should have force in Ireland, and that no Bill should be brought into the Irish Parliament until it had received the assent of the English Houses.

Perkin then passed to James IV of Scotland, by whom he was

royally entertained. There was then a close alliance between the Courts of France and Scotland, and as Perkin had been recommended to James by the French King, he was made welcome. The fine figure, agreeable manners, and romantic story of the young man won the heart of the Scottish King. The adventurer won at the same time another and more faithful heart An affection sprang up between him and a lady of royal blood, Catherine Gordon, the daughter of the Earl of Huntly The marriage took place with the full consent of the King But James did more than provide Perkin with a wife He coined his plate
1496 to raise an army, and crossed the Border with Warbeck
A D in the depth of winter The English people, however, had learned from dearly bought experience the value of peace, and none joined the invaders The pillage by the Scots rather excited their anger This, and the tidings that an army was on the march to attack him, caused the Scottish King to return to his own land

The taxes, levied by Henry to repel this invasion, excited discontent in **Cornwall.** The Cornish men, complaining that they were burdened with taxes, not for their own good, but to benefit the northern counties, took arms under Flammock an attorney, and Joseph a farrier. They were joined by Lord Audley at Wells, and marched through Salisbury and Winchester to Blackheath, from which they could see the roofs of London. Henry led the army, which he had raised to oppose the Scots, against the rebels, who, being armed only with axes, bows, and scythes, could not long withstand his attack Their leaders were captured and executed.

The failure of a second expedition into England, during which James besieged Norham Castle without success, induced that monarch to think of peace. The mediator was the ambassador from Spain,—a country which was during the Tudor Period a leading power in Europe A treaty was concluded, which made it impossible for Perkin to remain in Scotland With his wife and a very few followers he crossed to Ireland, and lurked for some time in the wilds of that island.

But the rebellious spirit still alive in Cornwall encouraged him to invade England once more. He landed at **Whitsand Bay** on the Cornish shore, and unfurled his standard as Richard IV. at Bodmin. He commanded 6000 men before he reached **Exeter.** This city he besieged; but the want of artillery and the resolution of the citizens, who kept the rebels at bay by kindling a great fire in the gate-way while they intrenched their position,

caused him to retreat without success. His next move was on Taunton. The royal army was near,—a battle seemed certain; but his heart failed him. Secretly he left the men whom he had drawn from their homes, and fled to the sanctuary of Beaulieu in Hampshire The rebels submitted; a few were hanged, the rest were sent home Warbeck's wife fell into the King's hands, and was appointed to an honourable post as attendant on the Queen. She was called in the English Court "The White Rose,"—a name once borne by her husband Being induced to throw himself on the King's mercy, Perkin was brought amid gazing crowds to London, and there examined A full confession of the imposture was made, and was published, that the people might be satisfied. Perkin was then placed in close custody, but after six months contriving to escape, he was retaken, and condemned to sit in the stocks for two days There he was obliged to read aloud the published confession of his true parentage and his pretensions He was then committed to the Tower, where lay the unfortunate Earl of Warwick The prisoners became friends, and formed a plan of escape, but they were detected and executed Warbeck died on the gallows at Tyburn, confessing his fraud and asking pardon of the King The unhappy Warwick, whose whole life had been spent in prison, and whose only crime lay in his being the last male heir of the Plantagenet line, suffered **1499** on a pretended charge of exciting insurrection. Ralph A.D. Wilford, a shoemaker's son, had lately come forward in Kent claiming to be the Earl of Warwick. A priest named Patrick first announced the secret in a sermon. Wilford died by the law; Patrick died in prison. Upon this attempt Henry founded the charge on which Warwick was condemned. The execution of this prince is the greatest stain on Henry's character.

The King was now settled on the throne. Henceforward he devoted his attention to the amassing of money and the advancement of his foreign influence by marriages The old enmity between England and Scotland, which was fiercest in the Border counties, was set at rest by a marriage (1502 A.D.) between the Scottish King, **James IV.**, and **Margaret**, Henry's eldest daughter. This marriage must be carefully remembered, for it was the source of the union of the English and Scottish crowns in 1603.

Further to increase his influence, Henry married his eldest son, Arthur (so called from the ancient British prince), to Catherine of Aragon, daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella. The bridegroom, a gentle and learned prince, lived only six months after the union; and his brother Henry, afterwards King, was by a papal bull

permitted to marry the young widow. The Queen, Elizabeth of York, died in 1503, after which the King set himself to secure a rich second wife, but all his schemes were unavailing.

Richard III. had bequeathed the crown to the house of Suffolk Edmund, a brother of John de la Pole who was killed at Stoke, claimed the estates of the fallen Earl Henry refused to grant them, and Edmund fled to his aunt, the Duchess of Burgundy. Henry, in alarm, seized several members of the family, but Suffolk, left in poverty by his aunt's death, was delivered up by the Archduke Philip, and imprisoned in the Tower.

During all these events infamous extortion was going on. Richard Empson and Edmund Dudley were the chief agents of Henry's rapacity They were both lawyers, and Dudley was chosen Speaker of the Commons A single occurrence will show the nature of these extortions Henry visited a favourite general, the Earl of Oxford When leaving the mansion, the King passed through two lines of fine-looking men, splendidly equipped "My lord," said he to the Earl, "these are of course your servants?" The Earl smiled and said, "No, your majesty, I am too poor for that; these are my retainers, assembled to do you honour." The King started and said, "I thank you, my lord, for your good cheer, but I cannot have my laws broken in my sight" He referred to a law abolishing "maintenance," and Oxford was fined £10,000 for his anxiety to do honour to royalty!

Henry died in the spring of 1509 His health gave way under repeated attacks of gout, and consumption at length set in In his dying hours he ordered that those whom he had injured should be recompensed. He was married once His eldest son, Arthur, died before him, his second son was Henry VIII. his daughters married monarchs, Margaret being the wife of James IV. of Scotland, and Mary the wife of Louis XII. of France The last-named princess, when left a widow, married Brandon, Duke of Suffolk.

Lord Macaulay has given three points as the general character of the Tudors they were more arbitrary than the Plantagenets; they well knew the temper of the nation they governed; and they all had courage and a strong will Henry VII. was, besides, a man suspicious and reserved. His great vice was avarice; but during his reign many useful laws were passed, peace was preserved, and the foundation of our great commerce was laid.

Of the laws passed by Henry, the most important was one allowing the nobles to sell their estates, regardless of the entail.

This term "entail" means the fixing of the estate to some particular line of heirs, none of whom has the power to sell or to bequeath it Henry's object in passing this law was to lessen the power of the nobles, whom he feared But it also exalted the commons; for those who had made money bought the estates, which the nobles, loaded with debt, were only too glad to sell. Many noble houses had been destroyed during the civil war In 1451 fifty-three temporal lords answered the call of Henry VI; in 1485 only twenty-nine assembled, and many of these were newly created A new aristocracy, composed of the leading commoners, thus sprang up

By Henry's order the *Great Harry*, a war-ship of two decks, was built It cost £14,000, and was of one thousand tons burden But what gives to this reign its deepest interest is that during it the New World was discovered On the 12th of October 1492 **Columbus** discovered the Bahama Islands At first, baffled in Spain, he had sent his brother Bartholomew to England, to seek ships from Henry Bartholomew, who brought with him maps and charts, then first seen in our island, was on his way back to invite Christopher to the English court, when he was seized by pirates Meanwhile Christopher had obtained Spanish ships and had begun his perilous voyage However, the credit of discovering the mainland of America is due to English enterprise **Sebastian Cabot**, a Venetian, sent by Henry from Bristol, touched at Labrador in 1497, and sailed southward to Florida In the same year **Vasco di Gama**, a native of Portugal, doubled the Cape of Good Hope, thus opening a watery path to India Compared with these, all other events of European history during this reign shrink to insignificance And ever since, while rich and useful products of distant lands have been borne on every tide into our harbours, from the British Islands as a centre there have been flowing towards the rising and the setting sun our arts, our sciences, our literature and language; and, best of all, the faith in Jesus, which we prize as the chief blessing of our nation.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

SCOTLAND	A D	EMPERORS	
JAMES III., began to reign	1460	FREDERIC IV.,	1440
JAMES IV,	1488	MAXIMILIAN I,	1493
FRANCE			
CHARLES VIII,	1483		
LOUIS XII.,	1498	INNOCENT VIII,	1484
		ALEXANDER VI,	1492
ISABELLA, }	1474	PIUS III.,	1503
FERDINAND, }			

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

Fall of Granada,	1491	Savonarola burned at Florence,	1498
Columbus discovers America,	1492	Cabral discovers Brazil,	1500
Charles VIII of France invades Italy,	1494	Battle of Cerizoles (Italy),	1504
Vasco di Gama doubles the Cape of Good Hope,	1497	League of Cambray,	1508

CHAPTER II.

HENRY VIII.

Born 1491 A D.—Began to reign 1509 A.D.—Died 1547 A D.

Early Conduct.
French War
Battle of spurs (1513 A D)
Cardinal Wolsey
Foreign Policy
Field of the Cloth of Gold (1520 A D)
The Reformation in Germany (1517 A D)
Defender of the Faith (1521 A D)
Want of Money
French Alliance.
The Divorce (1527 A D)
Wolsey's Fall (1529 A D)
Cranmer and Cromwell
Papal Power Overthrown (1534 A D)
Suppression of Monasteries (1536 A D)
Union of Wales (1536 A D)
Anne Boleyn
Bible Translated
Pilgrimage of Grace (1537 A D)
The Bloody Statute (1539 A D)
Fall of Cromwell (1540 A D)
Catherine Howard.
Catherine Parr
The Last Victim (1547 A.D)
Henry's Death
Character

HENRY VIII. became King when eighteen. A Lancastrian through his father, a Yorkist through his mother, he united in himself the claims of the rival houses The nation, ground by the avarice of the late King, gladly welcomed to the throne a prince seemingly gallant and generous One of his earliest acts was the execution of Dudley and Empson, and the people, thus appeased, settled into a tranquillity unknown during five reigns As often happens, the miser father had a spendthrift son Encouraged by the Earl of Surrey, now chief minister, the young King plunged into a whirl of costly pleasures Tournaments, dances, pageants, revels followed in quick succession; and, if Henry stole a quiet hour now and then, it was given to music and literature. In the first year of his reign he married Catherine of Aragon, the widow of his brother Arthur.

The Kings of France had long been desirous of subduing **Italy**, and Louis XII. now seemed likely to achieve the conquest. The Pope, Julius II, formed a league with Ferdinand of Spain and the Venetians to oppose the French armies, and, by sending to Henry a golden rose perfumed with musk and anointed with oil, invited his aid. The vanity of the young Englishman was pleased. He joined the league. His first Parliament readily granted supplies. An English army was sent into Spain to invade France on the south. But Ferdinand having attempted to use the troops in his private schemes against Navarre, their leader in disgust brought them back to England without attempting the invasion of Guienne. Indirectly, however, this first

campaign fell heavily upon Louis. His troops being drawn from Italy to France, his splendid conquests in the plain of Lombardy yielded, all but a few garrisons, to the Swiss pikemen of the Pope

The Parliament of 1513 having granted a poll-tax and other supplies, Henry sailed with his troops to Calais He was there joined by the Emperor Maximilian, who came to serve under the English flag Terouenne, a town of Picardy, was in-
Aug. 18, vested The garrison held out for two months, during
1513 which Henry gained the battle of **Guinegaste**, known as
A D the "Battle of spurs," from the rapid flight of the French cavalry Tournay was then taken, and Henry returned in triumph to England Meanwhile James IV, prompted by the strong alliance then existing between France and Scotland, had invaded England; but on Flodden field, near the Till, his army was routed, and himself and many of his nobles were slain, by the English under Lord Surrey

Thomas, Cardinal **Wolsey**, was a prominent figure during the first twenty-one years of this reign Born at Ipswich in 1471, he was only fifteen when he graduated at Oxford The Boy Bachelor, as he was called, soon received from the Marquis of Dorset, whose sons had been his pupils, the rectory of Lymington in Somersetshire His next important step was the chaplaincy of Calais, where he was noticed by Fox, Bishop of Winchester, and by that prelate recommended to Henry VII The deanery of Lincoln and the post of King's almoner rewarded him for his zeal in the royal service; and under the gay young Henry VIII, who was pleased to find that a priest, so able to conduct the business of the State, scrupled not to drink and dance and sing in the court-revels, he rose to be Archbishop of York and Chancellor of England.

The splendour of the prelate now rivalled that of the King. His train numbered eight hundred, his silken robes sparkled with gold; he permitted his cardinal's hat to be laid nowhere in the royal chapel but on the high altar; and, when in 1518 he was created Papal Legate, he caused the first nobles of England to serve him on feast-days with towel and water. By this glitter and pride he pleased the people, from whose ranks he had risen. His fostering care of learning and literature gained for him the applause of the wise.

Francis I. now sat upon the French throne He had inherited the desire of conquering Italy, and he therefore sought to live at peace with England. To secure this, he courted the favour of

Wolsey by presents and flattery, and obtained, as the first-fruits of his intriguing, the restoration of Tournay In 1519 Maximilian died, and **Charles V.** was chosen Emperor Charles, Francis, and Henry were then the leading Powers of Europe, and the foreign policy of each was closely interwoven with that of the others Charles ruled Spain, Austria, Naples, and the Netherlands His, too, was the New World, with its mines of gold and silver Francis, holding a compact and prosperous kingdom almost in the centre of the Emperor's scattered dominions, was a formidable rival Henry, close at hand yet securely guarded by the waves of the Channel and the North Sea, could in a week pour his troops upon the shores of either realm The English King was, therefore, courted by both Charles and Francis He was invited by Francis to a meeting near Calais He was visited in England by Charles To be Pope was Wolsey's highest ambition, and Charles, by promising to use all his influence in favour of that desire, won the friendship of the Cardinal.

Henry at once crossed to Calais, and met Francis between Guisnes and Ardres The interview has been called, from the splendour of the monarchs and their retinues, "The Field of the **Cloth of Gold.**" Three weeks were spent in empty visits of state, tournaments, and feasts, but nothing of importance was done At Gravelines, a town on the shore a little north from Calais, Henry and Charles met immediately afterwards, and any feeling in favour of Francis, which may have grown up in Henry's mind, was completely swept away

May 30, **1520** A D.

The execution of Edward Stafford, Duke of Buckingham, took place upon Henry's return to England Misled by astrology and the pride of his royal blood, he had let fall unguarded words, hinting that, if the King should die without children, he would seek the throne. With him died the office of Constable of England

The **Reformation**—the greatest series of events in modern history—was now in progress. The magnificent temple of St. Peter had for many years been rising on the banks of the Tiber To raise funds for the building, Leo X. had sent out monks to sell indulgences, which had been invented by Urban II. in the days of the Crusades. The people thought that the money paid for these pieces of paper or parchment would buy for them the righteousness of saints But Martin Luther, an Augustine monk of Saxony, opposed this doctrine of indulgences. In his Ninety-five Propositions fixed

1517 A.D

on the door of the church at Wittenberg he defended the doctrine of *justification by faith in Christ alone*. In the palace-hall of Leipsic, before the great and the wise of Northern Germany, he maintained the authority of the *Bible as the only rule of religious faith*, and claimed for every man the right to read and interpret the Sacred Book for himself. At the gate of Wittenberg Castle he severed the last tie which bound him to the Church of Rome, by casting into a bonfire the Papal bull denouncing against him the terrible doom of excommunication.

June, 1519 A D

Dec 10, 1520 A D

The news of these things was heard joyfully in England by many who remembered with reverence the doctrines of John Wycliffe But Henry was as yet a strict Catholic. He wrote a book in Latin defending the seven sacraments of the Church of Rome, and sent a copy of it to the Pope. Leo, glad to receive aid so illustrious, conferred on him the title Defender of the Faith Our sovereigns still bear the title, which has now a deeper meaning the letters F D, for *Fidei Defensor*, may be seen on all our coins Luther replied to Henry forcibly and fearlessly The eyes of Europe turned on the controversy. The work prospered, and every day added to the ranks of the Reformers

1521 A D

In the war, which arose between Charles V and Francis I, Henry at first sided with the Emperor Twice English troops invaded France, but without success, although on the second occasion the army reached a town eleven leagues from Paris. Want of money was one cause of these failures The immense hoards of the late King were long since exhausted; and, to fill his empty treasury, Henry was forced in 1523 to call a Parliament There had been no meeting of the Houses for seven years, and so little did their conduct now please the King, that for seven years more they were not once called together The *benevolence* was during these years the most fruitful source of Henry's income. When the Commons assembled, Wolsey in scarlet and silver entered the hall to demand £800,000 for the King. He was seconded by the Speaker, Sir Thomas More; but the House would grant only half the sum; and, when the haughty priest still pressed his claim with arguments, he was told that members of the Commons alone were allowed to debate on questions there.

But the foreign policy of Henry, or rather of Wolsey, soon changed. Two Popes had died,—Leo X. in 1521, and Adrian VI.

in 1523,—and twice Wolsey was defeated in the dearest wish of his ambitious heart The double disappointment rapidly cooled his friendship for the Emperor, for whose promised aid and influence he had long been working. Francis, too, was now an object of pity At the battle of Pavia (February 24, 1525) he had lost, as he said himself, "all but honour," and was now the prisoner of Charles. He was not released for a year, when by the Treaty of Madrid he agreed to give the fair province of Burgundy to the Emperor as his ransom,—a promise, however, never kept Two years later, when Rome was sacked by the Emperor's troops, under Bourbon, a French refugee, and the Pope was cast into prison, Henry and Francis united in a firm league to release the unhappy Pontiff, and to carry war into the Emperor's dominions.

After nearly twenty years of married life the King pretended to have doubts about the legality of his marriage with Queen Catherine, who had been previously his brother's wife. She was a beautiful and virtuous woman. The truth seems to be that Henry was tired of her, and had taken a violent fancy for one of her maids of honour, Anne Boleyn, grand-daughter of the first Duke of Norfolk A **divorce** then became the great object of Henry's life. There were many difficulties in the way. Catherine was the aunt of Charles V , she was, besides, a zealous Catholic, and in high favour with the Pope. But a divorce Henry would have , and so he told Wolsey, who knelt for four hours at his feet, seeking vainly to change his purpose.

Wolsey did not know what to do The Pope, awed by the Emperor, durst not grant the demand of Henry , and Wolsey durst not oppose the Pope To his own ruin the Cardinal acted a double part. Openly he seemed to urge on the divorce, secretly he delayed it in obedience to the Pope.

At length a court was opened in London to try the case Wolsey and Campeggio, an Italian Cardinal, sat as judges. On the first day a touching scene took place. When the Queen's name was called, instead of answering she flung herself with tears at her husband's feet, pleading for mercy as a stranger in England and his faithful wife of twenty years Then, refusing to submit to the court, she left the hall. Un- June 21, moved, Henry pressed his suit But no decision was **1529** made; and, after the court had sat for almost two A D. months, an order from the Pope transferred it to Rome

This delay roused Henry's anger against **Wolsey**. The Great Seal, the badge of the Chancellor's office, was taken from him and given to Sir Thomas More. His palace—York Place, after-

wards Whitehall—was seized with all its rich plate and furniture. From his country-house at Esher near Hampton he wrote piteous letters, signed *Miserrimus* But his foes were too powerful Compelled to retire to Yorkshire, he survived his disgrace about a year. Then, being arrested by the Earl of Northumberland for high treason, he was on his way to a scaffold in London, when dysentery seized him, and he died at Leicester Abbey His last words are full of solemn warning —"Had I but served God as diligently as I have served the King, he would not have given me over in my grey hairs But this is my just reward" (Nov. 28, 1530 A D)

Henry's mind was gradually turning, from political, not religious causes, to look favourably on the Reformers, who had assumed the name of Protestants at the Diet of Spires Thomas **Cranmer** and Thomas **Cromwell** were now his chief advisers. Cranmer, a Fellow of Cambridge, had, some time before Wolsey's death, suggested that the divorce case should be referred to the Universities The King, hearing of this, exclaimed, in his rough style, that Cranmer had got the right sow by the ear, and acted on the hint The case was laid before all the universities in Europe, and a decision was given in Henry's favour This made the fortune of Cranmer Cromwell, too, gained the royal favour by a single suggestion—that the King should declare himself Supreme Head of the English Church His had been a chequered life A factory clerk at Antwerp, a soldier in the sack of Rome, again a clerk at Venice, then a lawyer in England, he became at last Wolsey's solicitor By his advice the King resolved to deny the supremacy of the Pope

And now the chain, which had so long bound England to Rome, was breaking link by link. The Parliament of 1532 forbade the payment of First-fruits, by which the Pope had received the first year's income of vacant bishoprics The Parliament of 1533 forbade appeals to Rome And in 1534 Henry was formally recognized by the Legislature as "the only Supreme Head on earth of the Church of England"

In 1533 Anne Boleyn was declared Queen. Catherine, formally divorced, retired from the court, and died three years afterwards in Huntingdonshire, leaving a daughter, Mary When these things were heard at Rome, the Pope laid Henry under a terrible curse, unless Queen Catherine were restored, but nothing could bend the stubborn King of England.

The dispute, when the divorce was thus settled, centred in the question, "Who was to be Head of the Church in England,—the

King or the Pope?" The point was decided by the Parliament of 1534 conferring the title with its privileges on Henry About the same time appeared the Holy Maid of Kent, a nun, subject to hysterical fits, who raved against the new doctrines, and denounced woe on the King for his treatment of Queen Catherine Her true name was Elizabeth Barton. She was declared by some to be only a tool in the hands of others, many of whom suffered with her More distinguished victims of Henry's wrath were John Fisher, Bishop of Rochester, and **Sir Thomas More,** famed as the author of *Utopia*. They were beheaded in 1535 on a charge of denying the King's supremacy in **1535** the Church This was the final breach with Rome A.D. Henceforth the Church of England had a separate existence Paul III, now Pope, hurled the thunders of excommunication at Henry; but the English King heeded them not

The suppression of **monasteries** was then resolved on by the King; and Cromwell, to whom was given complete control of the Church with the title of Vicar-General, proceeded to the work Many held that there were good grounds for this step they asserted that the monks generally led dissolute lives and that many of the monasteries were dens of iniquity But Henry's motive was not hatred of evil, he rather desired to deal a terrible blow at the Papal power, and at the same time to fill his coffers with the riches of the monks His obedient **1536** Parliament, now in its sixth session, passed a Bill to A.D. suppress those monasteries which possessed revenues below £200 a year Three years later the greater monasteries were destroyed In all, 3219 religious houses were laid in ruins, and the King was enriched with their yearly income of £161,000. Six new bishoprics were then established

The worst evils of the Feudal System still lingered in **Wales.** The marchers, or great lords, claiming independent rule in their own districts, were at constant war with one another pillage and murder occurred every day But now these lords were deprived of separate jurisdiction, and the English **1536** laws were everywhere enforced Henceforth Wales sent A.D. twenty-four members to the English Parliament. This was the real union of Wales with England

The 6th day of January 1536 saw Catherine of Aragon die. On the 19th of May in the same year her rival, Anne Boleyn, was beheaded. While the divorce remained unsettled, Henry's passion for her had been violent; when his wish was gained, he grew careless, then cold. A new face—that of the lovely Jane

Seymour—caught his changeful fancy Anne's enemies plied him with evil stories of her friends, Cranmer alone dared to raise his voice in her favour She was tried on a charge of unfaithfulness to her royal husband, and was condemned to die. She met her doom calmly, and on the scaffold prayed for the King She left a daughter, afterwards Queen Elizabeth. On the next day Jane Seymour became Queen

During this reign the Bible took its place as the standard of Protestant faith A century and a half had passed since John Wycliffe translated the Scriptures into English; but the version used in England during the earlier years of Henry's reign was that of **William Tyndale,** a young scholar of Oxford, who published the New Testament in 1526, and portions of the Old Testament four years later In 1536 he suffered death by fire in Flanders In the same year Miles Coverdale of Cambridge published the whole Bible in the English tongue These were translations from the Latin version called the Vulgate By a royal order a copy of Coverdale's translation was chained to a pillar or desk in every parish church, so that all who chose might read In 1539 appeared a translation called the **Great Bible,** prepared under the superintendence of Cranmer, who was now Archbishop of Canterbury The people received these gifts with joy; families clubbed their savings to buy a copy of the Sacred Volume, still a costly purchase, and those who could read were often seen surrounded by a crowd of listeners, earnestly hearkening to the words which tell of life eternal

The abolition of the monastéries caused much discontent, especially in the northern counties North of the Trent 40,000 men rose in arms, under a gentleman named Askew. Their avowed object being to restore the Roman Catholic Church, they called their insurrection the *Pilgrimage of Grace* Priests marched before them, while their banners bore the crucifix and the chalice. They held York and Hull for a while, but the promise of a general pardon, and the heavy rains of winter induced them to return to their homes A renewal of the revolt early in the next spring came to nothing Askew and other leaders were executed.

Oct. 12, 1537 A.D.

The birth of a son, baptized Edward, added to Henry's triumph; and even the death of his Queen, Jane Seymour, which occurred a few days after the prince was born, was almost disregarded in his great joy.

Though the King had broken with Rome, he was no friend to Luther. He retained many of the old doctrines, espe-

cially transubstantiation, by which the people were taught that partakers of the Lord's Supper ate, not bread and wine, but the real flesh and blood of Jesus Standing thus half-way between the two Churches, he strove to bend the consciences of both Protestants and Catholics to his own views, and many of both parties were burned for denying what he taught. His opinions were embodied in the *Six Articles*, of which the first and chief was, that all should on pain of death believe in transubstantiation From the persecution which followed these enactments, they were called the **Bloody Statute.** About the same time it was decided by Parliament that all the proclamations of Henry should have the force of regular laws This was a measure utterly opposed to the spirit of the English Constitution In effect, it made Henry a monarch as absolute as was ever a Czar of Russia or a Shah of Persia **1539** A D

Henry's fourth wife was Anne of Cleves, the daughter of a Protestant prince Cromwell, desirous of strengthening the Protestant cause in England, had proposed the union A picture of the princess was shown to Henry he was pleased with her face, and she was invited to England But when he came to see her, he called her "a great Flanders mare" She had neither beauty nor grace, and could speak no language except her own. After some delay the marriage took place, but the King never forgave Cromwell Three designs filled his mind revenge on the Vicegerent, a divorce from Anne, and the elevation of a new Queen, Catherine Howard, a Catholic, and niece to the Duke of Norfolk. In little more than six months he had gained all these ends **Cromwell,** accused by Bill of Attainder of heresy and treason, was brought to the block Anne, much to her own content, was separated from her husband, and lived in England upon a pension of £3000 a year until her death. Catherine Howard was raised to the throne amid the rejoicings of the Catholics, who hailed her elevation as an omen of good. The last three Queens had favoured the Reformation. July 28, **1540** A D.

For about a year and a half the charms of Catherine Howard delighted the King Then some events of her earlier life began to be whispered abroad, and of these Cranmer sent a written statement to Henry, who refused at first to believe them. But when she herself confessed, what many witnesses swore, that she had been unchaste before her marriage, the fierce jealousy of Henry blazed forth. Nothing but blood could quench his rage, and she was beheaded on Tower-hill (1542 A.D.). With her

died an accomplice of her guilt, Lady Rochford, who had been chief witness against Anne Boleyn

In his religious changes, too, the King displayed that fickle nature so evident in his marriages Not satisfied with the Six Articles, he published in succession two books, each giving a different creed to the nation The royal permission to read the Bible, formerly given to all, was now confined to gentlemen and merchants.

Among the later martyrs of this reign were John Lambert, a London schoolmaster, burned at Smithfield in 1538 for refusing to believe in transubstantiation at Henry's order; and a heroic lady, Anne Ascue of Lincolnshire, who suffered by fire in 1546 for the same offence.

Wars with Scotland and France occupied Henry's latter years the details are not of much importance His sixth wife was Catherine Parr, widow of Lord Latimer She survived her husband, although her head was once in great danger The King's temper, naturally fierce, was maddened by his increasing corpulence and an ulcer which had broken out in his leg. One day, while talking of certain religious doctrines, she opposed his ideas In high wrath he ordered an impeachment to be drawn up against her. But a friend, happening to see the paper, told her; and, when next she saw the King, she spoke so humbly of the foolishness of her sex, and appeared so thankful for what he had taught her, that when the Chancellor came to arrest her, Henry bade him begone.

The last victim who suffered from this tyrant's wrath was Henry Howard, Earl of Surrey, famed as the purifier of English poetry, and the writer of our earliest blank verse He was a cousin of Catherine Howard and was beheaded on suspicion of aiming at the crown. The fact of his quartering on his shield the arms of Edward the Confessor, long borne by his ancestors, was the chief circumstance advanced in support of this charge His father, the Duke of Norfolk, who had been seized at the same time, lay in prison awaiting the same fate, when the news came that Henry was dead.

For some days it was well known in the Court that the King was dying, but all feared to tell him so. At length Sir Antony Denny ventured to warn him of the coming change. He desired to see Cranmer, but was speechless when the Archbishop arrived. When asked by Cranmer to give some sign of his faith in Christ, he squeezed the prelate's hand, and died. He had been married six times, and left three children. His will, made nearly a

month before he died, bequeathed the throne to Edward, then to Mary, and then to Elizabeth This arrangement was actually followed

Henry's vanity was great He was vain of his learning, and, in earlier days, of his appearance But his greatest crimes may be traced to his fickleness and his self-will Few English monarchs were more absolute At eighteen he was a gay and handsome prince, skilled in music and ready with his pen · at six-and-fifty he was an unwieldy mass of corrupted flesh and evil passions

The great historical fact of this reign was the foundation of British Protestantism

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

JAMES IV., began to reign	1488	BAJAZET II.,	1481
JAMES V,	1513	SELIM I,	1512
MARY,	1542	SOLYMAN II (the Magnificent),	1520
		EMPERORS	
		MAXIMILIAN I,	1493
LOUIS XII.,	1498	CHARLES V.,	1519
FRANCIS I.,	1515		
		POPES	
		JULIUS II.,	1503
		LEO X,	1513
JOAN,	1504	ADRIAN VI,	1522
FERDINAND V.,	1512	CLEMENT VII,	1523
CHARLES I (Emperor),	1516	PAUL III,	1534

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

	A D		A D
Francis I. becomes King of France,	1515	Battle of Pavia (Italy),	1525
Charles I. becomes King of Spain,	1516	Baber founds the Mogul Empire in India,	1525
Luther publishes the Ninety-five Theses,	1517	Battle of Mohacs (Hungary),	1526
Charles I. of Spain made Emperor,	1519	Sack of Rome by Bourbon,	1527
Cortez conquers Mexico,	1521	Reformers called Protestants (at Spires),	1529
Union of Calmar dissolved (Denmark),	1524	League of Smalcald,	1530
		Pizarro conquers Peru,	1533
		Order of Jesuits founded,	1535
		Council of Trent begins to sit,	1545

CHAPTER III.

EDWARD VI

Born 1537 A D —Began to reign 1547 A.D —Died 1553 A.D.

The Regency
War with Scotland (1547 A D)
Church of England Established.
Plots against Somerset.
Insurrections.
Fall of Somerset (1549 A.D).
Reform
Death of Somerset (1552 A.D)
Succession Altered.
Death of Edward.

THE will of Henry VIII directed that Edward, now only in his tenth year, should come of age at eighteen In the meantime a Council of twenty-eight nobles and clergy was to manage the affairs of the kingdom This Council, however, feeling the want of a leader, chose as Protector the Earl of Hertford, brother of Jane Seymour, and therefore uncle of the King Many new peers were created, many were advanced to higher rank. Among the latter, the Protector received the title of Duke of **Somerset.** Archbishop Cranmer was a leading member of the Council of Regency.

It was also enjoined by Henry's will, that a marriage should take place, if possible, between Edward and young Mary of Scotland. But Scottish feeling, influenced by France, was strong against the match, and, to force the nation into a consent, Somerset led an army of 18,000 over the Borders The Regent Arran met him at **Pinkie** near Musselburgh, but was defeated (Sept 10, 1547) News of plots against his power soon recalled the Protector to London, and the campaign ended without advantage to the English, while the attempt to extort consent displeased even those Scotchmen who had been in favour of the union. As the Earl of Huntly said, "He disliked not the match, but he hated the manner of wooing" The young Queen of Scotland was sent for greater safety to France.

The completion of the **English Reformation** was the great event of this reign. The Protector was a Protestant, and he took care that all who had access to the young King should be of the Reformed faith. Under this fostering influence the Church of England began to assume her present form,—a work in which Archbishop Cranmer took the largest share. He was ably seconded by Ridley, Bishop of London, and Latimer, Bishop of Worcester. Freer circulation was given to the Bible. To

secure purity of doctrine, twelve Homilies or Sermons were published The statues and pictures of the churches were destroyed The Latin Mass was abolished, and replaced by the **Liturgy**, still read in the Established Church of England And, lastly, the faith of English Protestants was summed up in Forty-two Articles.

It has been already said that Somerset hastened from Scotland in alarm There was a plot against his power His own brother, Admiral Lord Seymour, who had married the widow of Henry VIII, was his most dangerous foe Though this conspiracy was checked by the execution of Seymour on Tower-hill, yet opposition far more fatal to the Protector was rising. **Dudley, Earl of Warwick**, was the son of that Dudley who had ministered to the avarice of Henry VII Created Viscount Lisle by the late King, he was a member of the Council of Regency, in which his restless ambition made him a leading man Now, as the head of a rival faction, he began to measure his strength with Somerset.

Much more important than the struggles of two ambitious men was the condition of the people at this time Monasteries, with all their evils, had served some useful ends The poor man and the traveller found there a shelter for the night. The domains attached were let out at moderate rents to small farmers, who found the monks not only indulgent landlords, but ready purchasers of the farm produce Discontent and rebellion had therefore followed the suppression of these houses, and the embers of bad feeling were still alive The working classes had, besides, new grievances A great demand for wool had turned a large part of England into sheep-walks, and there was little field labour to be done Wages were low, and were paid in the base coin issued by Henry VIII. to supply his own needs The price of food rose high The flames of war burst out in many shires of England Exeter was besieged by 10,000 men Ket, a tanner, sat below an oak tree, giving law to the gentlemen of Norfolk In all cases the rebels were soon put down Ket was hanged at Norwich, after his followers had been scattered by the Earl of Warwick

While Warwick was thus employed, troops, sent from France to aid the Scottish Regent, had driven the English garrisons from the castles of Broughty and Haddington. The **Protector** was then glad to make peace; for his position was daily growing more perilous. After the battle of Pinkie, assuming royal pomp, he had disdained to ask advice from the councillors.

Many blamed him for the execution of his brother. The Catholics cried out against the man who had pulled down churches, and the houses of bishops, that he might build his palace in the Strand. Warwick artfully used these circumstances to strengthen his own faction. The feeling against Somerset grew so strong that he was forced to resign his Protectorship, and was indicted for usurpation of the King's power. On his knees before the Council he made full confession of all the charges. He was then, by a vote of the Parliament, stripped of all power and condemned to pay a heavy fine. By the mercy of the King, however, he escaped the fine, and soon regained his freedom.

The Council demanded that all should sign the Articles of Reform. They began with Gardiner, and on his refusal deprived him of his office and committed him to prison. Three other bishops were at the same time forbidden to preach. But in the Princess Mary they found a stanch Catholic, whom they could not move. Her they let alone, lest they might provoke a war with the Emperor Charles, her cousin.

Warwick's ambition was now gratified with the title, Duke of Northumberland. His rival **Somerset**, though fallen, was still popular. The time was now ripe to crush that rival for ever. Arrested on a charge of raising rebellion in the north, and of plotting to murder Northumberland and others, the unhappy ex-Protector was tried before the Marquis of Winchester, as High Steward, and a jury of twenty-six peers. Convicted of felony, he was beheaded on Tower-hill. The people, forgetting all his failings in the sad hour of his death, dipped their kerchiefs in his blood, and laid these up among their household treasures.

Jan 22, 1552 A.D.

Northumberland now ruled England, and, as the King's health had been for some time failing, visions of securing the crown for his own family filled his ambitious mind. He persuaded Edward that the Princesses, Mary and Elizabeth, could not wear the crown, since they had been declared illegitimate by an Act of Parliament, that the Queen of Scots was also excluded as a stranger, betrothed to the Dauphin of France; that the succession belonged to the Marchioness of Dorset, daughter of Mary Tudor, who was once Queen of France, and afterwards Duchess of Suffolk, and that the next heir was therefore Lady Jane Grey, the grand-daughter of the Duchess. He had previously married his fourth son, Lord Guildford Dudley, to the Lady Jane. The King's affection for the Protestant faith in-

clined him to this settlement of the crown; and, although some of the Council hesitated, the Duke prevailed, and letters patent were issued, transferring the crown to the youngest branch of the Tudor line

Scarcely was this done when the King grew very ill The worst symptoms of consumption appeared Northumberland, constantly by his bedside, placed him under the care of a woman professing great skill Her medicines made him much worse, and on this rests the suspicion that his death was hastened by poison He died at Greenwich, aged sixteen years He was a gentle boy, of very studious habits, and of most promising disposition A diary from his own pen, giving an account of his reign, is preserved in the British Museum.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

		A.D.			A.D.
MARY,	began to reign	1542	**SOLYMAN II.,**		1520
	FRANCE				
HENRY II.,		1547	**CHARLES V,**		1519
			POPES		
	SPAIN		**PAUL III,**		1534
CHARLES I.,		1516	**JULIUS III.,**		1550

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

	A.D
Charles V grants the Interim,	1549
Treaty of Passau,	1552
Defence of Metz,	1552

CHAPTER IV.

MARY I

Born 1516 A D.—Began to reign 1553 A.D —Died 1558 A.D.

Jane Grey yields to Mary
The Spanish Marriage (1554 A D)
Insurrection
Execution of Jane Grey (1554 A D)
Protestants Burned (1555–56 A D)
Loss of Calais (1558 A D)
Mary's Death
Character

WHEN Edward died, **Lady Jane Grey** was at once proclaimed Queen by order of Northumberland She was only sixteen, accomplished, beautiful, and good Studying Greek and Latin with the late King, she had learned, like him, to love retirement The dangers of a throne alarmed her gentle heart, and it was very unwillingly that she yielded to the wishes of her father-in-law But she was not destined to be Queen The feeling of the nation leaned toward Mary, the daughter of Catherine of Aragon, who, writing from Suffolk, summoned around her the leading nobles and gentlemen Her force increased daily, while Northumberland could muster only 6000 men, and even these were leaving him fast The councillors and the citizens of London declared for Mary, and she was proclaimed everywhere,—the first Queen regnant of England Northumberland, Suffolk, Guildford Dudley, and Jane Grey were arrested Northumberland was executed at once, the others were spared a little longer

The feeling that she had the best claim was the chief motive of Mary's supporters. She was now in her thirty-seventh year, of a temper soured by her mother's and her own disgrace, but warmly attached to the **Catholic worship.** Her great object was the restoration of that worship in England in all its former pomp and power. One of her earliest acts, therefore, released from prison Catholic nobles and prelates Gardiner and Bonner were restored to their sees The Duke of Norfolk received his freedom And, in direct violation of her promise to the men of Suffolk, the religious laws of Edward VI. were repealed. Cranmer, Ridley, Latimer, and other Protestants were sent to prison. All England looked with alarm on these things; but the worst was yet to come.

Another step towards her great end, was the **Spanish match.** In July 1554 she became the wife of Philip, son of the Emperor Charles, and heir of the Spanish crown, which he received during the next year This alliance with the greatest Catholic Power in Europe gratified at the same time Mary's ambition and her affection, for she was attached to Philip But he soon grew tired of a wife, jealous, ill tempered, and eleven years older than himself, and, since he was no favourite with the English, whom he treated with cold Spanish ceremony, he left this island in less than a year Except for a few days in 1557, he never saw his wife again

July, 1554 A D

The whole body of the English people disliked this marriage It was said that England would soon be a province of Spain, and that the terrible Inquisition would soon be at work in London **Rebellion** appeared in Devonshire and Kent The former was easily suppressed, but the men of Kent had seized Southwark and Westminster before they were dispersed Their leader, Sir Thomas Wyatt, was taken at Temple bar, and executed Four hundred of his followers also suffered death The Duke of Suffolk was concerned in this rising, and his guilt was thought a good excuse for the execution of his daughter, Lady Jane Grey, and her husband They were beheaded within the Tower walls Dudley suffered first, and, as Jane was on her way to the block, she passed his bleeding body She died calmly, persevering to the end in her own faith Shortly before her death she sent a Greek Bible to her sister, as a last love gift Her father, Suffolk, soon met the same fate

Then began that terrible persecution of Protestants, which has given to the first Queen regnant of England the name of Bloody Mary Cardinal Pole, the Papal Legate, an Englishman of royal blood, who now filled Cranmer's place in Lambeth Palace, recommended toleration, but Gardiner and Bonner cried out for the stake and the fagot, and the Queen was of their mind During three years, 288 men, women, and children were burned for their Protestantism, while thousands suffered in a less degree The chief scene of these tragedies was **Smithfield** in London There many, condemned to death, perished amid the flames of blazing fagots More than a thousand ministers were driven from their pulpits, and, as many of them as could, fled to the Continent to escape the fury of the tempest Such lived chiefly at Frankfort and Geneva Among them were John Knox, the Reformer of Scotland, Foxe, who wrote the *Book of Martyrs*, and Coverdale, the translator

1555 A D

of the English Bible Associated during their exile with some of the leading spirits of the Continental Reformation, they received clearer ideas of the Protestant faith and worship Returning to these shores, they founded the sect called **Puritans**, which was destined afterwards to figure so prominently in English history

John Rogers, Canon of St Paul's, was the first victim of this persecution. Hooper, Bishop of Gloucester, was in torture for three quarters of an hour one of his hands dropped off, the other still beat his breast, and he prayed till his tongue swelled so that he could not speak **Ridley**, Bishop of London, and **Latimer**, once Bishop of Worcester, suffered together at Oxford "Be of good comfort, Master Ridley," cried Latimer, as they bound his aged limbs to the stake, "we shall this day light such a candle, by God's grace, in England, as, I trust in God, shall never be put out" Bags of gunpowder laid round them killed Latimer by the explosion, but Ridley's death was very slow (October 16, 1555)

Early in 1556 Cranmer was led to the stake at Oxford Broken down by long imprisonment, and sorely tempted by promises of life and honour, he had agreed to sign a denial of the Protestant faith But a calmer hour brought repentance, and, firm in the faith he had adopted, he died without fear Of his own accord he held out his right hand in the kindling flames until it was a blackened cinder, while he cried more than once, "That unworthy hand!" When the fire seized his body, his calm face bore no signs of pain.

March 21, 1556 A.D.

Though Mary was deeply grieved at the coldness of her husband, now Philip II of Spain, she joined him in his war with France. An English army, sent into the Netherlands, helped to seize the French fortress of St Quentin But this trifling success was followed by a heavy loss Suddenly in midwinter the Duke of Guise appeared before Calais The town, which lay in the midst of marshes, was weakly garrisoned, since it was the custom of the English Government, for the sake of economy, to withdraw most of the troops late in autumn. Guise moved his men across the frozen swamps, and seized a sand-hill called the Rysbank, upon which he placed his cannon. Assaulted by land and sea, this key of France, held by the English since the time of Edward III., was lost in eight days

1558 A.D.

Mary's health was failing fast. Dropsy preyed upon her body. Her mind, too, was much disturbed. So deeply did she feel her

loss in France, that she said the word "Calais" would be found after death written on her heart Her husband neglected her. She knew that her subjects disliked her She had no children; and her half-sister Elizabeth, whom she hated as a Protestant and the daughter of Anne Boleyn, would wear the crown next. All causes working together produced a lingering fever of which she died

Sorrow is sent for our good, but Mary's heart was hardened and her disposition soured by the troubles of her early life. Her strongest passion was hatred of the Protestant faith Instead, however, of branding her with the name of Bloody Mary, we should rather pity the Queen, who in her fierce religious zeal forgot the mercy natural to woman, and who saw, before she died, every aim and hope of her life baffled and broken.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

MARY,	began to reign 1542	**SOLYMAN II,**	began to reign 1520
FRANCE		EMPEROR	
HENRY II,	1547	**CHARLES V,**	1519
		POPES	
		JULIUS III,	1550
CHARLES I,	1516	**MARCELLUS II,**	1555
PHILIP II,	1556	**PAUL IV,**	1555

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

	A D
First Reformed Church in Paris,	1555
Abdication of the Emperor Charles V.,	1556
Death of Charles V,	1558

CHAPTER V.

ELIZABETH

Born 1533 A D.—Began to reign 1558 A D —Died 1603 A.D

Protestantism Restored	Her Execution (1587 A D)	Earl of Essex executed (1601 A D)
Mary Queen of Scots	Early Navigators	Death of Elizabeth
The Puritans (1566 A D)	The Armada	Her Character
The Duke of Norfolk	Its Defeat (1588 A D)	Chief Authors
Babington's Plot	Statesmen of the reign	Continental Events
Trial of Mary Stuart (1586 A D)		

JOY-BELLS pealed and bonfires blazed when Elizabeth, the daughter of Henry VIII and Anne Boleyn, was proclaimed Queen During her sister's reign she had lived chiefly at Hatfield House, nominally free, but really a prisoner As Queen, one of her first measures was the restoration of Protestantism. This work was completed in 1562, when the Forty-two Articles of Cranmer were reduced to Thirty-nine, and the **Church of England** was thus established in its present form The statesman, by whose advice Elizabeth was guided in this change and in all the leading transactions of her reign, was William Cecil, afterwards Lord Burleigh

Scotland, France, Spain, and the Netherlands were the countries with which the foreign policy of Elizabeth was chiefly concerned. The marriage of Mary Queen of Scots with the Dauphin, afterwards Francis II of France, united the first two lands more closely than ever Not content with her double crown, Mary claimed that of England, on the ground that Elizabeth had been declared illegitimate, and that she herself was next heir, being descended from Margaret, eldest daughter of Henry VII. This claim Elizabeth never forgave, and when Mary, who left France a widow of nineteen, fled across the Border after seven stormy years in Scotland, the English Queen cast into prison the rival, who came imploring pity. Soon after the departure of Mary from France there began a civil war, which, like most of the great European wars for a century after the Reformation, was a struggle between Protestants and Catholics. The English Queen sided with the Protestants; and in 1562 the Prince of Condé, leader of the Huguenots, as the French Protestants were called,

put **Havre** into her hands But the fortress was lost to England in less than a year.

Those Protestants, who had fled to the Continent from the flames of Smithfield, now returned. For a time they reunited themselves with the Church of England, but, being pressed to acknowledge the authority of Elizabeth as Supreme Head of the Church, they separated from that body in a few years From their desire to establish a purer form of worship, they received the name of **Puritans.** They objected to the surplice, to the sign of the cross in baptism, to the use of the Liturgy, to the adornment of churches with pictures, statues, or stained windows, and to the government of the Church by bishops The Act of Supremacy and the Act of Uniformity, which were passed soon after Elizabeth came to the throne, were the chief causes of the Puritan secession. The one required all clergymen and those holding offices under Government to take an oath, ascribing to Elizabeth all power in both Church and State of England, and denying the right of any foreign power to meddle with English affairs This law was levelled directly at the Pope, who still claimed jurisdiction in England. The other statute forbade under heavy penalties all worship except by the use of King Edward's Prayer Book Many Catholics suffered death by these laws, and the Puritans, who also refused to be bound by them, were fined and imprisoned in great numbers during the rest of this reign Hence the Puritans are often called *Nonconformists*

1566 A.D.

For more than eighteen years **Mary Stuart,** Queen of Scots, pined in an English prison In 1568 she fled into England. In the following year the Duke of Norfolk, the first nobleman in England, a strict Catholic, and a man of the best character, offered her his hand in marriage It was a dangerous step, provoking the anger of Elizabeth. He was at once committed to the Tower, but was released upon promise that he would give up his design of marrying Mary. However, two years later, the Duke, tempted to renew his plots for the release of the Scottish Queen, entered into a secret correspondence with the Court of Spain. A servant, whom he intrusted with a bag of gold and a letter for Mary's friends in Scotland, carried both to Lord Burleigh. Treasonable papers were found under the mats and tiles of Norfolk's house. He was arrested, tried, and executed.

1572 A.D.

All attempts, by plot or by treaty, to deliver Mary from her prison, failed. The hearts of all the Catholics in England were

in her favour, and this made Elizabeth dread her escape exceedingly A plot to assassinate the Queen and place Mary on the throne brought matters to a crisis The chief conspirator was Antony Babington, a gentleman of Derbyshire Letters were conveyed to the Scottish Queen through a chink in the wall of her prison by a brewer who brought ale to the household. These, with her replies, fell by treachery into the hands of Francis Walsingham, Secretary of State Fourteen conspirators were arrested and executed, and it was resolved to try Mary for her share in the plot

In **Fotheringay Castle,** Northamptonshire, the trial took place, before thirty-six royal commissioners At first Mary refused to be tried, but afterwards consented, lest her refusal might seem to show conscious guilt The chief charge against her was that she had approved of the plot to assassinate Elizabeth The chief evidence against her was that of her two secretaries, who had been seized by Elizabeth's order, and who swore, though not in Mary's presence, that she had received from Babington the letter of which a copy was produced at the trial, and that the answers, also produced in copies, had been written by themselves at her command In her defence she denied the charge, declaring that she was innocent of everything but a natural desire to regain her freedom. She had no advocate to plead for her Alone but fearless she stood before her accusers, her famous beauty dimmed by long imprisonment Clearly and readily she replied to every question, and demanded to be confronted with the witnesses This was refused, and soon after she was doomed to die

The warrant for her execution was delayed by the reluctance—pretended or real—of Elizabeth Meanwhile Henry III of France pleaded hard for the condemned Queen. James VI of Scotland too made a feeble effort to save his mother. At last, however, Elizabeth signed the warrant, and sent her secretary, Davison, with it to the Chancellor, that it might receive the Great Seal Recalling this order next day, she found that she was too late The seal had been affixed, and the warrant was soon on the way to Fotheringay. There, in one of the castle halls in the grey light of a February morning, **Mary Stuart,** aged forty-five, was beheaded. Whatever may have been her faults and follies, she received a tenfold punishment in the slow torture of her nineteen years' captivity; and her violent death is a foul stain on the memory of Elizabeth.

1587 A.D.

The naval glory of England dawned in this reign; and a brilliant dawn it was. Spain, Holland, and Portugal had led the

way into unknown seas, and England was not backward in following the example Sir John Hawkins traced the coast of Guinea. Martin Frobisher braved the icebergs of the Arctic Ocean Sir Francis Drake, doubling Cape Horn, crossed the broad Pacific to the shores of India, and sailed home round the Cape of Good Hope, thus winning the renown of being the first English commander who had sailed round the world Sir Walter Raleigh colonized the American coast, and with a courtier's tact called the settlement Virginia Amid the blessings thus conferred upon men evils unhappily grew up These early navigators did not hesitate to commit piracy when a Spanish treasure-ship fell in their way And Hawkins established the African slave-trade

Perhaps the greatest event of Elizabeth's reign was the defeat of the **Invincible Armada.** Ever since that achievement England has been "Queen of the Seas" The Armada was a great fleet sent by Philip II of Spain to conquer England Philip's grand object was the destruction of Protestantism; but, besides, he was smarting under the loss of many treasure-ships, and it is said that his vanity was wounded by Elizabeth's refusal to marry him One hundred and thirty-two large ships left Lisbon, having on board besides their crews nearly 20,000 soldiers and 2630 cannons of brass At the same time Alexander Farnese, Duke of Parma, the greatest soldier of the age, moved to the coast of Flanders near Dunkirk, ready with 40,000 men to second the invasion The admiral of the Armada was the Duke of Medina Sidonia, who was elected to that post upon the sudden death of the first-appointed leader, Santa Croce. The Royal Navy of England then consisted of only thirty-six sail, and these were of small size But nobles, merchants, citizens came with their money to the Queen, and equipped vessels at their own expense, and the Catholics of England united cordially with their Protestant countrymen in preparing to defend the shores. A fleet of 191 ships soon rode on the English waters; and, though the vessels were small, the best seamen and the bravest hearts in England were on board Lord Howard of Effingham was the admiral; and under him served Drake, Hawkins, and Frobisher.[1] The English army, consisting of 130,000 men without the London levies, was divided into three parts one guarded the southern coast, another was stationed at Tilbury to defend the capital, while the third was reserved to oppose the landing.

1588 A.D.

Storms delayed the Armada, but at length the English admiral

stationed at Plymouth received news of their approach, and, upon putting to sea, saw them stretching in a crescent form seven miles broad. Keeping at a distance, lest the Spaniards might board his vessels, he poured in his shot with great effect. The Spaniards replied with heavy guns, but from the height of their decks their shot passed clear over the English ships. Slowly the Armada bore up the Channel towards Calais, the English fleet following. Off Calais they anchored, waiting for the Duke of Parma, who lay cooped up in Flanders, watched keenly by the Dutch; but eight **fire-ships**, sent amongst them one night by the English admiral, caused them to cut their cables in alarm. Effingham was not the man to lose the golden moment He fell at once upon the disordered fleet, and destroyed twelve ships. The great Armada was now in full flight They could not return by the Strait of Dover, for the wind was against them, and the English ships lay in the adjacent harbours The only way to Spain lay through the Pentland Firth, and the storms of those wild seas completed the ruin The Orkneys, the Hebrides, the coasts of Antrim, Mayo, and Kerry were strewn with the wrecks of the ill-fated vessels Only fifty-three shattered hulks reached Spain.

During forty years of her reign Elizabeth was guided by the advice of **Lord Burleigh**, a wise and cool-tempered statesman He rose to be Lord Treasurer, and by his policy greatly increased the revenue of the kingdom. He died in 1598 Sir Francis Walsingham, too, as Secretary of State, enjoyed much of Elizabeth's favour. The chief favourite of her middle life was the Earl of Leicester, in whose breast her evident fondness kindled the ambitious hope that she meant to marry him. This ambition and its evil effects form the groundwork of Scott's tale of *Kenilworth*, of which castle Leicester was lord.

But the favourite of her old age deserves a longer notice. This was the rash and daring Robert Devereux, **Earl of Essex**. In 1589 he joined an expedition, which vainly attempted to seat Antonio on the throne of Portugal. Again in 1596 he led the English soldiers to the capture of Cadiz. The Queen was very fond of him, and forgave him much. Once, disputing with her about the choice of a governor for Ireland, he turned his back upon her with scorn She promptly gave him a box on the ear; and then, forgetting that she was a woman and a Queen, he laid his hand on his sword, and declared that he would not have taken such usage even from her father. In spite of this he was appointed to command the English forces in Ireland, where Hugh

O'Neill, Earl of Tyrone, was in rebellion Not succeeding, he returned to England without the Queen's leave, was disgraced, and imprisoned But the fondness of Elizabeth soon gave him liberty again, and then with the Earl of Southampton he strove to raise the Londoners in revolt For this he was tried and condemned to death It is said that he might still have been pardoned, if a ring, given to him by the Queen in some moment of tenderness, to be sent to her when any danger hung over him, had reached her hand It never came, **1601** and he was beheaded in the Tower, aged thirty- A.D. four

Some two years later, the Queen was entreated to visit the Countess of Nottingham, who was dying This lady confessed that Essex had intrusted the ring to her to be carried to Elizabeth, but that she, influenced by her husband, a bitter enemy of the Earl, had not delivered it Rage and grief seized the Queen, and it is said that she shook the dying Countess in her bed Never happy since the death of Essex, she sank under this blow Ten days and nights she lay on cushions on the floor, taking neither food nor medicine, and then, falling into a heavy sleep, she died She was in her seventieth year

Firm, resolute, watchful, and self-controlled, Elizabeth as a Queen has had few equals among the sovereigns of England She was extravagant in nothing but dress, and she thus was able to pay off heavy debts left owing by her predecessors. Her temper was violent, and she desired to be absolute Queen, but she knew her people, and, if she found that she had asked too much, she prudently withdrew her demand Her conduct when the Parliament of 1601 opposed the monopolies, which for forty years she had been granting, serves to show her wisdom. She had granted these unjust patents by scores Such things as iron, oil, coal, starch, leather, and glass, could be had only from the privileged dealers, who charged exorbitant prices. When the Queen saw the temper of the people, "she declined the contest, put herself at the head of the reforming party, thanked the Commons in touching and dignified language for their tender care of the general weal, and brought back to herself the hearts of the people." Vanity was her great fault; and the picture drawn by historians of "Good Queen Bess," as she has been called, coquetting in her old age with Raleigh and Essex, and believing all their tender speeches, makes her rather ridiculous in our eyes.

The reign of Elizabeth is one of the brightest periods of our literature Then Edmund Spenser wrote the *Faerie Queene* among the moors of Kilcolman, then flourished Philip Sidney, author of a prose romance called *Arcadia*, then were written the plays of William Shakspere, then the early studies of Francis Bacon laid the foundation of the modern philosophy, and Richard Hooker, in his *Ecclesiastical Polity*, wrote English prose with a dignified eloquence it had never worn before

The rise of the Dutch Republic under William of Nassau, Prince of Orange, and the massacre of St Bartholomew in France (1572), were important Continental events during Elizabeth's reign Both were connected with the Reformation The alliance of Elizabeth contributed much to the triumph of William The massacres in France and the cruelties of Alva in the Netherlands drove hundreds of work-people to settle in Britain Those from France were skilled in silk-weaving, those from Flanders were chiefly dyers and dressers of woollen cloth, and a marked improvement in these two branches of our manufactures may thus be traced to those events.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

MARY,	began to reign 1542	FERDINAND I.,	began to reign 1558
JAMES VI.,	1567	MAXIMILIAN II.,	1564
		RODOLPH II.,	1576
HENRY II.,	1547		
FRANCIS II.,	1559		
CHARLES IX.,	1560		
HENRY III.,	1574	PAUL IV.,	1555
HENRY IV.,	1589	PIUS IV.,	1559
		PIUS V.,	1566
SPAIN.		GREGORY XIII.,	1572
PHILIP II.,	1556	SIXTUS V.,	1585
PHILIP III.,	1598	GREGORY XIV.,	1590
		GREGORY XV.,	—
TURKEY.		INNOCENT IX.,	1591
SOLYMAN II.,	1520	CLEMENT VIII.,	1592
SELIM II.,	1566		
AMURATH III.	1574		
MOHAMMED III.,	1595		

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

Battle of Dreux (France),	1562	Union of Utrecht, ...	1579
Battle of Jarnac,	1569	William the Silent murdered,	1584
Union of Lublin (Poland),	—	Henry IV. becomes King of France,	1589
Battle of Lepanto (Turks defeated),	1571	Battle of Ivry (France),	1590
Massacre of St Bartholomew,	1572	Edict of Nantes,	1598
Siege of Leyden (Holland), . .	1574	Line of Ruric ends (Russia),	1598

CHAPTER VI

STUART SOVEREIGNS OF SCOTLAND.

From 1371 A D. to 1603 A D —232 years —9 Sovereigns.

ROBERT II. (grandson of Robert Bruce), began to reign	1371	**JAMES III.** (son), began to reign	1460
ROBERT III (son),	1390	**JAMES IV** (son),	1488
JAMES I. (second son),	1406	**JAMES V.** (son),	1513
JAMES II. (only son),	1437	**MARY** (daughter),	1542
		JAMES VI and I of England (son)	1567
Union of the Crowns of England and Scotland			1603

Battle of Chevy-Chase (1388 A.D.)	Battle of Sauchie Burn (1488 A.D.)	George Wishart (1546 A.D.) Preaching of Knox
Highland Combat at Perth	Battle of Flodden (1513 A.D.)	Mary Dethroned (1567 A.D.)
Battle of Harlaw (1411 A.D.)	Patrick Hamilton, 1528 A.D.	Gowrie Conspiracy (1600 A.D.)
Good Laws of James I.		

FROM the marriage of Marjorie Bruce, daughter of the great Robert, with Walter the Steward of Scotland, sprang the line of Stuart monarchs. Their son, **Robert II.**, was the first of the famous but unhappy race. During his reign was fought
1388 the battle of **Chevy-Chase** between the Percys and the A D Douglases. This contest, so celebrated in poetry, was excited by a raid which Earl Douglas made into England. Before Newcastle he captured the pennon of Hotspur, who with a force overtook him at Otterbourne, a village of Redesdale near Newcastle. Under the light of an August moon the lances crossed. Douglas fell, mortally hurt with three spear-wounds, but, at his own dying request, a cloak was cast over his body, and his men, ignorant of their leader's fall, charged again and again, till victory crowned their valour. Percy was carried a prisoner to Scotland. Robert II. died in 1390. He was a pleasant and well-meaning monarch, but his hand was too feeble to control the turbulent nobility, of whom Scotland was then full.

His son John then assumed the sceptre under the name of **Robert III.**; for Baliol had been called John, and the name was ominous of evil. He was a gentle prince, and of delicate health, having been lamed in his youth by the kick of a horse. His brother, created Duke of Albany, therefore, managed the affairs of state. Robert's eldest son, David Duke of Rothesay, a wild

and headstrong prince, defied the power of Albany; but the Regent was more than a match for the reckless youth, who, with his father's consent, was imprisoned in Falkland Castle as a check upon his profligacy, but was soon found there dead with a frame wasted to a skeleton

A well-known event of this reign was the combat on the North Inch of Perth between the clans Kay and Chattan Thirty combatants were selected on each side, but at the appointed hour one of the clan Chattan was missing. Henry Gow, a smith of Perth, offered to fill the vacant place for half a merk When the fight was over, all the sixty save eleven lay dead or wounded. The Lowlands were thus relieved from some of their deadliest Highland foes These events are embodied in Scott's tale, *The Fair Maid of Perth*

To save his surviving son James from the schemes of Albany, Robert arranged to send him to France, but off the coast of Norfolk the vessel was boarded by the sailors of Henry IV, and James, a boy of fourteen, was lodged in the Tower of London This loss killed the gentle Robert, who died at Rothesay in 1406 A.D.

James I. remained in England for nineteen years, during thirteen of which Albany was Regent The chief events were the execution of an English priest named John Resby at Perth in 1407 for Lollardism, and the battle of **Harlaw** in 1411, which decided the superiority of the Scottish Kings over the Lords of the Isles Donald, Lord of the Isles, laid claim to Ross, and ravaged that district when opposed He then broke into the Garioch, which roused the Earl of Mar Aided by the men of Aberdeen, this noble encountered the Highland host at Harlaw, where the Ury joins the Don It was a bloody day—"the red Harlaw." With axe and dirk the Highlanders faced the mailed knights But the victory rested with the latter, and Donald was driven to the islands **1411** A.D.

Albany died in 1419, leaving the Regency to his son Murdoch, under whose weak rule nobles and people fell into the wildest disorder In this condition James I found his subjects, when in 1424 he returned to his country. His captivity had been of great use to him He had studied the English laws and constitution, and had acquired great excellence in poetry and music. His chief poem, entitled *The King's Quhair*, describes the first glimpse he caught from his window in Windsor of Lady Jane Beaufort, afterwards his Queen, who was walking early on a May morning among the flowers. The worst evil he had to grapple

with, on his return, was the utter contempt of law, which pervaded all classes. But he resolutely set himself to his toilsome work, saying, "There is no spot so wild but the key shall keep the castle, and the bracken bush the cow" Many of the best English laws relating to wages, weights and measures, and police, were enacted in his Parliaments, drawn up in the spoken language of the land Regular taxes were levied, and large estates, foolishly given away during the late reigns, were reclaimed This was the most dangerous part of his task, and to enforce obedience he was compelled to put many nobles to death At Stirling he executed the Duke of Albany, son of his "false uncle" He called regular Parliaments, established *wappinschaws* (military inspection and drill), encouraged archery, and repressed the turbulent Highlanders In 1431 Paul Crawar, a Bohemian physician, was burned at St Andrews for preaching doctrines similar to those of Resby

The iron vigour of James led to his murder, which happened at Perth Early in 1437, while he was residing in the Dominican monastery. conspirators, admitted by the treachery of Stewart the chamberlain, burst by night into his private chamber He tore p a plank, and crouched in a vault beneath Discovered there, he was pierced with sixteen gashes after a gallant struggle for life. Sir Robert Graham and Sir John Hall were prominent among the murderers The foundation of the University of Saint Andrews by Papal Bull in 1412 was a notable event of this reign

James II., surnamed "Fiery Face" from a red mark on one cheek, was only six years old when his father died During his minority factions convulsed the land Livingstone, the Governor, who held Stirling Castle and Crichton the Chancellor, whose stronghold was Edinburgh, contended for the custody of the royal boy, but at length the house of Douglas became ascendant, and at one time threatened to overturn the throne of the Stuarts. To break the power of his dreaded foe, James, when grown to manhood, stooped to murder. He invited the Earl to sup with him at Stirling, and, when the meal was over, while they were conversing in an inner room, stung by the insolence of the haughty noble, he stabbed him with his own hand. From this crime sprang a war with England, during which James was killed by the bursting of a cannon at the siege of **Roxburgh Castle**, a fortress whose ruins may be seen above Kelso Bridge on the tongue of land formed by the junction of Tweed and Teviot. Cannon, called "war crackies," were quite new to the Scots, and were then made of iron bars bound together with hoops.

Once more Scotland was plunged into the horrors of a minority, for **James III.** was now only eight years of age The wise rule of Bishop Kennedy, who founded a college at St Andrews, kept Scotland safe and prosperous while he lived But after his death the Boyds and the Hamiltons disturbed the peace of the land by their constant feuds When James grew up, he displayed a feeble and indolent character, and that worst vice of a sovereign,—a desire to abandon all cares of government to unworthy favourites The nobles saw with anger an architect, a fencing-master, and a tailor enjoying the confidence of their King At length, headed by the Earl of Angus, who derived his name of "Bell-the-Cat" from his share in the transaction, they seized Robert Cochrane, whom James had created Earl of Mar, but whom they scornfully called "the mason," and hanged him with five others on the bridge of Lauder They soon broke out in revolt, headed by the King's eldest son, Prince James, and encouraged by Henry VII. of England A battle was fought in Stirlingshire, within a mile of the famous field of Bannockburn, where James was worsted While galloping from the field, he was thrown from his horse, and, while he lay bruised by the weight of his armour in a cottage close by, he was stabbed to the heart by a straggler from the battle-field

James IV. now held the throne His reign was a momentous time Instead of using force he swayed the nobles by attracting them to the gaieties of the court Fine ships—the *Flower* and the *Yellow Carvel* of Sir Andrew Wood of Largo, and the *Great Michael*, commanded by Sir Andrew Barton—floated on Scottish waters. In this reign Gavin Douglas, Bishop of Dunkeld, contributed a translation of Virgil and other works to Scottish literature In 1502 the Earl of Surrey escorted the Princess Margaret of England to Lamberton Kirk, where this bride of their King was transferred to the guardianship of the Scottish lords This notable union of Rose and Thistle, commemorated in poetry by William Dunbar, led in 1603 to the union of the English and Scottish crowns Another most important event of this reign was the introduction of Printing into Scotland in 1509 by Walter Chepman, who received much encouragement from James.

The immediate cause of the war, which ended in the battle of **Flodden,** was an attack by the English upon the ships of Andrew Barton, a Scottish merchant Barton was killed, and his ship, the *Lion*, was carried as a prize into the Thames. The Earl of Surrey led an English army towards the north. The armies came face to face on the banks of the Till, a tributary of the

Tweed James, with sixty cannon, was strongly posted on Flodden Hill, a spur of the Cheviot range The grand mistake committed by James was allowing the English to cross the Till unharmed, when with his artillery he might have torn their battalions to fragments as they were crowding over the narrow bridge The error was never retrieved Surrey by a flank march placed his army between the Scots and Scotland Setting fire to their huts, the Scots rushed to outstrip their foes, who were marching on Branxton From four in the afternoon till the night fell the battle raged In vain the S ottish centre formed in a ring, resisted the English spear and shaft Though never pierced, it inclosed, when night fell, the dead bodies of King James and the flower of his land.

Sept 9, 1513 A D

James V.—A long minority again convulsed unhappy Scotland, for the King was only three years old Struggles for the Regency among the leading nobles filled up thirteen stormy years. Sir David Lindsay the poet undertook the education of the royal boy, who ultimately fell into the custody of the Douglases, and was confined in Falkland Palace Thence (1528) he escaped by night to Stirling in the disguise of a groom, having given out that he meant to go hunting next day He was then sixteen, and had been in custody for two years

An event of deeper interest marks the same year The first of those whose names may be read on the Martyrs' Monument of St Andrews—Patrick Hamilton, Henry Forrest, George Wishart, and Walter Mill—then suffered death by fire in defence of the Protestant faith The leaven of the Reformation was working fast, and vainly James strove to destroy its rising power In order to cement his alliance with the Catholics of France, he chose Mary of Guise to be his second wife In 1532 the Court of Session was established, with ten advocates and fifteen judges, of whom eight were clergymen It is this monarch who figures in the *Lady of the Lake* as James Fitz James His love of adventure and disguise led him freely among the people, who called him "The King of the Commons ' and the "Royal Gaberlunzie" (*i e*, Beggar)

A quarrel with England closed the reign of James V Henry VIII came to York in order to persuade the Scottish King to assist him in his schemes against the Church of Rome, but James, restrained by his courtiers, failed to appear at that city. Henry in a rage declared war James had reached Fala Moor, when his nobles turned against him and refused to fight Ten thousand Scots, however, were led to the Esk by Oliver Sinclair, the King's

favourite, but they fled before three hundred English horsemen, and many of them perished in **Solway Moss** (1542 A D). James reached Falkland, and lay down to die of vexation. A low fever wasted him away, and he drew his last breath only a few days after his daughter—the celebrated **Mary Queen of Scots**—was born. Among his last words was a mournful prophecy of the troubles overhanging the unconscious girl-baby "It [the crown] came with a lass, and with a lass it will go"

The most prominent men in Scotland at this time were **Cardinal Beatoun** and the Earl of Arran Both sought the Regency, Arran, though the Cardinal produced a parchment, which he asserted to be the King's last will, gained it

Arran was at first inclined to favour the Reformation, while Beatoun exerted all his power to uphold the Church of Rome. In 1543 the Scottish Parliament permitted the free use of the Bible The desire of Henry VIII to marry his son Edward to Mary of Scotland has been mentioned elsewhere When the Scotch broke the wedding treaty, already sealed at Holyrood, English ships sacked Leith and Edinburgh, and an English army met the Scots at Ancrum Moor (1544 A.D), only, however, to meet with a sharp defeat

George Wishart, a preacher accused of heresy, was marked for punishment by Beatoun For a time, John Knox, tutor in the house of Longniddry, carried a sword beside this soldier of the Cross. Wishart's last sermon was preached at Haddington, near which he was seized. A few weeks later he was burned opposite the gate of St Andrews Castle, while the Cardinal lay upon cushions above the portal gazing on the spectacle This was in March 1546. In May a band of men, led by James Melville and Norman Leslie, broke into the castle and killed Beatoun, whose bleeding body they hung out over the battlements in sight of the citizens.

The girl-Queen, sent for safety to her mother's land, married there the Dauphin Francis, afterwards King Francis II of France; but his early death compelled her to return to Scotland in 1561 She had been educated as a Catholic in the gay and frivolous Court of France. Her Scottish subjects had begun to look with horror upon tastes and habits, which she thought harmless and pleasant The master-spirit of the nation was **John Knox**, the pupil of Wishart and the companion of Calvin.

Born in 1505, and educated as a Catholic priest, Knox was thirty-eight when he was converted to Protestantism At St. Andrews he preached his first sermon. Ten months after

Beatoun's death he took refuge with his pupils in the castle of St Andrews, which was held by the slayers of the Cardinal When the fortress yielded to the Regent, who was aided by a French fleet, Knox was condemned to the galleys for life, and was chained to an oar; but after nineteen months his chains were loosed at the request of Edward VI, in whose court he lived for some time The harsh treatment of the Protestants under Mary I of England drove him once more to the Continent Meanwhile Mary of Guise, mother of the Queen, and a stanch friend of the Roman Church, was Regent of Scotland, while the Protestant nobles, under the title *Lords of the Congregation*, strove for the Reformation France aided Mary; England supported the Reformers Through years of exile at Frankfort, Geneva, and elsewhere, Knox cherished the hope of again preaching the Protestant doctrines at St Andrews, long the fortress of the Catholic faith in Scotland His hope was realized On the 10th of June 1559, from the cathedral pulpit of that ancient city he poured forth his fiery eloquence, which struck through the land like an electric shock. Throughout all Fife, and soon throughout all Scotland, images were broken, altars were shivered, mass-books were torn, priestly vestments were rent into shreds He afterwards boldly denounced the celebration of mass in the chapel-royal of Holyrood, which drew upon him the anger of Mary

Mary in Scotland (1561–68) —The gulf between Mary and her people grew wider. Her private life was open to suspicion. She introduced the reckless gaieties and frivolities of France into her Scottish Court By her marriage (1565 A D) with her cousin, Lord Darnley, she lost favour with her natural brother, the Earl of Moray, once Prior of St Andrews, and now leader of the Protestant party Then followed her fondness for David Rizzio, an Italian musician, which excited the jealousy of Darnley, and thus led to the murder of the Italian in Holyrood. In March 1566, Darnley, Lord Ruthven, and others entered the Queen's chamber in Holyrood by a private stair, and found her at supper with Rizzio. Dragging him into the next room, they slew him with more than fifty wounds. In the following February her husband, Darnley, who was just recovering from small-pox, was murdered in the **Kirk of Field**; the house—a lonely building standing where the College of Edinburgh now rises—being blown up at midnight. Bothwell was strongly suspected of this crime, and underwent a mockery of trial; and yet, three months later, Mary married him. Whether the Queen was guilty or not

of the crimes laid to her charge—and that can now be known only to the great Searcher of hearts—these events estranged from her the affections of her people The nobles took up arms At Carberry Hill, near Musselburgh, the Queen's army deserted her, and she was forced to surrender (15th June 1567) A small island in Lochleven became her prison, where she signed deeds, abdicating in favour of her son, then a year old, and appointing the Earl of Moray Regent of the kingdom. Bothwell fled to Orkney, thence to Denmark; where, ten years later, he died mad and in prison. **1567** A.D.

After eleven months of captivity Mary escaped by the aid of Willie Douglas, who lifted the key of the castle off the supper-table of the captain in a napkin Six thousand men gathered to the Queen's banner Moray mustered four thousand At **Langside** near Glasgow a battle took place, which in less than an hour ruined Mary's cause (May 13, 1568) Riding away to Dundrennan Abbey, she crossed the Solway in a fishing boat, and cast herself on the compassion of Elizabeth, in whose reign the rest of her sad story may be read She had spent nearly seven years in Scotland, nineteen were to waste wearily away in English prisons

For nearly three years Moray, known as the Good Regent, held power in a troubled and miserable land He was shot by Hamilton of Bothwellhaugh, from a window in the main street of Linlithgow (January 23, 1570) The Earls of Lennox, Mar, and Morton were then Regents in succession In the latter part of 1572 John Knox died.

James VI. educated by the celebrated George Buchanan, grew up a man of learning, but a pedant In 1578, though only twelve years of age, he began to reign in person. From the hands of two favourites, whom he created Duke of Lennox and Earl of Arran, the young King was rescued for a time by some of the nobles who seized him in Ruthven Castle in Perthshire (1582). This seizure is known as the *Raid of Ruthven* He married Anne, daughter of the Danish King. The strange **Gowrie** conspiracy (1600) was the most striking event of his reign. While hunting at Falkland, the King was induced to visit Gowrie House in Perth by a false story, that a man carrying a pot of foreign gold had been arrested near that city. He was well received and entertained by Earl Gowrie, but after dinner, in a small room, where stood an armed man, he was assailed by the Earl's brother, Alexander Ruthven, who held a dagger to his breast, and strove to tie his hands. James struggled and cried

for help. Three of his attendants burst in. Ruthven was slain; and the Earl, who upon hearing the noise rushed in sword in hand, met the same fate The whole story is wrapped in mystery. During this reign Andrew Melville (1545–1622), who holds rank next to Knox among the Reformers of Scotland, took a leading share in the contest between the General Assembly and the King, who vainly tried to establish Prelacy in his realm.

The death of Elizabeth in 1603 made James the unquestioned King of the whole island Sir Robert Carey rode to Edinburgh with the news The Queen died at Richmond on Thursday morning at three o'clock, and he reached Holyrood on Saturday evening.

IRISH HISTORY FROM 1400 A D. TO 1603 A D.

Duke of York Viceroy
Poynings' Law (1495 A D)
Silken Thomas.
King of Ireland (1542 A D)
Desmond Defeated.
Sir John Perrott
Failure of Essex
Conquest of Ireland (1602 A D)

In the reign of Henry IV the Scotch invaded Ulster, from which they were never afterwards entirely dislodged. There were at this time three opposing races in Ireland, all hating one another, the native Celts, the Anglo-Irish settlers, and the newly arrived English, who treated the others with contempt

A bright spot in early Irish history was the Viceroyalty of Richard **Duke of York,** who was Henry the Sixth's rival in the Wars of the Roses. By making a Butler and a Geraldine, heads of the great opposing houses of Ormond and Kildare, act as sponsors for his son, the Duke of Clarence, he united them in *gossipred* and appeased their feud ' His deputy reduced the turbulent septs of O'Connor and O'Neill to submission ; and, when he assumed the White Rose on English battle-fields, numbers of Irish soldiers followed his banner. During the reign of Henry VI English rule extended scarcely beyond the county of Dublin.

Ireland wore the **White Rose** faithfully, till the cause of the York faction perished. The island was the cradle of the two impostures, by which Lambert Simnel and Perkin Warbeck assailed the throne of Henry VII Both of these pretenders found in Ireland a favourable stage for their first appearance.

1495 A.D. The year 1495 formed an important era in Irish history, because **Poynings' Law,** which took its name from the Lord-Deputy of Ireland at the time, was enacted. This measure tightened the grasp of the English sovereign

upon the island. Its main enactments were:—(1) That all statutes hitherto passed in England should now become law in Ireland, and, (2) That no Parliament should be held in Ireland until the reasons for it, and the laws to be proposed, had been approved of in London.

Under Henry VII the **Earl of Kildare** was made Lord-Deputy At the instigation of his foes, the Butlers, he was at first sent to London for trial, on charge of aiding Warbeck "Choose counsel," said the King. "Yes," said Kildare, "I choose the ablest in the realm. I take your Highness as my counsel against these false knaves" He was accused of burning the church at Cashel "Spare your evidence," he cried, "I *did* burn the church, but I thought the bishop had been in it." Cried his accusers, "All Ireland cannot rule this Earl" Whereupon Henry, admiring his bold wit, exclaimed, "Then he shall rule all Ireland" By the victory of *Knoctow* near Galway Kildare reduced Connaught to submission

His son Gerald was a splendid figure in the train of Henry VIII. at the Field of the Cloth of Gold, but, becoming Viceroy, this noble afterwards fell under suspicion of aiming at independent power, and was confined in the Tower of London His son Thomas, "**The Silken Knight,**" rose in rebellion, having flung down the Sword of State before the Privy Council then sitting at St Mary's Abbey in Dublin Having failed to seize Dublin Castle, Silken Thomas was besieged in Maynooth, and was betrayed into the hands of the English. Five of his uncles, arrested at a banquet, to which the Lord-Deputy had invited them, were executed with him in England.

Under Henry VIII religious strife began to convulse Ireland The Irish Parliament acknowledged the King's supremacy, and renounced the authority of Rome, but the mass of the clergy declined to follow this example O'Neill, encouraged by a missive from Rome, raised his banner at Tara, but he was defeated at Bellahoe on the borders of Meath.

Henry VIII then assumed the title, **King of Ireland.** Earlier sovereigns had claimed only the minor name of Lord. Henry created O'Neill Earl of Tyrone, and con- **1542** ferred similar titles on other nobles In course of the A.D. attempted reformation much violence was displayed, the ancient churches of Clonmacnoise by the Shannon, in particular, being dismantled by the garrison of Athlone.

The principal Irish event under Mary was the extermination of the revolted septs of Leix and Offaly, and the reduction of

their territory into the *King's County* and the *Queen's County*—names given in honour of Philip and Mary

Reign of Elizabeth.—The Conquest of Ireland, begun in the time of Henry II, was completed during the reign of Elizabeth Shane (John) **O'Neill**, the Earl of Tyrone, went to London with a retinue, wearing gleaming breastplates over vests of saffron linen. Elizabeth received him into favour, but on his return to Ireland he rose in revolt, because a garrison had been placed in Derry After he had burned the Cathedral of Armagh, a combination of chiefs joined the Government against him At the instigation of the English governor, a Scottish chief, settled in Antrim, to whom O'Neill had gone for protection, caused him to be assassinated

What O'Neill was to the north, **Desmond** was to the south of Ireland. Suspected of having brought some Spaniards into that part of the island, he met the Government in battle at *Kilmallock*, where he was defeated Munster was then ravaged Desmond made a vain stand at Youghal, but his estates were confiscated, Raleigh and the poet Spenser being among the Englishmen who received large grants of the forfeited territory Hunted through the moorlands, Desmond, old and feeble, was at last tracked to a wretched cabin, and was there slain.

Sir John Perrott (1584) ruled Ireland more mercifully and prosperously than most of his red-handed predecessors He made roads and built bridges The founding of a University at Dublin was his idea but it was not realized, in the establishment of Trinity College, until the time of his successor (1591 A D)

In the north an O'Neill rose again, and laid siege to the fort of Blackwater The battle of Armagh resulted in favour of the Irish, and when Elizabeth, resolved to crush this daring rebellion at a blow, sent her favourite **Essex** over with 20,000 soldiers, the rash youth, instead of proceeding against Tyrone, as he had been ordered, ravaged Munster, already desolate, and had his army so mutilated by desultory attacks, as he passed northward, that he found himself too weak for executing the purpose of his expedition How he returned to England without leave, and lost the favour of the Queen, may be read in the story of her reign.

It was reserved for Charles Blount, **Lord Mountjoy**, to complete the subjugation of Ireland By skilful intrigues he weakened O'Neill, bribing some of the smaller chiefs to combine against him, and terrifying others by merciless ravage of their lands. The insurgent chief looked eagerly to Spain for aid; but

Philip, recently crippled by the defeat of the Armada, could send him but slight assistance. Two thousand Spaniards landed at Kinsale, but were almost immediately blockaded there by the Lord-Deputy. O'Neill marched to the rescue, but Mountjoy, anticipating the attack, surprised the Irish army, and scattered it in flight. The desolation of Ulster brought O'Neill to his knees, and shortly before the death of Elizabeth he made abject submission. His rebellion had lasted for seven years (1595–1602).

CHAPTER VII.

SOCIAL CONDITION OF THE PEOPLE UNDER THE TUDORS

State of the Nation
Houses and Furniture
Style of Living
Dress
Out-door Sports
In-door Amusements
Christmas and May-day
Witchcraft, Astrology, Alchemy
Commerce
Learning

BEFORE the English Reformation crime was fearfully common. In the reign of Henry VIII about two thousand persons were hanged every year for robbery alone In the days of Elizabeth the number was reduced to three or four hundred a year. This remarkable change was, without doubt, owing to the diffusion of God's Word among all classes In the fifth year of Elizabeth the first law to relieve the poor was passed The population was then under five millions, and the Queen's revenue cannot have exceeded £500,000 a year The highest legal interest was 10 per cent. Most of the silver coins now current were in use, crowns, half-crowns, and sixpences having been issued by Edward VI

Houses—The Tudor style of architecture was also called Florid, from the profusion of ornament on the buildings Henry the Seventh's Chapel at Westminster is a good example of the style. Brick and stone were beginning to be used in the houses of the great, and glass windows became common. The poor lived in hovels made of wattles plastered over with clay The fire was in the middle of the floor, and the smoke escaped through a hole in the blackened roof. This was the case in all houses until the reign of Henry VII, when chimneys began to be built. Erasmus, a Professor of Greek at Cambridge under Henry VIII, gives no pleasant description of the floors of the poorer houses. He says "The floors are commonly of clay, strewed with rushes, under which lies unmolested an ancient collection of beer, grease, fragments, bones, spittle, and everything that is nasty." To these uncleanly habits were owing the terrible plagues that fell upon the people. In Elizabeth's time, however, houses were built chiefly of oak. Then, too, many changes were made in furniture. Bedding was much improved. In early Tudor reigns a straw pallet, a coarse sheet and rug, and a log of wood for a bolster were commonly used. The man who lay on a pillow of chaff was thought luxurious. Servants lay on bare

straw. Before Elizabeth reigned, all dishes and spoons were wooden, or, as they were called, "treene" But then pewter platters and silver or tin spoons came into use among farmers and those of the same class. The pewter dishes were at first flat, but were afterwards made deeper and more like basins. About the year 1580 coaches were introduced before that time ladies rode on a pillion behind their chief servants, whom they held by the belt.

Food.—Hops were now first grown in England Cabbages, cherries, gooseberries, plums, apricots, and grapes might be now seen in English gardens. Wheaten bread was eaten more generally, rye and barley being the food only of the poor. Potatoes were brought by Sir Francis Drake from Santa Fè in America, and were first planted in Lancashire. They were introduced into Ireland by Sir Walter Raleigh Raleigh also brought tobacco from the West Indian island Tobago, and taught the English its use. Beef and mutton sold in the time of Henry VIII for a halfpenny per pound, veal and pork for three farthings. But fresh meat was not eaten even by gentlemen, except from Midsummer to Michaelmas

The families of the nobles and gentry still dined in the great hall with all the servants. Half-way down the table stood a large salt-cellar of silver or pewter Above this sat the master, his family, and guests, below it were retainers and servants of all degrees. The nobles kept up princely style. The Earl of Leicester, who owned Kenilworth Castle, kept arms there for 10,000 men There in 1576 he entertained Elizabeth for seventeen days with the most splendid feasts and shows Lord Burleigh, though a self-made noble, had, besides numerous underservants, a train of twenty gentlemen, each worth £1000 a year.

Dress.—The country folk wore a doublet of russet-brown leather. But the court-fashions were, like those of our own day, always changing The courtiers of Henry VIII stuffed their clothes as the King grew fat, in order that their figures might resemble his. Queen Catherine Howard introduced pins from France, and as these were expensive at first, a separate sum for this luxury was granted to the ladies by their husbands. Hence the expression "pin-money." The farthingale was introduced from Spain in Mary's reign. It was a large hooped petticoat. Ruffs of plaited linen were worn by both sexes on the neck and wrists. These were at first held out by pieces of wood or ivory; but in Elizabeth's time they were stiffened with yellow starch. Cloth hose were worn by all, until in the third year of her reign

Elizabeth received a pair of black silk stockings. After this she wore no other kind. Three thousand dresses were found in the wardrobe of this Queen after her death! In the travels of Hentzner, a German, Elizabeth is thus described: "Next came the Queen, in the sixty-fifth year of her age,—very majestic, her face oblong, fair, but wrinkled. She had in her ears two pearls with drops; she wore false hair, and that red; and upon her head she had a small crown She was dressed in white silk, bordered with pearls the size of beans; and over it a mantle of black silk, shot with silver thread Her train was very long, and the end of it borne by a marchioness" The gentlemen wore their hair either short and curled, or set up on end. Their beards were long and pointed The costume of the yeomen of the Queen's guard, commonly called "beef-eaters" (a corruption of *buffetiers*), gives a very good idea of the dress worn by men in the Tudor Period. The growth of flax and hemp, and the invention of cotton thread, supplied materials for stocking-weaving and the making of sail-cloth Rugs, frieze, and baize began to be manufactured largely, and were much improved by the skill of the cloth-dressers, who fled from the persecutions of the Continent

Sports.—The Tournament had now degenerated into a mere sport, for the strength of armies consisted no longer in steel-clad knights. The boat-joust, or tilting on the water, was practised in summer on the Thames and other rivers. Boards were placed across the boats, on which stood men armed with wooden spears and shields, and each, as the boats were rowed swiftly against one another, strove to knock his opponent overboard. Hunting, especially the stag-hunt, has been at all times one of our national sports. During this period the ladies often joined the chase, and shot at the game with arrows. Elizabeth, even in her old age, enjoyed the sport, sometimes every second day. Hawking, though still practised, was now beginning to decline, for the gun was coming into use. There were horse-races for prizes; but the modern system of gambling bets was unknown. Bear-baiting and bull-baiting were favourite sports of the highest in the land. Queen Mary, visiting her sister at Hatfield House, was entertained with a grand bear-baiting. Elizabeth, receiving the Danish ambassador at Greenwich, treated him to a similar sight. The animal was fastened in the middle of an open space, and worried by great English bull-dogs; and, as the dogs were killed or disabled, fresh ones were supplied. The cruel sport of whipping a blinded bear often followed. Even the ladies enjoyed

these sports exceedingly, and we cannot, therefore, wonder that the language of the period was very indelicate and coarse To make the matter worse, the Sunday afternoon was, until the last years of Elizabeth, the favourite time for these amusements The principal country sports were archery, foot-races, and various games of ball. Among the last were tennis, club-ball (the origin of cricket), and *pall-mall*, in which a boxwood ball was struck with a mallet through an iron arch

In-door Games.—Within doors the chief game was *shovel-board*. It was played on a smooth table with flat metal weights. A line was drawn across the table four inches from the edge, and the skill of the play consisted in shoving the weights so as to cross this line without falling over the edge of the table Other games were backgammon, then called *tables*; dice, ruinous in every age, chess, supposed to have come from Asia, and to have been known in this land one hundred years before the Conquest, and cards, invented to relieve the mind of Charles VI, a mad King of France Dancing and music filled up many hours, but the dance always ceased with nightfall,—a custom very different from that now prevailing Although the minstrels and joculators (jugglers) of the Norman days were despised in the Tudor Period, music was much cultivated in private life The fashionable instruments of music were the *cittern* or lute, a kind of guitar; and the *virginals*, a keyed instrument of one string, the original of the harpsichord and the modern piano.

Christmas was the great season of sports There was then a general license, and all sorts of wild tricks were played From the Sovereign to the beggar all England went a-mumming in strange dresses and masks Those who could not get masks rubbed soot on their faces. In every parish a Lord of Misrule was chosen, who, with a troop of idle fellows in green and yellow dresses covered with ribands, went about shouting and playing drums, sometimes even into the churches during Divine service. These mummers wore masks representing the heads of goats, stags, and bulls, and often dressed themselves in skins to resemble savages.

May-day was another festive season in old England. Green branches were pulled immediately after midnight, a Lord and Lady of May were chosen; and dances were kept up round a May-pole crowned with flowers. Connected with these sports was the Morris-dance,—supposed to have been derived from the Moors of Spain. The principal dancer, or foreman of the Morris, was richly dressed; and all had bells attached to their skirts,

arms, and knees. Some assumed characters, such as Robin Hood and Maid Marian, and a hobby-horse was always in the band. This was a light wooden frame, representing the head and body of a horse, with trappings that reached the ground and concealed the legs of a man, who pranced about in imitation of a horse.

Three forms of **superstition** influenced the minds of the people to a great degree during this period. These were Witchcraft, Astrology, and Alchemy. According to the ignorant, all discoveries in science, all inventions in art were the work of the Evil One. Hence Roger Bacon in England and Faust in Germany were believed to have sold themselves to Satan. But poor feeble old women were the most frequent victims of the absurd belief in Witchcraft, and they perished by hundreds. The older and weaker and more withered the object of suspicion, the stronger was the belief that she was a witch. All mischief was ascribed to them If a child took sick and died, some witch had done it if a storm arose, the trembling peasants thought they heard the screaming of the witches, who were riding on broomsticks through the midnight skies. This belief kept its hold of the popular mind up to the present century, and is not even yet extinct in some remote country districts. The astrologers, whose art was more than four thousand years old, pretended that they could foretell events by the stars They were consulted by even the highest and wisest; and were, therefore, honoured and rich Many of our common words, such as "disaster," "ill-starred," had, as their derivation shows, at first a purely astrological meaning. Kindred with Astrology was Alchemy, an art which had for its object the discovery of the *philosopher's stone* and the *elixir of life*. The former was an imaginary substance, which could change all baser metals into gold; the latter, a liquid which would confer on the person drinking it everlasting life and beauty. In this vain pursuit the time, the health, and the fortune of thousands were wasted, without profit to them. But not without profit to us. From Witchcraft came that knowledge of drugs and plants so useful in medicine and the arts; while from the falsehoods of Astrology and Alchemy sprang the truths of Astronomy and Chemistry,—sciences whose noblest use is to bear witness to the infinite wisdom and power of Him, who made the heavens and the earth.

Navigation, geography, and commerce advanced together with rapid strides. Henry VII. laid the foundation of our navy, and, therefore, of our world-wide commerce. English ships were soon ploughing every sea. In Mary's reign the way to Archangel

was discovered, and our Russian trade began. It was, however, in the days of Elizabeth that commerce received its mightiest impulse. Wool, lead, and tin had long been exported to the Continent, but in vessels from the Hanse Towns. Elizabeth built large vessels for this trade, and encouraged the English merchants to improve their ships By granting a charter to the East India Company in 1600, she laid the foundation of our Indian Empire.

A remarkable feature of the period was the revival of learning, especially the study of classics. This was owing chiefly to the Reformation; for the true interpretation of the Bible depends upon a knowledge of Greek, Hebrew, and Latin; and with the spread of the Bible was diffused a desire to know these languages. They have ever since held a leading place in school and college education Erasmus, a Dutchman, was Professor of Greek at Oxford in the reign of Henry VIII., and did much for the advancement of classical study Henry VIII, Edward VI, Jane Grey, and Mary were all good classical scholars, and Elizabeth, even after she became Queen, read, as her tutor, old Roger Ascham, said, "more Greek in a day than a clergyman read of Latin in a week" Christ's Hospital, commonly called the Blue-coat School, was founded by Edward VI, who, besides, endowed many hospitals and grammar schools. In the same reign Rugby School was founded by Sheriffe. During the reigns of the first four Tudors, the language spoken and written in England was Middle English In the reign of Elizabeth arose the New or Modern English, which has continued in use ever since. Previous to the regular tragedies and comedies of Marlowe and Shakspere, there appeared short plays, called Interludes The most successful writer of these was John Heywood, who lived at the court of Henry VIII. To ridicule and censure the Catholic clergy seems to have been his chief object.

LEADING AUTHORS OF THE TUDOR PERIOD

MIDDLE ENGLISH.

SIR THOMAS MORE, (1480–1535)—prose writer—Lord Chancellor—chief works, *Utopia*, a fanciful scheme of perfect government, written first in Latin, and the *Life and Reign of Edward V*—beheaded by Henry VIII.

HENRY HOWARD, Earl of Surrey—(1516–1547)—poet—refiner of English verse—introduced the *Sonnet* from Italy—wrote the first English blank-verse in some translations from *Virgil's Æneid*—beheaded by Henry VIII.

WILLIAM TYNDALE, (1477–1536)—studied at Oxford—translated the *New Testament* (1526)—strangled and burned near Antwerp in 1536.

THOMAS CRANMER, (1489–1556)—Archbishop of Canterbury—editor of the *Book of Common Prayer*, a Book of *Twelve Homilies*, and the *Great Bible* (1540)—burned at Oxford in 1556

JOHN FOXE, (1517–1587)—born at Boston—author of *Book of Martyrs*—prebend of Salisbury under Elizabeth.

NEW OR MODERN ENGLISH

THOMAS SACKVILLE, (1536–1608)—Lord Buckhurst—joint-author of *Gorboduc*, the earliest English tragedy—author of the best portions of the *Mirror of Magistrates* (1559)

SIR PHILIP SIDNEY, (1554–1586)—wrote a prose romance called *Arcadia*, also *Defence of Poesie*—killed at the battle of Zutphen in the Netherlands.

EDMUND SPENSER, (1552–1599)—second great English poet—born in London—lived at Kilcolman, county of Cork—chief work, *The Faerie Queene*, an allegorical poem, written in a stanza of nine lines, called "the Spenserian"—Sheriff of Cork—died at Westminster

RICHARD HOOKER, (1553–1600)—rector of Boscomb in Wilts—author of *Ecclesiastical Polity*, the first work in English prose, adorned with figures of speech

CHRISTOPHER MARLOWE, (1563–1593)—established blank-verse in plays—author of *Tamburlaine, Faustus, Jew of Malta, Edward II* —killed in a tavern scuffle

WILLIAM SHAKSPERE, (1564–1616)—the prince of dramatists—born and died at Stratford-on-Avon—an actor—lived chiefly in London—wrote thirty-seven Plays between 1591 and 1614—wrote also Sonnets and other poems

SIR WALTER RALEIGH, (1552–1618)—wrote verses in earlier years—colonized Virginia—spent more than fourteen years in prison in the Tower—occupied himself in writing a *History of the World*, which comes down to about 168 B C —beheaded for treason.

FRANCIS BACON, (1561–1626)—Lord Chancellor and Viscount St. Albans—author of *Essays* (English), first published in 1597—chief scientific work, written in Latin, *Instauratio Magna*, of which the finest portion is *Novum Organum* (1620)—tried and degraded for taking bribes (1621)

SCOTTISH WRITERS

ROBERT HENRYSON, (died before 1508)—schoolmaster at Dunfermline—author of *Testament of Fair Cresede*, &c

WILLIAM DUNBAR, (died about 1520)—a Franciscan friar—author of *Dance of the Seven Sins, Golden Terge, Thistle and Rose*, &c.

GAVIN DOUGLAS,—poet—Bishop of Dunkeld—flourished about 1500—wrote *Palace of Honour*—first translator of *Virgil's Æneid* into English verse

About 1500 A D three great painters flourished in Italy,—Leonardo da Vinci, Raphael, and Titian. Albert Dürer lived about the same time at Nuremberg There were no English artists of note. Most of the portraits of the Tudors are from the pencil of Hans Holbein, a German artist.

LEADING DATES OF THE TUDOR PERIOD

GENERAL EVENTS

	A D	
Discovery of West Indies (Columbus),	**1492**	**Henry VII.**
Margaret Tudor marries James IV. of Scotland,	**1502**	**—**
Field of the Cloth of Gold,	**1520**	**Henry VIII.**
Disgrace of Wolsey,	**1529**	**—**

	A.D	
Wales represented in the English Parliament,	1536.	Henry VIII.
Mary I. married Philip of Spain,	1554	Mary I.
Mary Stuart executed,	1587	Elizabeth.
Charter granted to East India Company,	1600	—

DOMINION ACQUIRED OR LOST

Discovery of American Mainland by Cabot,	1497	Henry VII.
Loss of Calais,	1558	Mary I
Havre taken and lost,	1562–63	Elizabeth.
Final conquest of Ireland,	1602	—

WARS, BATTLES, ETC

Battle of Stoke,	1487	Henry VII.
— Spurs,	1513	Henry VIII
— Flodden,	—	—
Peace of Crêpy,	1544	—
Battle of Pinkie,	1547	Edward VI
— St. Quentin,	1557	Mary I.
Armada defeated,	1588.	Elizabeth.

THE REFORMATION IN GERMANY.

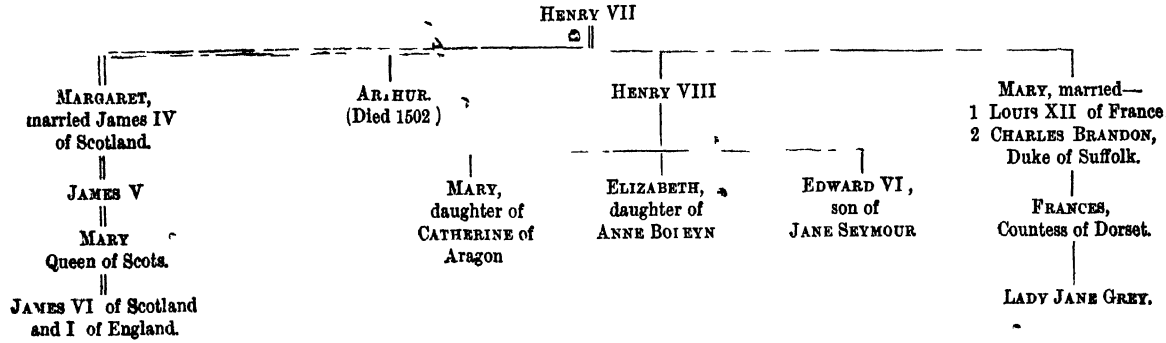
Luther publishes his Ninety-five Propositions,	1517	Henry VIII.
The Disputation at Leipsic,	1519	—
Burns the Pope's Bull,	1520	—

THE REFORMATION IN ENGLAND

Henry VIII. made Defender of the Faith,	1521	Henry VIII.
Act of Supremacy severing England from Rome,	1534	—
Coverdale's Bible published,	1535	—
The Bloody Statute,	1539	—
Cranmer's Bible (The Great Bible),	1540	—
Litany first spoken in English,	1544	—
Book of Common Prayer,	1552	Edward VI.
Three years' persecution of Protestants,	begins 1555	Mary I
Church of England fully established,	1562	Elizabeth.
The Puritans separate from the Anglican Church,	....1566..	—

GENEALOGICAL TREE

CONNECTING THE TUDORS AND THE STUARTS.



STUART PERIOD.

From 1603 A.D. to 1714 A D —111 years.—6 Sovereigns.

	A.D
JAMES I. (son of Mary Queen of Scots),	began to reign 1603
CHARLES I (son,	1625
COMMONWEALTH, during which Cromwell ruled as Protector for five years (1653–58),	began 1649 ended 1660
CHARLES II. (son of Charles I),	1660
JAMES II (brother),	1685
WILLIAM III (nephew), **MARY II.** (daughter),	1689
Death of **MARY, WILLIAM** left sole Ruler,	1694
ANNE (daughter of James II),	1702–1714

Leading Features :—THE KINGS STRIVING FOR ABSOLUTE POWER.
THE PARLIAMENT RESISTING
FINAL TRIUMPH OF THE PARLIAMENT.

CHAPTER I.

JAMES I

Born 1566 A D.—Began to reign 1603 A.D.—Died 1625 A D.

Accession of James
Three Religious Parties
Bible Translated (1611 A D)
The Gunpowder Plot (1605 A.D)
Scotland and Ireland
Favourites of James
Sir Walter Raleigh
Contest with the Parliament
Lord Bacon's Trial (1621
The Spanish Match
The Thirty Years War begun
Death of James.
Character
Notes

JAMES VI. of Scotland ascended the English throne as the descendant of Margaret, eldest daughter of Henry VII. To please his new subjects, he created in six weeks more than two hundred knights.

The English nation was then divided into **three** great parties, the Episcopalians, the Catholics, and the Puritans; and all three were nursing the hope of special favour from James. The Episcopalians trusted to his previous fondness for their form of church-government. The Catholics thought that the son of Mary Stuart could not but cherish the creed of his mother. The Puritans

clung to the hope that a King educated among Presbyterians would not dislike Puritanism. It soon appeared that James was resolved to establish Episcopacy throughout all Great Britain, as the united kingdoms of England and Scotland now began to be called

The King's liking for the Episcopal form of worship appeared most strongly at a conference held in 1604 at **Hampton Court** between the leading men of the two great Protestant parties James, vain of his theological learning, joined in the discussion, and met all the reasonings of the Puritan ministers with his favourite expression,—*No bishop, no king* The translation of the English Bible was almost the only fruit of this conference. Forty-seven ministers were engaged in the work for three years (1607 to 1610) It was printed in the Roman character, nearly all the previous copies having been in the type which is called Old English, though Caxton brought it from Germany. The Address of the translators to King James I may be read at the beginning of all the copies of this version, which is still the one in common use in this country

Gunpowder Plot.—The discontent of some of the Catholics, when they found that James had no intention of overthrowing the Protestant religion in England, took a terrible shape They resolved to blow up the King, Lords, and Commons with gunpowder Robert Catesby and Everard Digby were the chief conspirators For eighteen months the preparations went on, and, although many were in the secret, no breath of it seems to have got abroad A cellar beneath the House of Lords was hired, thirty-six barrels of gunpowder were placed there, coals and sticks were strewed over these, and the doors were then thrown boldly open. Still no detection. Only a few days before the appointed time, Lord Mounteagle received an anonymous letter warning him not to attend the opening of Parliament. The mysterious words were,—"The Parliament shall receive a terrible blow, and shall not see who hurts them" The letter was laid before the Council, and the King was the first to guess that gunpowder was meant. On searching the vaults, a Spanish officer, Guy Fawkes, was found preparing the matches on the following morning The rest of the conspirators fled into the country, where most of them were cut to pieces while fighting desperately. The 5th of November 1605 was the day fixed for the dreadful crime. Penal laws of the severest kind were the result of this plot. No Catholic was permitted to live in London; none could be a

Nov. 5, 1605 A.D.

lawyer or a doctor They were outlawed; at any time their houses might with impunity be broken into and their furniture destroyed

The great object of James in his government of Scotland was the establishment of **Episcopacy.** In this he was strenuously opposed by the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church, and met with little success.

In Ireland he did good Taking almost all Ulster from the rebellious chiefs, he parcelled it out among settlers from Great Britain, and those of the native race who were willing to submit to his rule The prosperity of the north of Ireland may be traced to these Plantations, as they were called.

James trusted much to **favourites.** The principal objects of his attachment were Robert Carr, afterwards Earl of Somerset, and George Villiers, the well-known Duke of Buckingham. Carr was a Scotchman, handsome but vicious He was concerned in a murder, and the odium against him grew so strong that James was forced to dismiss him from the court Villiers was equally dissolute in his life, but had more prudence To these even such men as Bacon, the Lord Chancellor, were known to cringe in hope of royal favour

Sir Walter Raleigh had been committed to the Tower in the first year of this reign, for taking share in a plot to place on the throne Lady Arabella Stuart, a cousin of the King. There he spent fifteen years, occupying the long days of captivity in writing a *History of the World* The work, which is still much admired, he brought up almost to the Christian Era Growing weary of confinement, he offered, as the price of his freedom, to disclose a gold mine of which he knew in South America James set him free, and gave him charge of fourteen vessels for the expedition; but, when he reached the South American coast, he found the Spaniards prepared to oppose his landing Some skirmishes took place, and the Spanish town of St. Thomas was burned. On Raleigh's return James, to please the Court of Spain, caused him to be beheaded on the old charge of conspiracy. **1618** A.D.

Francis Lord Bacon, distinguished for his *Essays*, and yet more for his great scientific work, *Novum Organum*, became Lord Chancellor in 1616. His extravagance had led him into debt; in his need for money he took bribes; and this was made the basis of an accusation Tried before the Lords (1621), he was degraded from the Woolsack and exiled from the Court.

During this reign began that contest with the Parliament,

which forms the leading feature of the period, and which ended in the dethronement of the ancient Stuart line. The Stuarts were all haunted by an insane desire for absolute power Their flatterers fed the mischievous feeling, the clergy especially began now to proclaim that the King, by Divine right to the throne, was above all laws A book was published by Dr Cowell full of arguments for this strange doctrine But the Parliament took a high tone, insisting on the suppression of the book; and a royal proclamation was accordingly issued against it The great abuses complained of by the Commons were the old evil, "purveyance," and the sale of monopolies, by which the trade of the entire country was placed in the hands of about two hundred persons The check, exercised by the Commons over the King, lay in their power of giving or withholding supplies of money. But, when they applied this check, he strove to invent new ways of filling his purse The fines of the Star Chamber became heavier and more frequent; titles of nobility were openly sold; and the new title of Baronet was created, of which the price was £1000.

Perhaps the sorest subject of contention was the **match,** arranged by Buckingham, between Charles, Prince of Wales, and the Princess of Spain The object of James was by this marriage to secure the influence of Spain in bringing to a close the Thirty Years' War. The voice of the English Parliament and people was loud against the union Three remonstrances were sent from the Commons to the King, and in each the language grew stronger. The last, in which they claimed freedom of speech as a birthright of which no King could deprive them, was entered on the Journals of the House (Dec. 18, 1621). James in a rage ordered the book to be brought, and with his own hand removed the entry He then dissolved the Parliament, which was his favourite plan of meeting their demands

The match, so hateful to the nation, was never completed. Charles and Buckingham undertook a journey in disguise, in order that the Prince might see his bride elect. But a quarrel between Buckingham and the Spanish minister, Olivarez, broke off the match. Charles, pretending that his father had recalled him, left Madrid abruptly, and was soon afterwards engaged in marriage to Henrietta Maria of France. The result of these changes was a war with Spain.

The great Thirty Years' War, which lasted from 1618 to 1648, was now convulsing the Continent. Its immediate cause was a contention for the crown of Bohemia between Frederic, Elector

Palatine of the Rhine, and Ferdinand of Austria. The leading Protestant Powers sided with the Elector, the Catholic, with the Emperor. James, whose daughter Elizabeth was married to the Elector Frederic, sent a few troops to help his son-in-law, but his heart was not in the work, and the expedition failed.

In 1625 James died of ague and gout, aged fifty-nine His eldest son, Henry, had died at nineteen; his second, Charles, succeeded him, his daughter Elizabeth and her German husband were the heads of the princely House of Brunswick, now holding the British throne.

The pedantry, obstinacy, and favouritism of James have been already noticed. His character was full of contrasts. Hunting, cock-fighting, and wine parties occupied much of his leisure, but he found time to write a few books, which gained him some distinction as an author. His appearance was awkward, chiefly from the weakness of his knees, his dress was careless, even slovenly

In 1614 Napier of Merchiston invented the use of logarithms The thermometer and the microscope came into use Early in the next reign, in 1628, Harvey discovered the circulation of the blood.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

HENRY IV.,	began to reign 1589	MUSTAPHA I.,	began to reign 1617
LOUIS XIII.,	1610	OTHMAN II.,	1618
		MUSTAPHA II.,	1623
		AMURATH IV.,	1623
PHILIP III.,	1598	EMPERORS	
PHILIP IV.,	1621	RODOLPH II.,	1576
SWEDEN.		MATTHIAS,	1612
SIGISMUND (King of Poland),	1592	FERDINAND II.,	1619
CHARLES IX.,	1604	POPES.	
GUSTAVUS ADOLPHUS	1611	CLEMENT VIII.,	1592
TURKEY		LEO XI.,	1605
MOHAMMED III.,	1595	PAUL V.,	1605
ACHMET I.,	1603	GREGORY XV.,	1621
		URBAN VIII.,	1623

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS.

Spain declares the Dutch independent,	1609	Moors finally expelled from Spain,	1610
Henry IV. of France assassinated,	1610	Thirty Years' War begins,	1618
		Elector defeated at Prague,	1620
		Richelieu gains a seat in Council,	1624

CHAPTER II.

CHARLES I.

Born 1600 A.D.—Began to reign 1625 A.D.—Beheaded 1649 A.D.

First Parliament of Charles (1625 A.D.)	The National Covenant (1638 A.D.)	Self-denying Ordinance (1645 A.D.)
The Siege of Rochelle (1627 A.D.)	The Long Parliament (1640 A.D.)	Cromwell's Army
The Petition of Right (1628 A.D.)	Irish Rebellion	The King a Prisoner (1647 A.D.)
Strafford and Laud	The two Parties	Pride's Purge
The Three Courts	The Civil War	Trial of the King (1649 A.D.)
Ship money (1634 A.D.)	Campaign of 1643.	His Execution
Puritan Emigration	Oliver Cromwell	Character
	Campaign of 1644	Notes

CHARLES, the second son of James I., became King in his twenty-fifth year. He married **Henrietta Maria**, the daughter of Henry IV. of France The expensive Spanish war, begun in the last reign, still continued To meet its cost, Charles asked his first Parliament for a supply, but the majority of the Commons were Puritans, and, looking with a jealous eye on the Catholic Queen, they granted only £140,000 with tonnage and poundage for one year. Enraged at this want of confidence, and especially at some charges brought against Buckingham, the King dissolved their sitting in a fortnight. He then levied taxes by his own authority, revived the old abuse of *benevolences*, and began to quarter his soldiers in private houses. His chief advisers were his Queen and Buckingham. Henrietta hated the Puritans and she had inherited from her father a strong attachment to absolute power She never ceased, through all her husband's life, to urge him on in that dangerous path, towards which his own temper inclined him far too strongly

The second Parliament, meeting in 1626, prepared to impeach Buckingham; but they had not passed a single Act when a dissolution checked their plans. The same illegal taxation followed. Many who resisted were imprisoned.

To add to the difficulties of Charles, a war with France began. Buckingham was again the cause. He quarrelled with Cardinal Richelieu, the great minister of France, who forbade the Duke ever again to enter French dominions. One of the grand objects of the Cardinal's government was the suppression of the Huguenots; and he was then engaged in besieging their stronghold, La

Rochelle on the Bay of Biscay Foiled in his attempts to take the city on the land side, he built a mole half a mile long across the mouth of the harbour. Twice the English tried to relieve the besieged. Buckingham led the first expedition, but returned, having lost almost half his men While at Portsmouth, preparing to sail with a second, he was stabbed to the heart by Lieutenant Felton, who had been dismissed from the service. Earl Lindesay led the fleet to Rochelle, but no efforts could pierce the mole, and the city surrendered to Richelieu in 1628.

In the same year Charles called his third Parliament Before granting any money, the Commons drew up a Bill—the famous **Petition of Right**—requiring the King to levy **1628** no taxes without consent of Parliament, to detain no A D one in prison without trial, and to billet no soldiers in private houses An assent was wrung from the reluctant Charles; and the Commons, rejoicing in this second great charter of English liberty, gave him five subsidies,—equal to nearly £400,000. But in three weeks it was seen that the King regarded not the solemn promise he had made.

The Commons murmured, but the King heeded them not. They set about preparing a Remonstrance he came to interfere. They locked themselves in he got a blacksmith to break open the doors; but he found that the House had adjourned Nine members were sent to prison, where one—Sir John Eliot—soon died The Parliament was at once dissolved by the angry King. Sensible that his domestic policy would need all his energies, he then made peace with Spain and France

For eleven years (1629 to 1640) no Parliament was called,—a case without parallel in our history. The Earl of **Strafford** and Archbishop **Laud** were the principal ministers of Charles during these years. Thomas Wentworth, afterwards Earl of Strafford, had been a leading man among those who forced the King to ratify the Petition of Right; but the hope of being to Charles what Richelieu was to the French monarch, led him to seek the royal favour. He laid a deep scheme to undermine the power of the Commons, and to secure for Charles absolute power. This plan he called, in his private letters, *Thorough*,—a name well expressing its nature A standing army was to be raised, and before it all other power in the State was to be swept away Appointed Viceroy of Ireland in 1631, he tried the first experiment in that island; and for seven years he kept both the native Irish and the English colonists crouching in terror under his iron rule. William Laud, Archbishop of Canterbury, directed the

affairs of the Church Almost a Catholic in his opinions, he hated with no common bitterness the religious services of the Puritans.

And now the nation groaned under the tyranny of three lawless tribunals, directed chiefly by these two ministers In the *Star Chamber* men were sentenced to fine, imprisonment, and even mutilation, for resisting the policy of the King. The terrors of the *High Commission Court* were launched against all who dared to differ in religious opinions from Laud. Besides these, a *Council of York*, directed by Wentworth and endowed with absolute control over the northern counties, sat in the northern capital

Of all the illegal taxes levied by Charles, **ship-money** was the most notorious. In old times the maritime counties and towns had been often called on by the King to equip vessels for the defence of the shore Finch the Chief-Justice, and Noy the Attorney-General proposed in 1634 to revive the tax, which dated so far back as the Danish invasion It was a small thing, but the spirit of the English nation revolted against the injustice. It was a war-tax levied during profound peace, it was laid upon inland counties, as had never before been done; the money was to be applied, not to the equipment of a fleet, but to the support of a standing army, lastly, it was collected by authority of the King alone. For three years there was no open resistance Then **John Hampden**, a gentleman of Buckinghamshire, refused to pay the tax of twenty shillings imposed on his estate

1637 A D. The case was tried in the Court of Exchequer, and a majority of the judges, who could then be dismissed at any time by the King, gave their decision against Hampden

Through all these years a great emigration of the **Puritans** had been draining England of her best blood In 1620 the *Mayflower* had borne the *Pilgrim Fathers* across the Atlantic. And now—hunted even into their closets by the spies of Laud, dragged causelessly before the High Commission, robbed, tortured, maimed—what wonder is it that, much as they loved England, they chose rather a home in the wild woods of America, where there was none to forbid the evening psalm, or the prayer poured from the full heart? Hampden, Pym, Cromwell himself, were on board of a ship, bound for the colony of New England, when a Government order came to stop the sailing of the vessel.

Charles followed the policy of his father towards Scotland. During his visit to that country in 1633 he appointed thirteen

bishops Four years later, he commanded a Service Book to be used in the churches of Edinburgh, but, when the Dean began in old **St. Giles's** to read this new Liturgy, Jenny Geddes flung a stool at his head, and a great riot arose in the church, from which the Bishop and the Dean fled in fear An order came from Charles to enforce the reception of the new Prayers by the aid of soldiers if necessary But the spirit of the Scots was roused. Within two months—February and March of 1638—nineteen-twentieths of the nation signed a document called the **National Covenant,** by which they bound themselves to oppose the revival in Scotland of Catholicism, and to unite for the defence of their laws, their freedom, and their King. A General Assembly, held soon afterwards at Glasgow, excommunicated the bishops and abolished Prelacy in Scotland Thus in thirty days the work of thirty years was undone, and the Church of Scotland was established more firmly than before on the basis of Presbyterianism.

Charles would gladly have crushed this bold opposition, but his want of money entangled him in new difficulties every day. He was forced in 1640 to call the Short Parliament (his fourth); but, being met with the same demands as before, he soon dissolved it He then tried a Council of Lords alone, but they knew the Constitution too well to act apart from the Commons. Meanwhile a Scottish army under Leslie had passed the Border and seized Newcastle.

The fifth and last Parliament of this reign, known as the **Long Parliament,** now began to sit It existed for more than nineteen years Its first session was marked by the impeachment of Strafford and the imprisonment of Laud Pym led the impeachment, and the charge was treason against the liberty of the people A Bill of Attainder was brought into the Commons, passed through the Lords, and waited only the signature of the King Charles hesitated long; but a letter from the condemned Earl, desiring to be left to his fate, decided the matter. The warrant was signed, and Strafford suffered death (May 1641) Laud, detained in prison for four years and condemned by Bill of Attainder, was then executed (Jan 1645)

Nov 3, **1640** A D

Early in his reign Charles I concluded an arrangement, entitled *The Graces*, with the Irish, making certain concessions which he afterwards repudiated. Wentworth, made Lord-Deputy of **Ireland** in 1631, goaded the people into rebellion by his tyranny, for he applied his system of *Thorough* to the islanders in all its severity. Reaction began. A conspiracy,

of which Roger Moore was the leader, spread its roots far and wide through the land. To seize the Castle of Dublin was a prominent object of the plot, but this was prevented by the disclosure of the design The rebellion then broke fiercely out in Ulster under Sir Phelim O'Neill Carrickfergus and Enniskillen became the strongholds of the Protestant cause Massacre stained both sides of the contest O'Neill was routed at Lisburn. And at last both sides, weary of bloodshed, consented to a cessation of hostilities. The government of Strafford (1631–39) was not unmixedly evil, for he reformed the army, encouraged commerce, and especially favoured the linen manufacture

About this time appeared the two great political parties which still divide the nation, assuming the government by turns. The nobles, the gentlemen, and the clergy were in favour of the King On the other side were a few of the peers, and the great mass of farmers, merchants, and shopkeepers The King's party received the name *Cavaliers*, from their gallant bearing and skill in horsemanship the Opposition were called *Roundheads*, from the Puritan fashion of wearing closely cropped hair Although the names afterwards changed into Tory and Whig, and these, still later, into Conservative and Liberal, the principles of the two parties have since remained the same Order is the watchword of the one, Progress, that of the other. The one, inspired by Memory, seeks to maintain unchanged the old institutions, which have made the country prosperous Hope leads the other to strive, by well-weighed changes, that prosperity shall become still more prosperous

On the 22nd of November 1641, after a keen contest,—the first pitched battle between these two parties,—it was resolved in the Commons, by a majority of eleven, to draw up a **Remonstrance**, complaining of the King's previous government. Seeing the stern temper of the House, he made fair promises; but his acts soon belied his words. Early in 1642 he ordered five of his most daring opponents in the Commons to be arrested for high treason. Their names were Pym, Hampden, Haselrig, Hollis, and Strode. The Commons refused to give them up · he went next day with soldiers to seize them; but they escaped before he entered the House. During all that night the streets of London were filled with armed citizens There was great excitement against the King, for he had insulted the nation. He left the capital and went to York. The Queen fled to Holland.

For some months messages passed between the King and the

Parliament; but there was no desire on either side to yield At last the Commons demanded that the King should give up the command of the army, one of the most ancient rights of the Crown He refused The Civil War began

In April 1642 the gates of **Hull** were shut against the King, who had demanded admission On the 25th of August 1642 the royal standard was unfurled at Nottingham, and ten thousand men gathered round it

The soldiers of the King were gentlemen, well mounted and skilled in the use of arms; but he was badly supplied with artillery and ammunition, and depended for money nearly altogether upon the loyalty of his Cavaliers The Parliamentary ranks were filled with ploughboys and tradesmen, as yet raw and untrained, but the possession of London and the Thames, along with the power of levying taxes, gave the Commons decided advantage in a continued war The King in person commanded the Cavaliers the Earl of Essex was chosen to lead the Roundheads Prince Rupert, the nephew of Charles, led the Royalist cavalry

The opening battle was fought at *Edgehill* in Warwickshire, but it decided nothing. During the winter Charles established his head-quarters at Oxford, whose ancient university has been at all times distinguished for loyalty The campaign of 1643 was marked by three events. Bristol, then the second city in the kingdom, was taken by the Royalists In the flush of this success Charles then laid siege to Gloucester; but, just when success seemed sure, Essex, moving rapidly from London with all the train-bands, raised the siege, and, some days later, defeated the royal army in the first battle of *Newbury* The siege of Gloucester was the turning point of the strife thenceforward the cause of the Parliament grew strong, although the loss of Hampden, who fell early in the war while skirmishing at Chalgrove with Rupert's cavalry, was at first severely felt.

Oct 23, 1642 A.D.

Sept. 20, 1643 A.D.

But a greater soldier and statesman than Hampden was already on the scene At Edgehill a captain of horse named **Oliver Cromwell** had fought in the army of the Parliament He was then above forty years of age, and had long lived a peaceful country life in his native shire of Huntingdon Among the members of the Long Parliament he was known chiefly by his slovenly dress of Puritan cut and colour, and his strange, rough, rambling speeches. He saw the secret of the King's early success, and resolved that the clownish soldiers of the Parliament

should soon be more than a match for the royal Cavaliers He began with his own regiment; for he was now Colonel Cromwell. Filling its ranks with sober and God-fearing men, he placed them under a system of drill and discipline so strict that they soon became celebrated as the **Ironsides** of Colonel Cromwell.

Under the terms of a Solemn League and Covenant, made between the Parliaments of England and Scotland, 21,000 Scottish troops crossed the Border in the beginning of 1644 Charles drew some trifling aid from Ireland In the south under Essex the soldiers of the Parliament suffered many defeats, but in the north, on **Marston Moor**, the Roundheads, aided by the Scots, gained a brilliant victory On that day Cromwell and his Ironsides swept all before them Rupert and his cavalry, victors in many a dashing charge, could not withstand the terrible onset of these Puritan dragoons The immediate result of the victory was the capture of York and Newcastle by the troops of the Parliament A second battle of Newbury, fought towards the close of the campaign, ended in the defeat of Charles.

July 2, 1644 A D

An offshoot from the Puritan party had been for some time taking shape and gathering strength in the nation. These were the **Independents**, of whom Cromwell was the chief In religion they held that every Christian congregation formed an independent church of itself, and owed obedience to no synods or assemblies In politics they desired to see monarchy overthrown and a republic erected They were called in their own day Root-and-branch men By their means an Act, called the **Self-denying Ordinance**, was passed in April 1645 it forbade all members of Parliament to hold command in the army So Essex and Manchester were removed, Sir Thomas Fairfax was appointed Commander-in-chief; while Cromwell, though a member of Parliament, was soon called, with the rank of Lieutenant-General, to lead the cavalry, and became in reality, though not in name, the General of the entire army.

And then was organized that strange army, by means of which Oliver achieved all his glories. There were, no doubt, many hypocrites in the ranks; but a spirit of sincere religion pervaded every regiment Officers and men met regularly in the tents or the barrack-rooms to pray They neither gambled, drank, nor swore. They often sang hymns as they moved to battle. And when, in later days, they fought the battles of England on the Continent, the finest troops in Europe were scattered in flight before their terrible charge.

The decisive battle of the Civil War was fought at **Naseby** in Northamptonshire, where the Royalist army was utterly routed. The victories of Montrose, who gained **June 14, 1645** six successive battles in Scotland, and appeared to be complete master of that kingdom, gave the King some **A.D.** hopes of maintaining his cause there, but these hopes soon faded, when Leslie defeated the Marquis at Philiphaugh near Selkirk The unfortunate Charles fled to Oxford, and thence to the Scottish army at Newark

The Parliament was thus triumphant But it was no longer a united body. During the war it had slowly resolved itself into two factions, the one Presbyterian, desirous only of limiting the power of the King, the other Independent, bent upon the destruction of the throne. Charles, in the faint hope of regaining his position by the aid of the Presbyterians, had flung himself on the mercy of the **Scottish army** at Newark Receiving him loyally, they offered to support him, if he would sign the Solemn League But this he refused to do, and after some time returned, by his own desire, to his English subjects. When the Scots stipulated for his safety and freedom, the English Parliament expressed great indignation that they should be even suspected of evil designs on their King. It is due, therefore, to these Scottish Presbyterians to say, that when they gave up King Charles, they had not the faintest suspicion of the dark crime soon to be perpetrated in Whitehall yard.

Rapidly the plot thickened Cornet **Joyce**, with a band of horse, acting under secret orders from Cromwell, seized the King at Holmby House in Northamptonshire. The royal prisoner, carried from castle to castle, found means at last to escape, and reached the Isle of Wight, in hopes of crossing to the Continent, but, being forced to take refuge in Carisbrook Castle, he was there guarded more jealously than ever The Scots, alarmed at the fast growing power of the Independents, passed the Border under the Duke of Hamilton. About the same time the Royalists of Essex and Kent began to stir. Leaving these to Fairfax, Cromwell pressed northwards by rapid marches, routed Hamilton at Preston in Lancashire, and, entering Scotland, soon established at Edinburgh a government hostile to Charles.

During his absence threatening murmurs rose from the Presbyterians, who still formed the majority in the Parliament. These murmurs Cromwell, on his return to London, met boldly and decisively Colonel **Pride**, on the morning of the 6th of December 1648, encircling the House with his troopers, pre-

vented the entrance of about two hundred Presbyterian members. The remainder,—about fifty Independents,—voted hearty thanks to Cromwell for his great services And then the death of the King was resolved on There are many who charge the blood of Charles on Cromwell's memory; but it may well be doubted whether he could have hindered the crime It is more charitable to believe as does our greatest historian of England, that "on this occasion he sacrificed his own judgment and his own inclinations to the wishes of the army. For the power, which he had called into existence, was a power which even he could not always control, and, that he might ordinarily command, it was necessary that he should sometimes obey"

Jan. 20, 1649 A.D. A tribunal, self-created and self-styled the **High Court of Justice**, met in Westminster Hall for the trial of the King The Peers had refused to take any part in the proceedings The members of the court, of whom about sixty sat in judgment, were taken chiefly from the army, and from the semblance of a Parliament then existing A lawyer named Bradshaw was the president Coke acted as the chief solicitor for the nation The King, brought from St James's Palace, was placed within the bar, and there charged with tyranny, especially in waging war against his people Never did Charles appear to more advantage than at this mockery of a trial Summoning up all that kingly dignity of which he possessed no small share, he refused to be tried by a tribunal created in defiance of the laws. Where, he asked, were the Peers, who alone, by an ancient maxim of the Constitution, could sit in judgment on a Peer? But all defence was useless, for the judges had already decided the matter among themselves The case was spun out for seven days, and then sentence of death was pronounced.

Three days later, on the 30th of January 1649, in front of the Banqueting Hall of Whitehall Palace, **Charles Stuart** was **beheaded.** Soldiers, horse and foot, surrounded the black scaffold, on which stood two masked headsmen beside the block The silent people stood in thousands far off The King was attended by Bishop Juxon. He died a Protestant of the English Church, declaring that the guilt of the Civil War did not rest with him, for the Parliament had been the first to take up arms, but confessing, at the same time, that he was now suffering a just punishment for the death of Strafford.

Jan. 30, 1649 A.D. One blow of the axe, and all was over. A deep groan burst from the assembled multitude, as the executioner raised

the bleeding head and cried, "This is the head of a traitor!" Since the Conquest, five Kings had fallen by assassination, three had died of injuries received in battle,—once only did a King of England perish on the scaffold, and this page tells the dark and bloody tale

Charles had three sons and three daughters The sons were Charles, Prince of Wales, afterwards Charles II, James, Duke of York, afterwards James II, and Henry, Duke of Gloucester: the daughters were Mary, married to the Prince of Orange, and thus mother of William III, Elizabeth, who died in Carisbrook, aged fifteen, a short time after her father's execution, and Henrietta, married to the Duke of Orleans

The public life and the private life of Charles I present a strange contrast In politics his leading motives were an attachment to Episcopacy, and that thirst for absolute power which he inherited from his father, and which he bequeathed in even greater intensity to his second son Double-dealing was his most fatal vice. But in the domestic relations of life he displayed many admirable qualities A love for his wife and children, and a refined taste in works of art, especially paintings, adorned his character We know him best from his portraits by Vandyke A dark-complexioned man, with mild and mournful eyes lofty brow, long curling hair, moustache, and pointed beard,—this is Vandyke's head of the hapless monarch

The tax on landed property, and the excise—a duty levied on certain articles of home manufacture—were first imposed by the Parliament, to meet the expense of the Civil War The Dutch painters Rubens and Vandyke enjoyed the patronage of Charles. Among the improvements of the reign may be noted the invention of the barometer, the first use of coffee in England, and the first rude outline of the General Post.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

			SWEDEN.		A.D.
LOUIS XIII.,	began to reign	1610	GUST. ADOLPHUS,	began to reign	1611
LOUIS XIV.,		1643	CHRISTINA,		1633
SPAIN.			EMPERORS.		
PHILIP IV,		1621	FERDINAND II.,		1619
			FERDINAND III.,		1637
TURKEY.			POPES		
AMURATH IV.,		1623	URBAN VIII.,		1623
IBRAHIM,		1640	INNOCENT X.,		1644

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

Siege of Rochelle,	1628	Battle of Leipsic,	1631
Peace of Lubeck,	1629	Battle of Lutzen,	1632
Gustavus Adolphus lands in Rugen,	1630	Turks acquire Bagdad,	1639
Sack of Magdeburg,	1630	Portugal independent again,	1640
		Treaty of Westphalia,	1648

CHAPTER III.

THE COMMONWEALTH.

1649 A.D. to 1660 A.D

OLIVER CROMWELL.

Born 1599 A.D —Created Lord Protector 1653 A.D.—Died 1658 A.D.

Revolution
Levellers
Conquest of Ireland (1649–50 A D)
Battle of Dunbar (1650 A D)
Battle of Worcester (1651 A D)
The Dutch War
Expulsion of the Long Parliament (1653 A D)
Barebone's Parliament
Cromwell Protector (1653 A D)
His Foreign Policy
His Second Parliament (1656 A.D)
Last Days and Death
Character
Richard Cromwell
General Monk
Charles called from Exile (1660 A D)

ENGLAND, now a **Commonwealth,** continued so for more than eleven years A fragment of the Long Parliament still sat. Royalty and the House of Lords were formally abolished The government was vested in a Council of forty-one members Of this Council Bradshaw was President, John Milton was Foreign Secretary, Cromwell and Fairfax directed the army, Sir Harry Vane controlled the navy But Cromwell and his soldiers really ruled the nation The Duke of Hamilton and two other Royalists shared the fate of their Prince

Three great difficulties then met Cromwell—mutiny among his soldiers, and Royalist risings in Ireland and Scotland. A part of the army, calling themselves *Levellers*, having tasted noble blood, rose in dangerous mutiny, clamouring for more The vigour and decision of Oliver soon quelled these restless spirits

The subjugation of **Ireland** was his next task. Since the massacres of 1641 all had been confusion there The Marquis of Ormond, leader of the Irish Royalists, now held nearly all the fortresses in the island Dublin, Derry, and Belfast were the only strongholds of the Parliament. Cromwell, having received his commission as Lord Lieutenant, landed near Dublin with 10,000 men. It was a small force, but the soldiers knew not what it was to yield. In six months Oliver completely broke the power of the Royalist party in Ireland. The sack of

Drogheda (1649) was the chief operation of the war Garrisons were put to the sword, whole cities were left unpeopled. *Wexford* swam with the blood of massacre. And the surrender of *Clonmel* completed Cromwell's triumph Everywhere the Catholics fled before their terrible foe. So great was the terror of his name, that even at this day "The curse of Cromwell on you" is used in the south of Ireland as an imprecation of deadly hatred When Cromwell left for London, Ireton and Ludlow remained to guard the conquered island.

On his arrival in London Oliver received public thanks for his great services, and was created Lord General of the Armies of the Commonwealth

The Scottish nation, loudly condemning the execution of Charles I, had, immediately upon receiving the fatal news, proclaimed his **son King.** They had taken up arms, they said, not to overturn a throne, but to maintain the Presbyterian worship, so dear to their fathers They now invited young Charles to Scotland At first he refused their aid, disliking the idea of turning Presbyterian, and sent the Marquis of Montrose from Holland to attempt a rising independently of the Covenanters That nobleman was defeated, captured, and executed There was then no resource for Charles but to place himself in the hands of the Scottish Presbyterians He agreed to sign the Covenant, and landed at the mouth of the Spey (June 23, 1650). A joyous welcome met him at Edinburgh.

Oliver, as was his custom, lost not a day But, when he reached the Border, he found the whole district from Tweed to Forth laid waste The Scots under Leslie, a watchful and prudent leader, lay intrenched near Edinburgh The Ironsides were met by famine, a new and terrible adversary As Oliver changed his position, he was followed by the cautious Leslie, whose tactics were to avoid a battle and let hunger do its work At length the Lord General was so hemmed in upon the shore near **Dunbar,** that he had no choice left but a disgraceful surrender or a hopeless attack on the strong and well-posted Scottish army. Already he had resolved to send away his baggage by sea, and to cut his way through the Scottish host at the head of his horsemen, when, to his great surprise and joy, he saw the enemy leaving the hills and advancing to offer battle on the plain. This movement was made by the rash advice of the clergy in the Scottish camp, and was sorely against the will of Leslie. The Scots were totally routed, and thousands fell in the battle and the flight.

Sept. 3, 1650 A.D.

Such was the end of *Dunbar Drove*. Edinburgh and Glasgow yielded without delay to the conqueror

During the following winter King Charles was crowned at Scone on New-Year's-Day, when he signed the Solemn League and Covenant, and thus agreed to maintain unbroken the Presbyterianism of Scotland. Leslie and his Covenanters were at Stirling, still formidable. Cromwell moved to besiege Perth, in order to cut off from them all Highland supplies. Suddenly, with Charles at their head, the Scots marched into England. They had reached **Worcester** when Cromwell overtook them. A battle followed, which Cromwell was accustomed to call his "crowning mercy." The army of Charles was scattered. Among the midland counties he wandered in disguise for more than a month, at one time the guest of humble foresters, at another lying hid for a long September day among the branches of a spreading oak tree, through whose leafy screen he saw the red-coats of Oliver searching for him everywhere in vain. Through many dangers he at last reached Shoreham in Sussex, where he found a coal-boat, and was landed safely at Fécamp in France. Scotland, thus united to the Commonwealth, was placed under the charge of General Monk.

Sept. 3, 1651 A.D.

A naval war with Holland then began. It was for the empire of the sea. The Dutch admirals were Van Tromp and De Ruyter; to them was opposed the English Blake. Early in 1652 Blake defeated Van Tromp off Portland, and destroyed eleven ships.

The Dutch then sought peace; but the Parliament, dreading the ambitious schemes of Oliver, refused to terminate the war; for it was only by keeping up the victorious navy that they could hope to hold the army in check. But Oliver resolved on a decided step. He urged his officers to present a petition for pay still due to them. The Parliament angrily declared that such petitions should henceforward be considered treasonable, and began to prepare a Bill to that effect. Cromwell marched down to the House with 300 musketeers, left these outside, and, entering, took his seat. The debate went on, he soon rose to speak. He charged the Parliament with oppression and profanity; and, when some members rose to reply, he strode up and down with his hat on, hurling reproaches at them. "Get you gone," cried he, "and give way to honester men!" He stamped on the floor; the musketeers poured in. "Take away that bauble!" said he, pointing to the mace which lay on the table. Resist-

ance was useless The Hall was speedily cleared, and Oliver, as he left, locked the door, and carried off the key. This
April 20, was the expulsion of the Long Parliament
1653 An assembly of about 140 members, selected from
A D. the warmest supporters of Oliver, then met instead of a Parliament. It was called Barebone's Parliament, after Barbone, a leather-seller, who took a forward part in its proceedings But this mockery was soon dissolved amid the jeers of the whole nation. All power then centred in Cromwell.

Created **Lord Protector** by a document called the *Instrument of Government*, he was presented in Westminster Hall with a sword and a Bible. He was now practically sovereign of England. He was declared head of the army and navy A legal Parliament was called in his name Freedom of religion was proclaimed His object seems to have been to rule the empire in the old constitutional way, through his Parliament; but his first House of Commons quarrelled with him on the subject of supplies, and was dissolved in anger before a single Act was passed Eighteen months elapsed before he called his second Parliament.

The Dutch war continued until April 1654, when a peace favourable to England was concluded One condition of the treaty was, that the young King Charles should be driven from the Dutch dominions. This triumph was only a part of that foreign policy, which made the name of Oliver so famous The glory of England, which had grown dim during the two preceding reigns, now shone with a lustre brighter than ever The Barbary pirates, long the pest of the Mediterranean, vanished before the English cruisers Spain, humbled by land and sea, yielded up in 1655 the rich island of *Jamaica* The Protestants of Languedoc and the Alps lived under the shadow of Oliver's favour in peace and safety long unknown to them. Mazarin, the crafty minister of France, sought his friendship; and Dunkirk, a Flemish fortress taken from the Spaniards by Marshal Turenne, was surrendered by France to England. Admiral Robert Blake by victories at Teneriffe (1657) and elsewhere broke the power of Spain, and made the name of England famous on the seas.

At home Oliver met many troubles. He was obeyed only through the fear with which his unconquered army was everywhere regarded. In the flush of his foreign victories he ventured to call a second House of Commons. He attempted at the same

time to frame a new House of Lords; but this was his greatest political failure The peers of England despised him as an upstart, and he was therefore compelled to fill the benches of his Upper House with men of no birth—"lucky draymen and shoemakers," who had left their craft to follow his banner, and had fought their way up from the ranks His second House of Commons—meeting in September 1656—proposed that he should take the title of King, but Oliver, knowing that he dared not do this, rested content with acquiring the right to name his successor. This, in effect, made his office hereditary; for, of course, he named his son But, when he required this House to acknowledge his newly-created peers, he was met with a distinct refusal. He then dissolved his second Parliament, and during his remaining days he ruled alone.

These last days were dark and cloudy One plot rose after another to mar his peace A book called *Killing no Murder*, in which the author, Colonel Titus, boldly advised his assassination, filled him with ceaseless fears He carried pistols, and wore a shirt of mail under his clothes His strength began to waste; the death of a favourite daughter fell heavily on his heart, and he died of ague on the 3rd of September 1658,—the anniversary of Dunbar and Worcester, and the day which he had always considered the brightest in the year His wife was Elizabeth Bouchier, daughter of an Essex gentleman. His children were Richard, Henry, and four daughters.

Great decision and energy marked the character of Oliver Cromwell. The secret of his success lay in his splendid military talents, which, dormant for forty years, were stirred to life by the troubles of the Civil War He was less successful in ruling the English nation than in drilling his great army. He disliked all show and ceremony. In private life he was fond of playing rough practical jokes on his friends He was a man of coarse and heavy figure, about the middle size. His eyes were grey and keen; his nose was too large for his face, and of a deep red. His look was harsh and forbidding; his manner, to the last, blunt and clownish. But within this rugged frame there burned a great, and,—let us believe,—a truly religious soul

His son Richard, a timid, modest man, quietly succeeded to the station of Protector. But the soldiers, missing their great chief, grew mutinous, and Richard resigned in five months. Retiring to his farms at Cheshunt, he lived the peaceful life of a country gentleman until 1712, when he died in the eighty-sixth year of his age.

The few Independent members of the Long Parliament, whom Oliver had expelled, were restored by the officers of the army. But disagreement soon arose, and a second expulsion by military force cleared the Parliament Hall. It was a critical hour for England A day seemed to be coming like that in ancient Rome, when soldiers set up the Empire for auction, and knocked it down to the highest bidder Cavaliers and Presbyterians forgot their enmity in their fear.

Disunion in the army saved the country General Monk, a cautious and reserved man, marched from Scotland to London with 7000 troops. The nation waited with trembling anxiety to know his resolve, and great was their joy when he declared for a free Parliament The Presbyterian members, who had been expelled by Colonel Pride, returned to their seats in the Long Parliament, and that famous body finally dissolved itself.

A new Parliament, composed chiefly of Cavaliers and Presbyterians, was then summoned It was rather a Convention than a Parliament, since it had not been convoked by the King It was clearly seen that the hearts of both Parliament and people were leaning towards their exiled Sovereign, and when

1660 A.D. Monk, one day, announced in the Parliament that a messenger from Charles was waiting for admission, the news was received with joyful shouts A warm invitation was at once despatched to the King, who gladly returned to his native land.

Among many sects, which sprang from the Puritan body, the Baptists and the Quakers deserve notice The Baptists or Anabaptists—a much milder sect in England than the fierce German reformers of that name—arose in the reign of Henry VIII. Some of Cromwell's principal officers were of that persuasion. The founder of the Quakers was George Fox of Drayton in Leicestershire, by trade a shoemaker, but occupied chiefly in teaching the Scriptures. He was more than once put in the stocks and imprisoned for preaching The Quakers, now known as the Society of Friends, are remarkable for their simple manners and industrious lives. They differ from other Protestants in dress, some slight forms of speech, and their mode of public worship.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

LOUIS XIV.,	began to reign 1643	**IBRAHIM,** . began to reign	1640
		MOHAMMED IV.,	1649
PHILIP IV,	1621	**FERDINAND III**	1637
		LEOPOLD I,	1658
CHRISTINA,	1633	**INNOCENT X,**	1644
CHARLES X,	1654	**ALEXANDER VII.,**	1655

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

	A D
Dutch expelled from Brazil,	**1654**
Abdication of Christina (Sweden),	—
Peace of Baden (Switzerland),	**1656**
Poland acknowledges independence of Prussia,	**1657**
Peace of the Pyrenees (Spain,	**1659**

CHAPTER IV.

CHARLES II

Born 1630 A D.—Began to reign 1649 A D —Restored to the Throne 1660 A.D.—Died 1685 A.D

The Restoration (1660 A D)
Larly Measures
Act of Uniformity (1662 A D)
Standing Army
Dutch War (1665–67 A D)
The Plague (1665 A D)
The Fire of London (1666 A D)
General Licentiousness
Ireland
Persecution of Scottish Presbyterians
Triple Alliance (1668 A D)
Treaty of Dover (1670 A D)
The Cabal
Closing of the Exchequer
The Popish Plot (1678 A D)
Statesmen of the Reign
Habeas Corpus Act (1679 A D)
Exclusion Bill (1679-80 A D)
Whig and Tory
Drumclog (1679 A.D)
Bothwell Bridge (1679 A D).
Rye-house Plot (1683 A D).
Death and Character
Notes

EARLY in May 1660, Charles II was proclaimed King at the gate of Westminster Hall Within the same month he landed at Dover, and made his public entry into London on his birth-day. Never had there been such joy in England Flowers strewed the road, bells rang merrily, and old Cavaliers, who had fought at Edge-hill and Naseby, wept for very gladness. On Blackheath stood Oliver's army, sad and angry, but conscious that they were no longer united. No tumult marred the joy of the **Restoration,** as the great event was called.

May 29, 1660 A D.

Edward Hyde, afterwards Earl of Clarendon, returned with the King from exile. He was made Lord Chancellor, and soon became closely connected with the royal family by the marriage of his daughter, Anne Hyde, to James, Duke of York.

Among the early acts of Charles were the abolition of the last relic of the Feudal System,—the tenure of lands by knight service, with all its abuses of fines and wardship,—and the disbanding of Cromwell's soldiers, all of whom quietly settled down to their former occupations. The Episcopal Church was restored in England. Few of the men who had been concerned in the regicide of Charles I. suffered death. The Marquis of Argyle, a leader of the Scottish Presbyterians, was executed, although he had placed the crown on the King's head at Scone. The bodies of Cromwell, Ireton his son-in-law, and Bradshaw were taken from their graves and hanged on gibbets. A general pardon was granted to all who had favoured Oliver's government. Monk was rewarded with the title of Duke of Albemarle.

Religious affairs were in great confusion. The *Triers*, who had been appointed by Oliver to grant license for preaching, had filled the parish pulpits with Independent and Presbyterian ministers. Charles and Clarendon were bent upon allowing no form of worship but Episcopacy. The Presbyterians were greatly alarmed. They had the handwriting of the King to prove his promise that the Covenant should be respected But soon faded all hope of favour from him, with whom it was a common saying, that Presbyterianism was no religion for a gentleman. An *Act of Uniformity* was passed, requiring that **1662** all ministers should be ordained by Bishops, and should A.D. use the Book of Common Prayer. Two thousand ministers refused to obey, and were turned out of their livings It was resolved in Parliament that the Covenant should be publicly burned by the hangman Heavy punishments were inflicted on all Dissenters. About the same time the Corporation Act enjoined all magistrates and officers of corporations to take an oath, that resistance against the King was unlawful under any circumstances.

So great had been the joy of the Restoration, that no care was taken to prevent Charles from seizing absolute power. His first Parliament granted him, for life, taxes amounting to £1,200,000; and a part of this money he devoted to the support of some regiments, then called Gentlemen of the Guard, but now termed Life Guards. These formed the nucleus of a **standing army**, ever since maintained.

The extravagant habits and dissolute life of the King kept him in constant want of money; and to fill his purse he did many mean things. Marrying for money was one of these The wife he chose was a Catholic, Catherine of Portugal; and with her he received a dowry of half a million besides two fortresses, Tangier in Morocco, and Bombay in Hindostan Dunkirk, acquired by the great Oliver, he sold to the French King for 5000 *livres*. He also plunged into a war with Holland, for which no other cause can be assigned than that he wished to have command of the supplies voted for the purpose.

This Dutch war opened well, but closed ignobly. During the first year a great naval victory was gained off the Suffolk coast, near Lowestoft, by an English fleet under the **1665** Duke of York. But the money voted by Parliament for A.D. the war was squandered by the King in his wicked pleasures; and ships leaky and badly rigged were sent out to contend with the splendid fleets of Holland. Then came upon

England a humiliation such as she had never before—has never since endured. "The roar of foreign guns was heard for the first and last time by the citizens of London," when a Dutch fleet under De Ruyter destroyed Sheerness, burned the ships lying off Chatham, and sailed up the Thames as far as Tilbury Fort. Happily for London, the Dutch admiral, retiring with the ebb-tide, rested content with having thus insulted the great Mistress of the Sea

June, 1667 A D

The summer of 1665 was a deadly season in London. The **Plague** fell upon the city The rich fled in terror to their country-houses; but many were stricken down even there. The poor perished in thousands Grass grew in London streets. The silence of death reigned everywhere, broken only by the rumbling wheels of the dead-cart as it went its rounds The plague-stricken dwellings were shut up and marked with a red cross, the words "Lord have mercy on us" might often be read there too. Into these none would venture except a few faithful ministers and physicians, who moved and breathed amid the tainted air, as if they bore a charmed life Plague in a city drives the irreligious into deeper sin. Fearful scenes of riot and drunkenness are too commonly the results of this near approach of death, and London was no exception to the terrible rule More than one hundred thousand perished. Britain has never since been visited by so heavy a scourge.

In the following year the **Great Fire** of London broke out, on the night of Sunday the 2nd of September. Though then said to have been the work of Catholics, it is now generally believed to have been quite accidental. It began in the east end of the city. The wind was high, and the flames spread fast among the old wooden houses. The city from the Tower to the Temple was burning for a whole week; and the red glare in the sky is said to have been seen from the Cheviot Hills. Eighty-nine churches, and more than thirteen thousand houses lay in ashes. Old St. Paul's was burned; but on the ruins the distinguished architect Wren reared that magnificent dome, which rises high above the smoky roofs of London This great conflagration, like all calamities, was but a blessing in disguise. It purified the city from the dregs of the plague, still lurking in narrow lanes and filthy rooms; and many spots, dark and close for centuries, were once more blessed with the sweet light and air of heaven. New houses and wider streets sprang up; and, as a natural result, the public health rapidly improved. The Monument,—a tall pillar in the City of London,—still exists to commemorate the Great Fire.

Change of Life.—Under the austere Puritan rule of Cromwell, sculpture and painting had been almost banished from the land, as savouring of idolatry. Then, too, all public amusements, especially theatrical performances and the cruel sport of bear-baiting, were forbidden, and even the innocent sports round the Maypole and by the Christmas fire were sternly put down. The nation, released at the Restoration from such restrictions, plunged wildly into the opposite extreme The King lived a life of indolence and profligacy, and spent most of his time in the society of beautiful and witty, but very worthless women, whose influence affected the politics of the day to no small extent. Licentiousness spread everywhere. Members of Parliament sold their votes, as a matter of course. The plays written then, in which for the first time female performers took the female parts, are unfit to be read, so immoral are the thoughts and the language. The power of even the Church was but feebly exerted to stem this torrent of wickedness • •

In **Ireland** the Saxon and the Celt were still at war, and the subject of the strife was now the division of lands Under Henry Cromwell, son of the Protector, who had ruled the island as Lord Lieutenant, Puritan colonists had held the lots portioned out to them by the victorious Oliver Charles resolved to restore to the Catholics part of the territory taken from them, and an *Act of Settlement* was passed; but this did not mend matters, for some thousands received little or no compensation, and left for France and Spain, crying loudly against the injustice of the English King

These were dark days for **Scotland.** The King and the Earl of Clarendon, as before mentioned, had resolved to uproot Presbyterianism and firmly to establish Episcopacy in that land. They found an able and unscrupulous instrument in James Sharp, minister of Crail; who, being sent to London by the Presbyterians to look after their interests, turned traitor, and was rewarded for his apostasy by being made Archbishop of St. Andrews. Nine other Scottish Presbyterians were seduced by similar temptations, and received the mitre The Earl of Lauderdale, once a Presbyterian like Sharp, and filled with all the bitterness of a renegade, was made Chief Commissioner. Fines, laid upon those who refused to attend the Episcopal worship, were levied by military force, and soldiers were quartered on the unhappy people until the uttermost farthing was paid. A rising took place among the peasantry of Kirkcudbright, and about a thousand men marched to Edinburgh; but they were defeated by General Dalziel at *Rullion Green* near

Nov. 1666 A.D.

the Pentland Hills. Many executions followed, and torture became frightfully common. One of the most terrible instruments was the infamous "boot." This, which was made of four pieces of board hooped with iron, was placed upon the leg of the victim, and wedges were driven with a heavy mallet between the flesh and the wood, until the whole limb, flesh and bone, was a crushed and bloody mass. Meetings for worship in the open air, called *conventicles*, to which the worshippers came, not with their Bibles alone, but with sword and pistol also, were the consolation of the brave people, whose religious feelings grew deeper and purer, the fiercer blew the hurricane of persecution. Lord Chancellor **Clarendon** lost the favour of the King, whose mind was poisoned against him by some worthless favourites. His enemies charged him at the bar of the Lords with high treason; but, upon a hint from his son-in-law, the Duke of York, he fled to France (1667). There he spent his last years in completing his great *History of the Rebellion*. His death took place at Rouen in 1674.

The ambition of Louis XIV of France, which convulsed Europe so long, now began to be attracted by the Netherlands, to which he professed some shadow of a claim through his wife. To preserve the balance of power, England, Sweden, and Holland formed the **Triple Alliance** against the French monarch. In the desire to preserve this balance,—that is, to prevent any potentate from acquiring by conquest an ascendency which would be dangerous to other States,—we find the cause of many wars of which we have yet to speak. The Triple Alliance (1668) pleased the English people mightily, and Charles became, for once, a great favourite.

Treaty of Dover.—But little did the nation dream how basely they had been tricked, and what foul stains were deepening upon kingly honour. While Charles openly professed hostility to Louis, he was secretly in the pay of that monarch, receiving a pension of £200,000 a year! The negotiations between the Courts of England and France were conducted by a handsome Frenchwoman, called by the English Madame Carwell, who soon won the favour of Charles, and was made Duchess of Portsmouth. At Dover was signed a secret treaty, of which the principal terms were, that Charles should openly declare himself a Catholic, that he should fight for Louis against the Dutch Republic, and that he should support the claims of that monarch upon Spain. Louis on his part promised plenty of money, and an army to quell the English if they dared to rebel.

May, 1670 A.D.

Five men, called the Cabal, because the initials of their names

form that word, then became the chief advisers of the King. They were Clifford, Arlington, Buckingham, Ashley, and Lauderdale. So pernicious was their advice, and so strong the hatred of them entertained by the people, that the word Cabal has ever since been used to denote a clique of political schemers.

The Dutch war being renewed in 1672, an English fleet put to sea, while Louis crossed the Rhine and ravaged the United Provinces. But the Dutch, acting under the orders of their heroic leader, William of Orange, broke down their dykes the foaming water rushed over the land, and the French soldiers had to flee for their lives Hostilities continued until a treaty was made at Nimeguen in 1678.

One of the most disgraceful acts of Charles was the closing of the **Exchequer** or Treasury About £1,300,000 had been advanced to the King by the London goldsmiths, and other wealthy merchants, at 8 or 10 per cent. of interest, and for this sum they had the security of the public funds One day they received a cool message from the King, that their money was not to be repaid, and that they must content themselves with the interest. A general panic ensued Merchants, unable to meet their engagements, were forced to stop payment Trade was for the time paralyzed. But all mattered nothing to the dishonest monarch, who rejoiced in possessing new means of gratifying his passions.

Ever since the Fire of London the public feeling against the Catholics had been growing stronger The Duke of York had openly professed his belief of their doctrines, and there was a general suspicion abroad that the King, too, was at heart devoted to his mother's creed A sign of the times was the **Test Act**, by which all persons who held public appointments were compelled to receive the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper according to the usage of the Church of England, and to take an oath against transubstantiation. This law excluded all Catholics from office, and the Duke of York was removed from the command of the fleet **1673** A D.

Then Titus Oates, a clergyman disgraced for vicious habits, came forward with the story of a "**Popish Plot**" to assassinate the King and to massacre all Protestants Other false witnesses, for so they proved, confirmed his tale. Papers found in the rooms of Edward Coleman, a noted Catholic, and secretary to the Duchess of York, seemed to afford additional evidence of a plot. The dead body of Sir Edmondsbury Godfrey, the Justice of Peace before whom Oates had sworn to the conspiracy, was found in a field near London, pierced with his own sword. All England went

mad with fear. London was in a state of siege. It was an English Reign of Terror, and many Catholics were unjustly put to death Titus Oates was rewarded with a pension of £1200 a year, and rooms were assigned to him in Whitehall. Encouraged by his success, new perjurers, such as Bedloe and Dangerfield, poured from the gambling-houses and drinking-dens of London. Execution followed execution. The noblest of the slain Catholics was William Howard, Viscount Stafford, whose grey hairs could not save him from an unmerited death

After the dissolution of the Cabal, the Earl of Danby became Prime Minister; but the discovery of a letter, in which he craved money from the French King, hastened his downfall. Sir William Temple, a man of much talent, then became the confidant of Charles His favourite scheme was the appointment of a **Council of Thirty** to stand between the King and the Parliament But the plan did not work well Of those associated with Temple in the direction of affairs, the most distinguished was Viscount Halifax. Belonging to neither extreme of the two great political parties, but standing midway between them in his opinions, he was what the politicians of that day had begun to call a *Trimmer*, and he thought that the name was no disgrace.

The day, upon which the **Habeas Corpus Act** received the assent of the King, and thus became a law of the land, is memorable in the history of Britain; for this Act is second in importance only to Magna Charta *It secures the liberty of the subject* Former sovereigns had, without restraint, left their enemies to pine and waste for long years in damp, unwholesome prisons Mary Queen of Scots had lain for nineteen years in English dungeons, when, crippled by rheumatism and bowed by premature old age, she was led to the scaffold. Sir Walter Raleigh lay for fifteen years, and Archbishop Laud for four in a solitary cell. But by the Habeas Corpus Act, no sovereign could dare to keep even the meanest subject in prison beyond a certain time without bringing him to a fair trial. This remarkable Act was passed in the first session of Charles's second House of Commons. His first Parliament, which had sat for eighteen years, was dissolved in 1679. At the time that Habeas Corpus was passed, the Press of England received liberty for a short period.

May 26 **1679** A D

So strongly did the tide of public feeling run against the Duke of York, who, since Charles had no legitimate children, was the heir to the throne, that a Bill to exclude him from the succes-

sion was brought into Parliament. It was most angrily contested between the Whigs and the Tories, but passed the House of Commons by a majority of seventy-nine votes. In the House of Lords, however, chiefly by means of the splendid speeches of Halifax, the Bill was thrown out; and Charles and his brother York once more breathed freely.

During these fierce debates the contemptuous nicknames, Whig and Tory, which have since lost their derisive meaning, were for the first time bandied between the rival parties. The Whigs represented the Roundheads; the Tories, the Cavaliers of the last reign. Tory or Toree, meaning "Give me," was a name applied to the robbers who infested the woods and bogs of Ireland. The name Whig, meaning, probably, "whey or sour milk," was first given in contempt by dissolute Cavaliers to the sober and grave-faced Presbyterians of Scotland.

The persecution of the **Covenanters** still stained Scotland with blood. Lauderdale, now a Duke, presided at the Council-table. A Highland host, numbering 8000 men, were quartered on the Lowland farmers, and permitted, even encouraged, to plunder and oppress without mercy. No man could leave Scotland without special permission from the Council. These and worse grievances were for a long time meekly borne, but at length the suffering people were goaded to madness. One of the first signs of the frenzy was the murder of Archbishop Sharp on Magus Moor near St. Andrews. A party of twelve, among whom was Balfour of Burleigh, while waiting on the moor for another and meaner foe, saw the coach of Sharp approaching. Taking a sudden and desperate resolve, they dragged him from his seat and slew him before his daughter's eyes. A rising at once ensued, and at *Drumclog*, near Loudon Hill, Graham of Claverhouse and his dragoons—long the terror of conventicles—were scattered in flight before the stern Covenanters. Four thousand men were soon in arms under a man named Hamilton, and took post at *Bothwell Bridge*, to defend the passage of the Clyde. The Duke of Monmouth, an illegitimate son of Charles II. by a Welsh girl named Lucy Walters, was sent hastily from London, and advanced to the attack. But there was disunion on religious and political questions in the Covenanting army; and the gallant handful that held the bridge, being left without support, were soon swept away. Three hundred Covenanters died on the field; twelve hundred surrendered. Of these some were executed; others were drafted off to Barbadoes.

May 3, 1679 A.D.

The persecution grew fiercer than ever. For no other crime than desiring to worship God as their fathers had done, men were shot down in the fields, and hunted like wild beasts over the moors and mountains. Their loyalty, to which they had clung in the darkest hour, now began to give way A sect called *Cameronians* boldly threw off their allegiance, denounced Charles as a bloody tyrant, and solemnly pronounced against him and his ministers a sentence of excommunication. Lauderdale gave place to a bitterer persecutor, James, Duke of York, who often amused his leisure hours by witnessing the infliction of the boot and the thumb-screw. Many yielded an outward obedience, driven by their timid souls to take refuge in a lie; others fled to the American Colonies In these sufferings the Puritans of England had no small share.

The last remarkable event of the reign was a Whig conspiracy, commonly known as the **Rye-house Plot.** Young Monmouth, beloved by the people for his handsome face and frank manners, was looked upon by many as the lawful son of Charles, and as the true heir to the throne. Stories were afloat of a marriage between Charles and Lucy Walters, and of a black box which held the marriage-contract. A conspiracy to secure the crown for Monmouth was set on foot. Lord William Russell and Algernon Sidney took a leading share in the plot, which spread its roots far and wide. A set of middle-class men formed, as it seems, without the knowledge of Monmouth or Russell, a design to murder the King on his return from Newmarket races. Their plan was to overturn a cart near the Rye House, a roadside farm, and then to shoot the King during the stoppage of the coach Thus there was a plot within a plot. All was soon discovered, and the vengeance of the King was let loose. Monmouth fled to the Continent, Russell and Sidney died on the scaffold, and many of lower degree were hanged. During the remainder of his reign Charles ruled as an absolute monarch.

1683 A.D.

He died after an illness of less than a week, having first declared himself a Catholic, and having received the last rites of the Church from a priest named Huddlestone, who was brought secretly to his bedside. Apoplexy, epilepsy, and even poison were assigned as the causes of his death. He left no lawful children.

Perhaps the only good point about Charles the Second was the gay and buoyant disposition, which carried him through so many reverses, and gained for him the name of "The Merry

Monarch." He was a mean-spirited, treacherous, dissolute man, who, thoroughly vicious himself, scoffed at the idea of virtue or honour in others Much of his time was passed in worthless company. He was an active tennis-player, an untiring walker, and often amused himself with chemical experiments

The Royal Society, founded in 1662, did much for the advancement of science From the tumults and impostures of the reign sprang two words—ever since in common use—Mob and Sham A penny post was set up in London, in spite of great opposition, by a citizen named William Dockwray Newspapers, influenced by the rivalry of Whigs and Tories, began to acquire political importance. *The London Gazette* and *The Observator*, edited by Roger Lestrange, were the organs of the Government.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

	A.D.		A.D.
		TURKEY.	
LOUIS XIV., began to reign	1643	**MOHAMMED IV.**, began to reign	1649
SPAIN		EMPEROR.	
PHILIP IV,	1621	**LEOPOLD I**,	1658
CHARLES II,	1665	POPES	
		ALEXANDER VII,	1655
		CLEMENT IX,	1667
SWEDEN.		**CLEMENT X.**,	1670
CHARLES XI.,	1660	**INNOCENT XI.**,	1676

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

The Perpetual Edict (Holland),	1667	**Treaty of Nimeguen**,	1678
Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle,	1668	**John Sobieski defeats the Turks at Vienna**,	1683
Murder of the De Witts,	1672		
Battle of Seneffe,	1674		

CHAPTER V.

JAMES II.

Born 1633 A.D.—Began to reign 1685 A.D.—Dethroned 1688 A.D.—Died 1701 A.D.

Confidence of the Nation	Oxford and Cambridge	His Landing (1688 A.D.)
Argyle (1685 A.D.)	Declarations of Indulgence (1687–8 A.D.)	Flight of James (1688 A.D.)
Monmouth	Trial of the Bishops (1688 A.D.)	The Convention
Battle of Sedgemoor (1685 A.D.)	Lillibulero	The Declaration of Rights (1689 A.D.)
Kirke and Jeffreys	William of Orange	Nature of the Revolution
Policy of James		Character of James

A QUARTER of an hour after his brother's death, the **Duke of York** took his seat at the Council as King James II. There he declared his resolve to govern according to the laws, and to uphold the Church of England,—a promise which he repeated in his speech from the throne when he met his Parliament. He was a zealous Catholic, and men might well have grown pale, when they remembered the last Catholic sovereign of England.

But the confidence of the nation seemed unshaken, and loyal addresses poured in from every side. The King attended a public celebration of the mass, and was soon after crowned in royal style. The Commons voted him a revenue of £1,900,000, and already he was in the pay of Louis.

April 23, **1685** A.D.

Holland was the refuge of the conspirators, who had fled from England on the detection of the Rye-house plot. Monmouth and Argyle were there with many of less note; and a meeting took place at Amsterdam, at which it was resolved that Argyle should descend on Scotland, and that Monmouth should about the same time attempt the invasion of England.

Argyle—known to his clansmen as MacCallum More—landed on Cantire, and sent forth the fiery cross to summon the Campbells to arms. Scarcely two thousand claymores mustered at the call. With these he moved towards Glasgow; but in Dumbartonshire his little army was scattered, and, while attempting to escape in disguise, he was made prisoner at Inchinnan in Renfrewshire. Some days later he suffered death at Edinburgh with Christian patience, and his head was left to moulder on the walls of the Tolbooth Prison.

June was far spent, when **Monmouth** with three ships approached the coast of Dorsetshire, and landed at Lyme Ploughmen and miners flocked in hundreds to join him, farmers came on their heavy cart-horses to fill the ranks of his rude cavalry; but the nobles and gentlemen made no movement in his favour. His hopes rose when he reached Taunton, a town noted for its woollen manufacture There he assumed the title of King; green boughs, worn in his honour, were in every hat; and a band of young girls publicly presented him with a Bible and a richly embroidered flag Bent upon the conquest of Bristol, then the second city in the kingdom, he marched to Bridgewater, and even to the walls of Bath But the train-bands were gathering fast, and his heart was failing him. He fell back The royal troops and the rebels exchanged shots at Philip's Norton, but the battle which decided the fate of Monmouth was fought at **Sedgemoor**, within three miles of Bridgewater.

There lay an army of 3000 men under Feversham, a weak and indolent general Monmouth, hoping to surprise the royal troops in disorder, advanced from Bridgewater in the dead of night The moor—the ancient hiding-place of Alfred —was then a partly drained swamp, crossed by trenches full of mud and water, called *rhines* Two of these rhines Monmouth and his soldiers had passed in silence, and they were almost upon the foe, when he found a deep, black ditch, the Bussex rhine, of which his guides had not told him, yawning in front of the march Delay and confusion followed, and a pistol went off by accident Instantly the royal drums beat to arms, a heavy fire of musketry opened on the rebels from the opposite side of the rhine; the royal cavalry came galloping to the scene of action Monmouth, conscious that all was lost, took flight.

His foot-soldiers fought long and bravely, until, after much delay, the guns of the royal artillery began to play upon their ranks; and then they broke in disorder and fled, leaving a thousand slain. No battle has been fought on English ground since the day of Sedgemoor. July 6, 1685 A.D.

Two days later, Monmouth was found near the New Forest, lurking in a ditch with his pockets half full of raw pease. While on his way to London, he wrote an imploring letter to the King; and, when admitted to the royal presence, he lay upon the floor, and wet the feet of James with his tears. All was useless: he was doomed to immediate execution, and suffered death on Tower-hill.

The task of butchering the unhappy rebels was intrusted at

first to Colonel Percy Kirke, who hanged them by scores on the sign-post of the White Hart Inn at Taunton But the Colonel was outdone in ferocity by Chief-Justice **Jeffreys**, whose name became a proverb for blasphemy and brutality. This man opened at Winchester that circuit known as the *Bloody Assize*. The first case for treason was that of Alice Lisle, the widow of one of Cromwell's lords. She was tried for affording food and shelter to two of the flying rebels; Jeffreys cursed and bullied the jury into returning a verdict of "Guilty," and sentenced her to be burned alive. Owing to the intercession of noble friends her sentence was altered to beheading, and she died with calm fortitude in the market-place of Winchester. Through the whole western circuit Jeffreys then passed, revelling in blood. More than three hundred perished in this judicial massacre, and crowds who escaped death were doomed to suffer mutilation, imprisonment, or exile.

James, exulting in his triumph, began to unfold his grand design. This design, to which he clung with obstinacy bordering on madness, was the complete restoration of **Catholicism** in Great Britain. In defiance of the Test Act, he gave commissions in the army to Catholics He released all Catholics from penalties, by means of the dispensing power—a privilege which enabled him to pardon all transgressions of the law, and thus, in effect, to destroy the power of the law altogether He placed the whole Church under the control of a High Commission Court of seven members, at whose head sat Jeffreys, now Lord Chancellor. He prepared to form a great standing army For the first time since the reign of Mary, a Papal Nuncio was entertained at Whitehall. The Jesuits began anew vigorous operations in London; and one of their most active men, Father Edward Petre, became the secret and confidential adviser of the King. Scotland was placed under Drummond, Earl of Perth, who had completely won the heart of James by inventing the steel thumbscrew, an instrument of exquisite torture. Tyrconnel, fierce and unscrupulous—commonly known as lying Dick Talbot—was made Lord-Deputy of Ireland. Nothing showed the temper of James more clearly than the dismissal of the Hydes, the brothers of his dead wife. Clarendon, the elder, ceased to be Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland; and Rochester, the younger, was forced to resign the white staff, which he had borne as Lord-Treasurer of England, for no other reason than that they were both stanch Protestants.

James then attacked the Universities of **Oxford** and **Cam-**

bridge. A royal letter commanded the Senate of Cambridge to admit Alban Francis, a Benedictine monk, to the degree of M.A. The University refused; for no Catholic could take the oaths. The Vice-Chancellor and eight others, among whom was Isaac Newton, appeared before the High Commission, and the Vice-Chancellor lost his office. Upon Oxford the King made worse inroads To the vacant presidency of Magdalene College he appointed Antony Farmer, a Catholic The Fellows chose instead John Hough In a rage the King went down himself to browbeat the Fellows, but they stoutly refused to obey him. A special commission then installed Parker, Bishop of Oxford—the new choice of James—while the Fellows were not only driven by royal edict from the University, but the profession of the Church was shut against them A Catholic Bishop was then placed over Magdalene College, and twelve Catholic Fellows were appointed in one day Two years later James felt the bitter truth that this blow, which, as he fondly thought, struck at the root of English Protestantism, had in reality been levelled with suicidal madness at the very prop and pillar of his own throne.

In April 1687 James had published—solely on his own authority, and therefore illegally—**a Declaration of Indulgence,** permitting all his subjects to worship in their own way. Though undoubtedly made for Catholics, it gave liberty of conscience also to Nonconformists or Dissenters. The Second and more important Declaration was now proclaimed, and, a week later, it was followed by an Order in Council, commanding all ministers to read it from their pulpits on two successive Sundays. This order the London clergy disobeyed, and the Primate Sancroft, with six Bishops, drew up a petition against the Declaration. James was furious. The seven Bishops were committed to the Tower, where they lay for a week before they were set free on bail. During these exciting events the news spread that a son was born to James. But few believed that the child was of royal blood. The general opinion was, that a child had been smuggled into the palace, and was now passed off as the King's son. That child was afterwards James the Pretender.

April 27, 1688 A.D.

The trial of the Seven Bishops—one of our most important State trials—took place before the Court of King's Bench. They were charged with having published a false, malicious, and seditious libel; and the most skilful lawyers of that time were engaged for their defence. All day the trial went on. With

much difficulty the lawyers for the Crown proved that the Bishops had drawn up and signed the petition, and had delivered it into the hands of the King. It remained for the jury to decide whether or not that petition was a libel. The four
June 29. Judges were divided in their opinions, two against two. It was dark when the jury retired. they were locked up all night, and at ten next morning the Court met to hear their verdict. A deep silence prevailed; but, when the words "Not guilty" left the foreman's lips, cheer after cheer echoed through the hall. The crowd outside took up the joyful sound, and all London was soon filled with shouts and tears of gladness. That night was a blaze of illumination. Rows of seven candles, with a taller one in the centre for the Archbishop, lit up every window; bonfires were in every street; and rockets soared by hundreds from the rejoicing city.

Furious at his defeat, James resolved to crush the spirit of the nation by force of arms; and by the advice of Barillon, the French minister, he brought over several regiments of Irish soldiers. These, as Catholics and Celts, were violently hated by the lower orders of the English nation. A doggerel ballad, called from its burden **Lillibulero**, set the whole nation, and especially the army, in a flame against James and his Irish troops. It was sung and whistled everywhere.

On the very day of the Bishops' acquittal, a letter, signed by some of the leading nobles and clergy of England, was sent to **William, Prince of Orange Nassau**, the nephew and son-in-law of James, entreating him to come with an army and aid them in defending their freedom and their faith. Common wrongs had united for a time the Whigs and the Tories. William, accepting the call, began to make great preparations for the expedition; while James, still holding blindly on in his fatal course, despised the warnings and the offered aid of Louis XIV. Nor did he awake to a sense of his danger till he heard from his minister at the Hague that William, having received the sanction of the States General, had published a Declaration, assigning reasons for the invasion of England. James had no time to lose. In a few hours he yielded almost all the points, for which he had been contending so obstinately during three years. He found that he possessed a fleet of 30 sail, an army of 40,000 regular troops. But all was in vain. The hearts of his people were estranged from him, and their eyes looked eagerly over the sea for the sails of William's squadron.

Though delayed for a time by storms, the Prince of Orange

landed safely and unopposed at **Torbay** in Devonshire Under torrents of rain, along roads deep with mire, he advanced slowly with his force of 15,000 men through Newton Nov 5, Abbot, and in four days reached Exeter, where he was 1688 received with joy as the champion of the Protestant A.D. faith There, on the following Sunday, he heard his friend Burnet preach from the cathedral pulpit. A week passed without anything to encourage him, but then the Earl of Abingdon entered his camp, and was soon followed by Colonel Lord Cornbury and other officers of James The King hastened to Salisbury, resolved to stake his kingdom on the issue of a great battle. But the policy of William was to avoid bloodshed, and trust rather to time and that English temper, which he knew to be thoroughly aroused against James. A few trifling skirmishes took place, but nothing more. The Earl of Bath put Plymouth into William's hands. In rapid succession Lord Churchill, afterwards the great Duke of Marlborough, Prince George of Denmark, married to the King's daughter Anne, and even Anne herself, abandoned the falling King Every day brought new adherents to William, while every day the circle round James grew thinner.

The King then resolved on **flight.** He sent his wife and son to France; and, when he knew of their safety, he left his palace under cover of darkness, and made his way to Sheerness, where a small vessel, then called a *hoy*, waited for him While crossing the Thames he threw the Great Seal into the water, in the childish hope that he would thus confuse all the plans of the new government. He had scarcely gone on board, when some Kentish fishermen, attracted by the hope of plunder, seized him and kept him a close prisoner. Soon released by an order from the Lords, he returned to the capital and passed thence to Rochester. Dec. 23, A second attempt to escape succeeded, and the news 1688 soon came that James had arrived safely at St. Germains, A.D. and had been warmly welcomed by Louis. Meanwhile William passed from Windsor to London, where nearly every citizen wore the orange riband in his honour.

The Prince of Orange then called an assembly, known as the **Convention.** It differed from a Parliament in nothing but the single fact, that the writs, by which the members were summoned, were issued by one not yet a King But the Prince and his advisers, careful to shape all their measures according to the ancient English Constitution, avoided the name Parliament, and called their assembly a Convention. The throne was then declared

vacant, and great debates ensued on the settlement of affairs. Some proposed a Regency, others that Mary should be Queen, while William held the title of King for her life only Both plans were pointedly rejected by William, who declared that he would go back to Holland rather than accept a position inferior to his wife. A document, called the **Declaration of Rights,** was then drawn up and passed. By it William and Mary were declared King and Queen of England, the chief administration resting with him. The crown was settled first on the children of Mary; then on those of her sister Anne; and, these failing, upon the children of William by any other wife. The son of James II. and his posterity were thus shut out entirely from the succession Halifax took the lead in offering the crown; which William, promising to observe all the laws of the land, accepted for his wife and himself.

The great **English Revolution** was now complete. Thus terminated the grand struggle between Sovereign and Parliament,—not in the establishment of a wild democracy, but in the adjustment and firm foundation of the three great Estates of the Realm,—the King, the Lords, and the Commons,—upon whose due balance and mutual check the strength of our Constitution mainly depends.

James spent the remaining twelve years of his life at St Germains near Paris, a pensioner on the bounty of Louis There he died in 1701. His zeal for the Roman Catholic Church, strengthened and sharpened by the thirst for despotic power common to all the Stuarts, cost him a throne. His perversity and petty spite, his childishness and meanness, glare out from every page of his history. Even the diligence and punctuality in the despatch of business, for which he was remarkable, cease to excite our admiration, when we remember that these qualities, good in themselves, became in his case instruments of the worst tyranny.

Anne Hyde was his first wife. Her daughters, Mary and Anne, educated as Protestants, both held the throne. After her death he married Mary of Modena, whose son, James the Pretender, made more than one attempt to gain the crown of England.

Besides confirming that great principle of our Constitution, which declares that the Sovereign can make or unmake no law, the Revolution released Dissenters from persecution, and caused the Judges, previously liable to be dismissed at the pleasure of the Sovereign, to receive their appointments for life or good conduct.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

FRANCE			
LOUIS XIV,	began to reign 1643	MOHAMMED IV, began to reign	1649
		SOLYMAN III,	1687
SPAIN		EMPEROR	
CHARLES II,	1665	LEOPOLD I,	1658
SWEDEN		POPE	
CHARLES XI,	1660	INNOCENT XI,	1676

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

	A.D
Edict of Nantes revoked by Louis XIV,	1685
League of Augsburg, ...	1686

CHAPTER VI.

WILLIAM III. AND MARY II.

William: Born 1650 A D —Elected King 1688 A D.—Died 1702 A.D.
Mary: Born 1661 A.D.—Elected Queen 1688 A.D.—Died 1694 A.D.

Fate of Jeffreys.
Revolt in Scotland (1689 A.D)
Siege of Derry (1689 A.D)
Battle of the Boyne (1690 A.D)
Massacre of Glencoe (1692 A D)
Foreign Policy
The National Debt.
The Act of Settlement (1701 A.D)
The Darien Colony (1698-1700 A.D.)
William's Death
His Character
Notes

WILLIAM and MARY were crowned in Westminster Abbey, where the chief ministers of James stood around the double
April 11, 1689 A.D. throne. One there was whose crimes were too black for pardon Jeffreys lay in the Tower, to which he had been borne amid the roars of a mob thirsting for his blood He had been found begrimed with coal dust, and in the dress of a common sailor, lurking in a Wapping ale-house. A few days after his arrest he died.

Bloodlessly the great change had been accomplished in England It was not so in Scotland and Ireland

Although the **Scottish Convention**, boldly declaring that James had forfeited the crown, had proclaimed William and Mary, yet the whole nation were not of the same mind The Highland clans, fond of war and excited by a desire to uphold the ancient Scottish name of Stuart, took up arms for James, under Graham of Claverhouse, now Viscount Dundee At the same time, and in the same cause, the Duke of Gordon held out in the Castle of Edinburgh But the insurrection was short-lived. Edinburgh Castle surrendered in a few months. Dundee, meeting General Mackay in battle at the Pass of
July 27. Killiecrankie in Perthshire, was struck down by a bullet just as his clansmen were sweeping all before them. When their leader had fallen, the Highland army soon melted away.

Of greater importance were the events in **Ireland**; for there James himself, surrounded by the Celtic Irish, who looked upon him as a distinguished martyr in the cause of religion, made his last vain struggle for the crown which had fallen from his head. Louis encouraged the expedition; and Tyrconnel, still Lord-

Lieutenant of Ireland, raised a Catholic army Lord Mountjoy, leader of the Irish Protestants, enticed to Paris by falsehood, was shut up in the Bastile James landed, and entered Dublin in triumph.

His first great operation was the siege of **Londonderry**, the stronghold of the Ulster Protestants. The citizens, greatly encouraged by the Rev. George Walker, whose monument still rises from the walls, endured the worst miseries of famine for more than three months; but at last three ships from England broke the boom of fir-wood, secured by cables, laid across the river Foyle, and brought food to the starving garrison. The Irish army, thus baffled, retreated without delay (July 28, 1689).

Marshal Schomberg then arrived with 16,000 troops; and William, soon landing at Carrickfergus, found himself at the head of 40,000 men. Seventeen days later, a great battle was fought on the banks of the **Boyne**, a few miles above Drogheda. Schomberg, a veteran soldier and an intimate friend of William, was shot as he was crossing the water James, totally routed, fled to Waterford, and crossed in haste to France. July 1, **1690** A.D.

But the war was prolonged for a year by Tyrconnel and St. Ruth In the battle of *Aughrim* St. Ruth was killed by a cannon-ball (July 12, 1691) The siege of Limerick, where the fragments of James's army made their last stand, ended in a capitulation (Oct. 3, 1691) On Thomond Bridge, over the Shannon, is still to be seen the stone, on which was signed the treaty that made William unquestioned King of Ireland. One million acres were confiscated to the Crown, and their former possessors were driven into exile. The completion of this Irish war marks the end of the second and greater English Revolution.

The great stain upon the administration of William was the massacre of **Glencoe**. To buy over the Highland chiefs, who were still restless, a sum of £16,000 was sent to the Earl of Breadalbane, and at the same time a royal order decreed that all chieftains of clans should take an oath of allegiance to William before the last day of the year 1691. One delayed,—Macdonald of Glencoe, a personal foe of Breadalbane. His motive seems to have been, not so much enmity to William, as a quarrel with Breadalbane about the division of the money. Repenting of his obstinacy in the last days of December, he hastened to Fort William, but found that the governor had no authority to receive his oath, and that he must go to the Sheriff of Argyle at Inverary. A toilsome journey over snowy hills and across swollen

floods threw him a day or two late; but he was permitted to take the oath, and went home well pleased, and, as he thought, safe In a few weeks Captain Campbell of Glenlyon, with a troop of soldiers, entered Glencoe, a gloomy vale of Argyleshire, in which lay the little settlement of the Macdonalds They were met with a Highland welcome, and a fortnight went merrily by. The unsuspecting Macdonalds left nothing undone to please and entertain their guests. Hunting and feasting filled the days and the nights, until, when the time seemed
Feb 13, ripe, the soldiers rose suddenly before the winter dawn
1692 and began the work of blood The chief, his wife, and
A D. thirty-six besides were butchered; the rest fled half naked to the snowy hills, where many died. The earliest beams of the rising sun fell sadly on a mass of smoking ruins. This foul deed can be traced to the revenge of Breadalbane William seems to have signed the order without understanding the circumstances, but this does not redeem his memory from the shame, for carelessness can never be considered a palliation of the crimes that too often spring from it.

To humble Louis of France was the great object of William's **foreign policy.** Louis was the most powerful Catholic Sovereign in Europe William had long been looked upon as the great Captain of the Protestant armies. Louis, grasping gladly at the dethronement of James as a cause of war, prepared for
1692 a mighty invasion of England; but, in an action off
A D. **La Hogue** with the ships of England and Holland, his fleet was so shattered that his plans all fell to the ground. Every summer then saw William on the Continent, in spite of his delicate health, engaged in hostilities with Louis, whom, though he could not humble, he kept in constant check, —a matter of the utmost importance to all Europe. The chief battles of this Continental War were *Steinkirk* (1692); *Landen* or *Neerwinden* (1693),—in both of which William gained honour, though forced to retreat; and the great siege of **Namur** (1695), which ended in the capitulation of the French. The Treaty of Ryswick in 1697 brought the war to a close.

Out of these expensive wars sprang the **National Debt,** which has since swelled to a sum so enormous. The Parliament, knowing that the chief value of the English crown in William's eyes was the increased weight it gave him in Continental politics, agreed to furnish large supplies of money for his wars with Louis, on condition that he should give up to them the chief share in the domestic government. Though at first reluctant, he soon

yielded to the arrangement with a grace and temper which proved his good sense The influence, thus acquired by the Commons, has never since been lost.

Queen Mary died of small-pox in the year 1694, leaving William sole ruler During his eight remaining years the Commons took three remarkable steps in their encroachments on the power of the Crown. These were the Triennial Bill, the arrangement of the Civil List, and the Act of Settlement. The *Triennial Bill* enacted that no Parliament should sit longer than three years,—an arrangement by which the influence of the King over that body was much lessened. A sum of £700,000 was settled on the King to meet the expenses of the *Civil List*, while all the remaining revenue was left in the hands of the Commons to support the army and navy, and defray the cost of government. The **Act of Settlement**—a sequel to the Declaration of Rights—provided that the Judges should hold office for life or good conduct, at fixed salaries; that the Sovereigns of Great Britain should be Protestants in communion with the Church of England; that they should not leave their dominions without the consent of Parliament, and that the Princess Sophia of Hanover should be considered next heir to the throne. **1701** A.D.

A trading company, embodied by an Act of the Scottish Parliament, founded a colony in 1698 on the Isthmus of **Darien**, as a central position for commerce with both India and America. The sum of £400,000, subscribed in Scotland, which was then a poor country, was embarked in the venture. The merchants of London and Amsterdam took shares to the same amount But the colony was ruined and the money all lost. The East India Company, looking on the expedition as an invasion of their rights, induced the King to set his face against it The settlers, badly supported by their countrymen, sank into want Disease carried them off in scores The neighbouring British colonies, either through jealousy or acting under orders from home, refused to lend any assistance. And to crown all, the Spaniards, claiming the soil on which their town, New Edinburgh, was built, harassed them with ceaseless attacks. Very few of the unhappy colonists ever saw Scotland again.

William, riding from Kensington to Hampton Court, fell from his horse and broke his collar-bone. This was in itself a slight injury, but, acting on a frame naturally feeble and worn out by long-continued asthma, it brought on a fever, of which he died at Kensington. He left no children. **Mar. 8, 1702** A.D.

William of Orange was a man prematurely old. Left early an

orphan, he had learned in a hard school to be self reliant and reserved, and at an age, when boys are thinking of the cricket bat and the fishing rod before all things else, he was deeply learned in politics and skilled in the discipline of armies For literature and science he had little love He possessed a courage that was calm amid every species of danger, and never did he rejoice so much as in the day of battle His most intimate—almost his only—friend was Bentinck a Dutch gentleman, whom he created Earl of Portland His frame was feeble, his cheek was pale and thin from long-continued disease, but to his latest day the flashing of his eagle eye and the compression of his firmly cut lips told at once that bodily anguish had never tamed the iron soul within

In 1695 the Bank of England, with a capital of £1,200,000, was founded by Paterson, a Scotchman In the following year an English merchant, named Holland, set up the Bank of Scotland, with little more than £100,000 Paper money then came into use Chelsea Hospital, for old and disabled soldiers, was founded by William and Mary, who also gave up their palace at Greenwich to the veterans of the navy It was during this reign that Peter the Great of Russia worked as a ship carpenter in the dockyard at Deptford

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

FRANCE			
LOUIS XIV, began to reign	1643	ACHMET II, began to reign	1691
		MUSTAPHA II,	1695
SPAIN			
CHARLES II,	1665	EMPEROR	
PHILIP V,	1700	LEOPOLD I.,	1658
		POPES	
CHARLES XI,	1660	INNOCENT XI,	1676
CHARLES XII,	1697	ALEXANDER VIII,	1689
		INNOCENT XII.,	1691
SOLYMAN III,	1687	CLEMENT XI,	1700

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

Peter the Great sole ruler in Russia,	1689	Battle of Narva (Russia),	1700
Charles XII. becomes King of Sweden, . . .	1697	The Grand Alliance (against the Bourbons), .	1701
		Prussia becomes a kingdom,	1701

CHAPTER VII.

ANNE.

Born 1664 A.D —Began to reign 1702 A D —Died 1714 A.D.

The Spanish Succession
Capture of Gibraltar (1704 A D)
Victories of Marlborough.
Whigs and Tories
The Union of England and Scotland (1707 A D)
James the Pretender
Abigail Hill.
Trial of Sacheverell (1710 A.D).
Fall of the Whigs
The Treaty of Utrecht (1713 A.D)
Anne's Death.
Her Character
Notes

On the death of William **Anne**, the second daughter of James II., became Queen. Her husband, Prince George of Denmark, sat in the House of Lords as Duke of Cumberland, but took no further share in the government The policy of the late reign was followed. The Whigs remained in power, and the French war was continued.

A new cause of war had arisen in a dispute about the **Spanish Succession.** Louis claimed the crown of Spain for his grandson, who afterwards ruled as Philip V. Britain supported the rival claim of the Archduke Charles Germany and Holland united with Britain in the Grand Alliance against the ambitious Louis, and Churchill—soon created Duke of Marlborough—led the allied armies. The chief theatres of the war were Spain and the Low Countries, which have been well named "The Battle-fields of Modern Europe" One of the most important achievements of the war was the capture of **Gibraltar** by Admiral Rooke and Sir Cloudesley Shovel Aided by a body of Hessian troops, the British, landing on the isthmus which joins the Rock to the mainland, carried the works by storm in spite of a heavy fire. July, 1710

Marlborough humbled the power of France in four great battles. At Blenheim in Bavaria, in 1704, he defeated Marshal Tallard. At Ramilies in South Brabant, in 1706, he overthrew Villeroi. At Oudenarde in East Flanders, in 1708, the French lost 15,000 men, and more than one hundred banners. The capture of Lisle was a result of this victory. And at Malplaquet, on the north-eastern frontier of France, in 1709, a still bloodier victory was won by the genius of Marlborough.

In Spain the principal incidents of the war were the burning of Spanish galleons at *Vigo* by Sir George Rooke (1702); the

reduction of *Barcelona* by the Earl of Peterborough (1705); the defeat of Galway, who commanded for the Archduke, by Berwick at **Almanza** (1707), and the siege of *Lerida*, which decided the issue of the Spanish war in favour of Philip. It was not until 1713 that the Peace of Utrecht gave rest to exhausted Europe.

Politics.—Anne, though at heart a Tory, was long compelled to yield to the guidance of her Whig ministers. Of these the principal were Godolphin, the Lord High Treasurer; Marlborough, the Captain-General of the Forces and the Master of the Ordnance, and Sunderland, the Secretary of State. The strife between Whigs and Tories raged at this time more fiercely than ever around two great questions,—the War and the Church. The Whigs cried out for war; the Tories sought the restoration of peace. The Whigs were Low Church, the Tories, noted for attachment to Episcopacy, bore the name of the High Church party. A measure, called the Occasional Conformity Bill, was brought into Parliament by the Tories. It was levelled against those who attended places of worship not of the Established Church, after they had sworn to the Test Oath and had received public appointments These Occasional Conformists were to suffer dismissal and heavy fine. The Bill passed the Commons, but was lost in the Lords It was, nevertheless, a remarkable sign of the growing influence of the Tory party

Such was the state of politics when a question of much greater importance arose,—the necessity of a **Union** between the Parliaments of England and Scotland The nations were not on good terms. The Scottish Parliament, still smarting under the disasters at Darien, had passed an *Act of Security* (1704), which decreed that the successor to the throne of Scotland, on the Queen's death, should not be the person chosen by the English Parliament, unless the commercial privileges enjoyed by England were extended to Scotland also. The Scottish nation then assumed an attitude of war. But commissioners were
1707 appointed,—thirty on each side; and by them a Treaty
A.D. of Union was framed, which, although met by a storm of opposition from the people of Scotland, passed the Scottish Parliament by a majority of 41 votes (110 for, 69 against). The chief terms of the Union were:—

1. That the Electress Sophia of Hanover, and her heirs, if Protestants, should succeed to the crown of the United Kingdom.

2. That Scotland should be represented in the Imperial Parliament, sitting in London, by sixteen elective Peers and forty-five members of the Commons.

3 That all British ports and colonies should be opened to Scottish traders

4. That while the laws of public policy should be the same for both countries, those relating to property and private rights should be preserved unaltered, except for the good of the Scottish people.

5. That the Court of Session and other Scottish tribunals should remain unchanged.

6 That the Church of Scotland should be maintained, as already by law established.

To make up for the heavier taxes, which were thus laid upon the Scottish people, a grant of £398,000 was made to improve the coinage.

The Union has done incalculable good to Scotland. The strong objections, urged at first against the change, were the loss of independence and the increased load of taxation; but these were only seeming evils. The commerce, the wealth, and the greatness of Scotland began to advance with rapid strides Fishing villages became thriving sea-ports, Glasgow and Dundee sprang into great and populous cities. Among the people who, with much difficulty, managed to pinch and scrape together £400,000 to found the Darien Colony, we can now point out many a merchant-prince, whose single fortune far exceeds that sum.

Louis XIV., taking advantage of the discontent excited in Scotland by the Union, despatched a fleet from Dunkirk to set James the Pretender on the Scottish throne. But timely notice reached England; and the French admiral, finding the Firth of Forth guarded by a squadron under Sir George Byng, returned with the loss of one ship.

Meanwhile **Tory influence** was growing strong in the Cabinet. The Whigs had retained their ascendency over the Queen chiefly by the aid of Sarah, Duchess of Marlborough, who was on terms of the most intimate friendship with her Majesty. But the favourite grew insolent, and the Queen became weary of a companion who tried to have the upper-hand in everything. A waiting-woman, named Abigail Hill, otherwise known as Mrs. Masham, secretly encouraging their quarrels, at last insinuated herself into the confidence and favour of Anne. Hill was a Tory, and one of the earliest results of her influence was the introduction into the Cabinet of Robert Harley (Earl of Oxford) and Henry St. John (Lord Bolingbroke), the leaders of the Tory party.

Just then occurred events, which stirred all England into a flame in favour of the Tories. Dr Henry **Sacheverell**, rector of St Saviour's, Southwark, had preached two sermons—one (August 15) at Derby, another (November 5, 1709) at St Paul's before the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of London—in which he denounced the Revolution as an unrighteous change, maintained the duty of fierce persecution against all Dissenters, and called on the people to defend their Church, which was in imminent danger. The Commons impeached him for uttering seditious libels; and the case came on before the Lords. The
Feb. 27, trial lasted three weeks. All the clergy and the common
1710 people were for Sacheverell. The Queen attended the
A.D. trial privately, to give him encouragement. Bishop Atterbury wrote his defence. Every day, as he drove to and from the court, his coach was followed by cheering mobs, whose feelings, not content with this display, found further vent in the destruction of Dissenting houses of worship, and in riots that filled the streets with alarm. He was found guilty, and forbidden to preach for three years. The sermons were burned in front of the Royal Exchange.

The fall of the **Whig ministry** was an immediate result of this trial. Godolphin and Sunderland, with their less important colleagues, were dismissed. Harley and St John came into office. Marlborough, though retained in his command on account of the still raging war, was marked for disgrace, and no sooner did the Tory ministers see their way to the conclusion of peace than the Duke, accused of receiving bribes from a Jew who supplied the army with bread, was compelled to resign his high office. To Blenheim Park, the nation's gift for one of his greatest victories, he retired, leaving on the pages of our history a character marked with the highest military genius, but sullied with falsehood and base avarice.

The **Treaty of Utrecht**, already mentioned, was the work of the Tories. The principal terms which concerned Great
1713 Britain were, that Louis XIV. should recognize the
A.D. Sovereigns of the Brunswick line; that he should cease to aid the Pretender; that he should dismantle the batteries of Dunkirk; and that the British should retain Gibraltar and Minorca, Nova Scotia, Newfoundland, and Hudson's Bay. Harley and St. John became Peers; but their union was at an end. Henceforward they were rivals and foes. Anne favoured Bolingbroke.

The question of Patronage, or who should have the appoint-

ment of ministers, agitated the Church of Scotland, and several secessions took place about the end of this reign.

Then, too, the Scottish members sitting in the British Parliament began to feel all the petty annoyances at first inseparable from a change of the kind. Their country, their accent, their habits, their appearance were thought fair marks for the sarcasm of English orators; and so high did their discontent rise, that the question of dissolving the Union was solemnly debated in 1713. Happily for both countries, the measure was lost in the Lords, but only by a narrow majority.

Anne died of apoplexy after two days' illness. She had lost her husband six years before Not one of her nineteen children was then living. One boy, George, reached the age of eleven years. The rest all died in infancy. Aug 1, 1714 A.D.

She was a woman of little talent and less learning, simple and homely in all her tastes and habits The expression of her face was heavy—to the careless eye it might even seem stupid; but it was the dull look of one, upon whom sorrow had laid a heavy hand, chilling her motherly affections, and withering, one by one, the gentle household blossoms of her life.

In 1703 the Eddystone light-house was swept away by a storm, when Winstanley, the architect, perished St. Paul's Cathedral was finished in 1708. It cost about a million, and the building occupied thirty-seven years The reign of Anne is noted as a brilliant literary period. Addison, Steele, Defoe, and Swift were the chief prose writers. Pope was the leading poet.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

	A.D		A.D
FRANCE			
LOUIS XIV., began to reign	1643	ACHMET III, began to reign	1705
SPAIN.			
PHILIP V.,	1700	LEOPOLD I.,	1658
		JOSEPH I.,	1705
SWEDEN			
CHARLES XII.,	1697	CHARLES VI,	1711
TURKEY		POPE	
MUSTAPHA II.,	1695	CLEMENT XI,	1700

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS.

	A.D.
War of Spanish Succession,	1701–13
Death of Aurungzebe (Asia),	1707
Battle of Pultowa (Russia),	1709

CHAPTER VIII.

SOCIAL CONDITION OF THE PEOPLE UNDER THE STUARTS.

The Face of the Country	London	Health and Morals.
Animals	Country Gentlemen	Dress.
Mineral Wealth	The Clergy	Travelling
Population.	The Yeomen	The News-letter
Provincial Towns	The Labouring Classes	State of Learning

SURFACE.—Though in former periods the face of Britain changed much as years rolled by, yet the change since the Stuarts reigned has perhaps been the most marked of all. Where there are now to be seen green meadows and yellow corn-fields, orchards white with spring blossoms, or golden with autumn fruit, and cosy farm-houses nestling among the sheltering trees, there was then in many places nothing but forest, furze, or marsh

Animals.—Through the old woods wandered deer in great troops, a few wild bulls, and, until the peasantry killed them during the Civil War, wild boars, long preserved for royal sport. Badgers, wild cats, immense eagles, huge bustards were common even in the southern and eastern lowlands of England The sheep and oxen were much smaller than ours The British horses, now famed all the world over, then sold for fifty shillings each Spanish jennets for the saddle, and grey Flanders mares for harness were the breeds most prized.

Minerals.—Our mines were still poorly worked. Cornwall yielded tin, and Wales yielded copper, but in quantities far below the present supply. Salt, now a leading export, was then so badly prepared that the physicians blamed it as the cause of many diseases of the skin and lungs. The iron manufacture was checked by the cry, which was raised about the waste of wood in the furnaces The smelters had not yet learned to use coal, which was still only a domestic fuel, burned in the districts where it abounded, and in London, whither it was carried by sea.

The **population** of England at the close of the seventeenth century was about five millions and a half The increase of people in the northern counties far exceeded that in the south of the island. The cause of this may be found in the rapid improvement of these counties, which followed the union of the Crowns in 1603. Previously, the north had been constantly

ravaged by the Border robbers, called Moss-troopers, from whom no house or herd was safe. Gradually these freebooters were hunted down and extirpated. Blood-hounds were kept in many northern parishes to track them to their dens. The paths of the country, long unknown, were opened, life and property became secure. Coal-beds were discovered Manufacturing towns began to rise, and were soon filled with a thriving population.

Towns.—After the capital, Bristol was the greatest English seaport; and Norwich, the chief manufacturing town, under the Stuarts. The Bristol citizens, among whom the sugar-refiners took the lead, were far-famed for wealth and hospitality. The great seats of manufacture were then small and badly-built market towns Manchester, the modern centre of the cotton trade, contained only 6000 inhabitants, and could boast of neither a printing-press nor a hackney-coach. Leeds, now the great woollen mart, had a population of about 7000 persons Sheffield, whose forges send out the best cutlery in the world, held barely 2000 inhabitants Birmingham, only rising into notice, was proud of sending her hard-ware so far off as Ireland. There were not more than 200 seamen belonging to the port of Liverpool Buxton, Bath, and Tunbridge Wells were the fashionable watering-places of the time; but the lodgings were very poor, and the food sold in these places was of the most wretched description. Brighton and Cheltenham are of modern growth.

London, when Charles II died, had a population of half a million. One old bridge spanned the Thames, and the houses were all built with the upper stories projecting over the shops below. The city was the merchant's home He did not then, as now, leave his counting-house after business hours for a gay villa in the suburbs. No numbers marked the houses; but, instead of these, the streets were lined with the signs of shops—here the Saracen's Head—there the Golden Key. By these the people described their dwellings, and strangers found their way. The streets, not lighted until the last year of Charles II., and then only during the winter, were infested with robbers, and teemed with other dangers It was the height of fashion among dissipated young men to parade the foot-way at night, insulting every woman and beating every man they met. From these the feeble tippling watchmen could or would give no protection.

The Coffee-houses, first set up in Cromwell's time, were the great lounges, where the news and scandal of the day were discussed. In one might be seen the exquisites, with their flowing wigs, their embroidered coats, their fringed gloves, and scented

snuff To another crowded literary men to hear John Dryden talk. There were coffee-houses for every class Jews flocked to one; Catholics filled another, Puritans met their brethren in a third; and so with men of every rank and opinion.

The **Country gentlemen,** now a polished and an important class, were, at the time of the Revolution, rough and poorly educated. Their lands yielded rents equal to about one-fourth of those now paid. Seldom leaving their native county even for London, they spent their days in field sports or in attending the neighbouring markets, and their evenings in drinking strong beer. Claret and Canary wines were drunk only by the very wealthy Drunkenness was a common and fashionable vice, and continued to be so more or less until the beginning of the present century The ladies of the family, whose accomplishments seldom rose above the baking of pastry or the brewing of gooseberry wine, cooked the meals of the household In the evening they amused themselves by sewing and spinning The graces of the modern tea-table were quite unknown to the country folk, although that favourite beverage, brought by the Dutch to Europe, was introduced into England by Lords Arlington and Ossory in 1666 It was not till nearly a century later that the middle classes of London and Edinburgh began to use tea daily In the latter city in the reigns of the Georges tea was taken at four o'clock, and the meal was thence called "four hours" But beneath all the roughness of the rural gentry lay qualities, which have highly exalted the British character Reverence for hereditary monarchy and strong attachment to the Protestant faith were their leading principles.

The country **Clergy** stood low in the social scale In most mansions there was a chaplain, or, as he was often called, a *Levite*, who, receiving his board and £10 a year, was no better than an upper servant. His wife was often taken from the kitchen of his patron. Even if he got a parish he lived and worked like a peasant: his sons were ploughmen and his daughters went to service. It must not be forgotten that the London clergy, among whom were Sherlock, Tillotson, and Stillingfleet, formed a class by themselves, and well upheld the character of their Church for zeal, learning, and eloquence.

The yeomen or small **Farmers,** whose income averaged £60 or £70 a year, were numerous and influential Their chief characteristics were a leaning towards Puritanism and a hatred of Catholicism. From this class chiefly were drawn the Ironsides of Cromwell.

Of the **Labouring classes** we know little Four-fifths of them were employed in agriculture. In Devon, Suffolk, and Essex the highest wages were paid, averaging five shillings a week without food Those engaged in manufactures earned about six shillings a week Children were employed in factories to an immense extent, and even by the benevolent were thought fit for work at six years of age The chief food of the poor was rye, barley, or oats Rude ballads were their only means of complaint, and in these they poured forth their woes The poor-rate was the heaviest tax, for the paupers amounted to no less than one-fifth of the community.

Sanitary reform was greatly needed. Even in the streets of the capital open sewers and heaps of filth poisoned the air. The deaths in London in 1685 were more than one in twenty-three, the yearly average now is about one in forty People of coarse and brutal natures were found in all classes in great numbers. Nor is this wonderful, when the training of every-day life is considered. Masters beat their servants, husbands beat their wives, daily Teachers knew no way of imparting knowledge but by the lash The mob rejoiced in fights of all kinds, and shouted with glee, when an eye was torn out or a finger chopped off in these savage encounters Executions were favourite public spectacles. The prisons were constantly full, and proved to be most fruitful nurseries of dirt, disease, and crime.

To describe the various **costumes** and manners of the period would be impossible within the compass of a paragraph. One or two points on this head must suffice here The Cavalier and the Roundhead present a striking contrast in their dress and habits. Bright colours, profuse ornament, and graceful style marked the costume of the *Cavalier* His richly-laced cloak, over which lay an embroidered collar, his broad-leafed hat of beaver with its white and flowing plume, his silken doublet of the Vandyke pattern, his flowing love-locks, gilt spurs, and slashed boots, made up a figure the most picturesque of any period in our history The *Puritan* or Roundhead wore a cloak of sad-coloured brown or black, a plain collar of linen laid carelessly down on the plaited cloth, and a hat with a high steeple-shaped crown over his closely clipt, or lank straight hair. His baptismal name was cast aside, and some strange religious phrase adopted in its stead. His language was full of Scripture texts; and these he delivered through his nose with a peculiar and ridiculous twang. But, for all these solemn freaks, the Puritan character was metal of the true ring and sterling value, and is well deserving of our

highest respect. Charles II. introduced the peruke, a long flowing wig which covered even the shoulders. It continued to be the fashion until after the close of the period

The roads were so bad that **travelling** was very difficult. In bad weather there was generally only a slight ridge in the centre of the road between two channels of deep mud Instead of sloping gradually, the roads went right up and down the hills The stage-waggon and pack-horses carried goods, the former taking passengers also Rich men travelled in their own coaches, but they were obliged often to have six horses to pull them through the mud. In 1669 a "Flying Coach" left Oxford at six in the morning, and reached London at seven the same evening,—a feat then considered wonderful and dangerous From Chester, York, and Exeter, a winter journey to London took six days We owe the immense improvement of our roads since those days chiefly to the Turnpikes. The inns were good and comfortable,—as indeed they would need to be, when so many nights were spent on the road Highwaymen, well armed and mounted on fine horses, infested all the great roads, and it is said that many of the innkeepers were paid by them to give information about those travellers who were worth attacking The post-bags were carried on horseback at the rate of five miles an hour; but in many country places letters were delivered only once a week.

There was nothing at all equal to our modern **newspaper.** Small single leaves were published twice a week, while the Exclusion Bill was discussed; but the only paper afterwards allowed was *The London Gazette*, a two-paged bi-weekly sheet of very meagre contents. No Parliamentary debates, no State trials were permitted to be reported. An important feature of social life during this age was *The News-letter*. This was an epistle, despatched to the country generally once a week, giving all the chat of the coffee-houses and the news of the capital. Several families subscribed to pay some Londoner, who gave them the scraps of news gathered during his rambles. "Our own correspondent" is the modern representative of the system.

Learning.—There were few printing presses in the country except in London and at the Universities. The only press north of the Trent was at York. Books were therefore scarce and dear, and very few were to be found in the best country houses. In London the booksellers' shops were thronged with readers. Female education was at a very low point, and the most accomplished ladies spelled their letters very badly. At the Universities Greek was little studied; but Latin, in which Govern-

ments still conducted their correspondence, was for this reason spoken and written with elegance and ease But French was rapidly rising to be the language of diplomacy. Astronomy was ably cultivated by Halley and Flamsteed, the latter of whom was the first astronomer-royal Natural Philosophy owed its birth as a science to Isaac Newton But the favourite and fashionable study of the latter Stuart days was Chemistry. Charles II had a laboratory in his palace of Whitehall Even the ladies were smitten with the rage for science, and began to talk learnedly of magnets and microscopes It was soon discovered that chemistry—so long a worthless pursuit—might be turned to the improvement of agriculture Experiments were made on various soils, new fruits and vegetables were grown in the gardens, and farmers began to think that perhaps after all there might be some profit in the study of science.

LEADING AUTHORS OF THE STUART PERIOD

MICHAEL DRAYTON, (1563–1631)—poet—chief works, *Polyolbion,* the *Barons Wars,* and *Nymphidia*

FRANCIS BEAUMONT, (1586–1615), and **JOHN FLETCHER,** (1576–1625)—wrote plays together, fifty two in all—Beaumont composed the more tragic portions, Fletcher the comic

BEN JONSON, (1574–1637)—dramatic poet—at first a bricklayer—then a soldier—earliest play, *Every Man in his Humour,* 1598—made Poet Laureate in 1619

PHILIP MASSINGER, (1584–1640)—dramatic poet—lived chiefly in London—poor and obscure—chief play, *A New Way to Pay Old Debts*

KING JAMES I (of England)—pupil of Buchanan—author of *Dæmonologie* (a dialogue on witchcraft), *Basilicon Doron,* and *Counterblast to Tobacco*

WILLIAM DRUMMOND, (1585–1649)—Scottish lyric poet—lived at Hawthornden—wrote *Sonnets,* the *Flowers of Zion,* and *The River of Forth Feasting*

ROBERT HERRICK, (1591–1674)—Vicar of Dean Prior in Devonshire—expelled thence by Civil War—sweetest lyric poet of the Cavaliers

THOMAS HOBBES, (1588–1679)—Tutor to Charles II—author of *Leviathan* (a treatise of political philosophy), and *Behemoth* (a history of the Civil Wars)

IZAAK WALTON, (1593–1683)—a linen draper of Cornhill—author of *The Complete Angler,* and various *Lives* (Donne, Hooker, George Herbert, &c.)—favourite stream, the *Dove*

JEREMY TAYLOR, (1613–1667)—Bishop of Down and Connor—the English Chrysostom—chief works, *Holy Living* and *Holy Dying*

JOHN MILTON, (1608–1674)—greatest epic poet of modern ages—Latin Secretary to Cromwell—finest work, *Paradise Lost,* an epic in twelve books, on the Fall; written in blindness and poverty, between 1658 and 1665—other works, *Paradise Regained,* a shorter epic, *Comus,* a masque, *Lycidas, Samson Agonistes, L'Allegro* and *Il Penseroso,* short descriptive poems, and many fine sonnets—wrote also prose, of which *Areopagitica* is the finest specimen.

EDWARD HYDE, (1608–1674)—Earl of Clarendon—minister of Charles I—an exile during the Commonwealth—Lord Chancellor from 1660 to 1667—wrote *History of the Rebellion,* that is, of the Civil War—not published till Anne's reign.

SAMUEL BUTLER, (1612–1680)—son of a Worcestershire farmer—chief work, *Hudibras,* a mock-heroic poem, in short couplets, written to caricature the Puritans, and published in the reign of Charles II

JOHN BUNYAN, (1628–1688)—a tinker of Bedford—afterwards a soldier—then a Baptist preacher—imprisoned for preaching—chief work, *The Pilgrim's Progress,* a prose allegory, describing the life and triumph of a Christian under the figure of a journey

RICHARD BAXTER, (1615–1691)—once rector of Kidderminster—then a Presbyterian minister—chief works, *The Saints' Everlasting Rest* and *A Call to the Unconverted*—wrote in all 168 works.

THOMAS OTWAY, (1651–1685)—the finest tragic writer of the time—chief works, *Venice Preserved* and *The Orphan*—died of debauchery

JOHN DRYDEN, (1631–1700)—one of the greatest names in English poetry—chief works, *Absalom and Achitophel,* a political satire, and *Alexander's Feast,* an ode —translated Virgil's *Æneid* into English verse

JOHN LOCKE, (1632–1704)—the great mental philosopher of the period—educated at Oxford—chief work, *An Essay on the Human Understanding,* published in 1690

GILBERT BURNET, (1643–1715)—a Scotchman—very intimate with William III —created Bishop of Salisbury—chief works, *History of my Own Times,* and *History of the Reformation of the Church of England.*

Under Queen Anne **Wycherley, Congreve, Vanbrugh** (architect of Blenheim Palace), and **Farquhar** wrote witty but immoral Comedies. **Arbuthnot** (a satiric physician), author of *John Bull,* and **Prior** (a poetical diplomatist), may be also named.

LEADING ARTISTS.

INIGO JONES, (1572–1652)—a native of London—a distinguished architect—designed the Banqueting-house of Whitehall.

PETER PAUL RUBENS, (1577–1640)—a celebrated painter of the Flemish school—a pupil of Titian—patronized by Charles I, for whom he painted the Banqueting-house of Whitehall.

ANTHONY VANDYKE, (1599–1641)—a Flemish painter—pupil of Rubens—lived for some time at the Court of Charles I, whose portrait he painted.

SIR PETER LELY, (1617–1680)—a painter of Westphalia—patronized by Charles II —the leading portraits of the Court Beauties are from his brush

SIR CHRISTOPHER WREN, (1632–1723)—the only distinguished English artist in the latter Stuart reigns—a famous architect—chief design, St Paul's Cathedral.

SIR GODFREY KNELLER, (1643–1723)—a German portrait-painter—lived at the Courts of William III., Anne, and George I

LEADING DATES OF THE STUART PERIOD

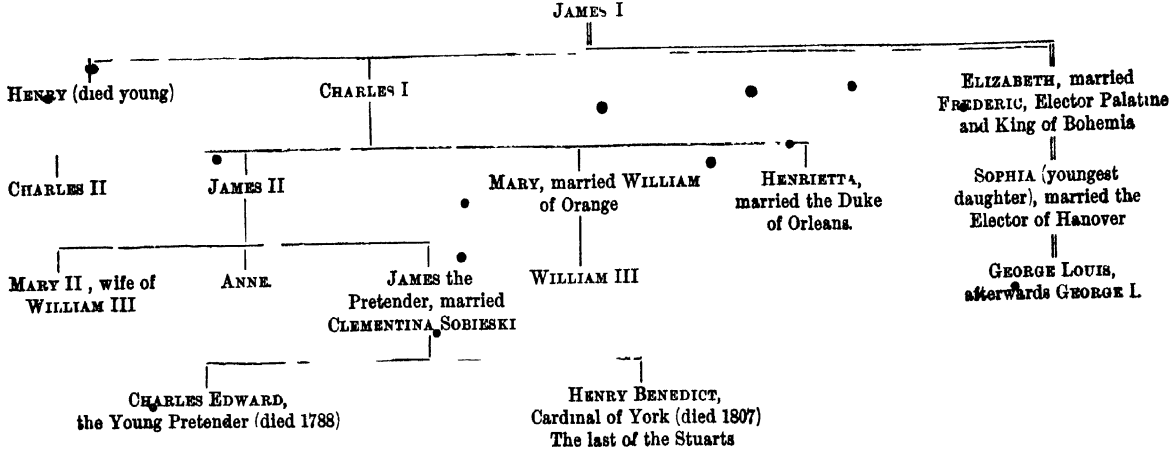
GENERAL EVENTS.	A D	
Gunpowder Plot,	1605.	James I.
Raleigh beheaded,	1618	—
Lord Bacon degraded,	1620.	—
Trial of Hampden,	1637	Charles I.
National Covenant signed (Scotland),	1638	—
Charles given up by the Scots,	1647	—
Charles I. beheaded,	1649.	—

	A D	
The Plague,	1665	Charles II
The Great Fire,	1666	—
Flight of Clarendon,	1667	—
William of Orange marries Mary, daughter of Duke of York,	1677	—
Trial of the Bishops,	1688	James II
Landing of the Prince of Orange,	—	—
Massacre of Glencoe,	1692	—
Darien Colony founded,	1698	William III.
Trial of Sacheverell,	1710	Anne
CONSTITUTIONAL CHANGES		
Union of English and Scottish crowns,	1603	James I
Petition of Right,	1628	Charles I.
The Long Parliament begins,	1640	—
Cromwell expels the Long Parliament,	1653	Commonwealth.
Instrument of Government,	—	—
The Restoration,	1660	Charles II
The Test Act,	1673	—
The Habeas Corpus Act,	1679	—
The Second Declaration of Indulgence,	1688	James II
The Revolution,	—	—
The Declaration of Rights,	—	—
Triennial Bill,	1694	—
The Act of Settlement,	1701	William III
The Union of the English and Scottish Parliaments,	1707	Anne
DOMINION ACQUIRED		
Jamaica taken,	1655	Commonwealth
Gibraltar taken,	1704	Anne.
WARS, BATTLES, TREATIES		
Thirty Years' War begins,	1618	James I.
The Great Civil War		
Royal standard raised at Nottingham, August 25,	1642	Charles I.
Battle of Edgehill, October 23,	—	—
Gloucester relieves Essex, September 5,	1643	—
First Battle of Newbury, September 20,	—	—
Scots invade the North, January,	1644	—
Battle of Marston Moor, July 2,	—	—
Second Battle of Newbury, October 27,	—	—
Self-denying Ordinance, April 3,	1645	—
Battle of Naseby, June 14,	—	—
Battle of Dunbar,	1650	Commonwealth.
Battle of Worcester,	1651	
Battle of the Texel (Van Tromp slain),	1653	

	A D	
Blake victor at Teneriffe,	1657	Commonwealth
Secret Treaty of Dover,	1670	Charles II
Battle of Sedgemoor	1685	James II.
— Killiecrankie,	1689	William III.
— Boyne,	1690	—
— La Hogue,	1692	—
— Steinkirk,	—	—
— Landen,	1693	—
Siege of Namur,	1695	—
Treaty of Ryswick,	1697	—
Battle of Blenheim,	1704	Anne.
Barcelona taken,	1705	—
Battle of Ramilies,	1706	—
— Almanza,	1707	—
— Oudenarde,	1708	—
— Malplaquet,	1709	—
Treaty of Utrecht.	1713. ..	—

GENEALOGICAL TREE

CONNECTING THE STUARTS WITH THE GUELPHS



GUELPH LINE; OR, HOUSE OF BRUNSWICK.

Opened 1714 A D —Has already lasted 155 years.—6 Sovereigns.

GEORGE I. (great-grandson of James I.),	began to reign 1714	**REGENCY** of the Prince of Wales,	1811
GEORGE II (son),	1727	**GEORGE IV** (son),	1820
GEORGE III (grandson),	1760	**WILLIAM IV.** (brother),	1830
		VICTORIA (niece),	1837

Leading Feature:—THE INFLUENCE OF THE HOUSE OF COMMONS GREATER THAN AT ANY FORMER PERIOD.

CHAPTER I.

GEORGE I.

Born 1660 A.D —Began to reign 1714 A D.—Died 1727 A D.

Hanover United to England
Policy of George
Fall of the Tories
The Riot Act (1715 A D)
"The Fifteen" (1715 A D)
The Septennial Act (1716 A D)
Sweden and Spain
The South Sea Scheme (1720 A D)
Golden Dreams
The Crash
Robert Walpole
Death of the King
Character
Notes

GEORGE I, already **Elector of Hanover**, became King of the British Empire at the age of fifty-four His father was Ernest Augustus of Hanover, his mother was Sophia, daughter of Elizabeth, Queen of Bohemia, and therefore grand-daughter of James I. Having spent all his previous life in Germany, he knew but little of England, and to his last day could neither speak nor write the English language well. His wife was Sophia of Brunswick, his own cousin, whom he treated with great cruelty, keeping her for upwards of thirty years shut up in a castle of Hanover, where not even her own children were allowed to see her. By his accession the crowns of Britain and Hanover were united.

George favoured the Whigs, by whom he had been called to the throne, and took no pains to conceal his dread and dislike of the Tories. His policy is easily understood. It was guided

mainly by two principles,—an intense fondness for **Hanover**, and a constant fear of the Pretender and his partisans. These were now called Jacobites, from *Jacobus*, the Latin name for James

The fall of the **Tory ministry** was immediate. A secret committee of the Commons sat to inquire into their conduct with regard to the Treaty of Utrecht Of that committee the chairman was Robert Walpole, who, born in 1676 and educated at Cambridge, had in 1708 been made Secretary for War, and was now Paymaster of the Forces The Tory leaders, Oxford, Bolingbroke, and Ormond, against all of whom there were strong suspicions of a secret correspondence with the Pretender, were impeached for high treason. Oxford was sent to the Tower, and his head was saved only by a difference between the Lords and the Commons Bolingbroke and Ormond fled to the Continent, where they joined the councils of the Pretender.

Great **riots** then took place, for the feeling of the entire nation ran strongly in favour of the Tories The coach, which conveyed Oxford to the Tower, was surrounded by roaring mobs, that afterwards in Smithfield burned William III. in effigy Bishop Atterbury boldly denounced George as a usurper The students of Oxford wore the oak leaf on the 29th of May in honour of the Stuart Restoration The men of Staffordshire assembled in tumultuous crowds to applaud Jacobite speeches Without delay the Government took strong measures. The *Riot Act* was passed, which enacted that any mob of more than twelve persons, refusing to disperse in a given time, should be scattered by military force A price of £100,000 was set on the head of the Pretender. The army and the navy were prepared for war **1715** A.D.

The alarm of the King and his ministers was not without foundation. The Pretender was in France, flushed with high hopes of success, and buoyed up by promises of strong support from Louis XIV. But the death of that monarch blasted all these bright prospects All hope of French aid vanished; for the Regent, Duke of Orleans, thought more of repairing the shattered finances of France than of invading England

Meanwhile the flame of **rebellion** was actually kindled both in Scotland and in England. The Earl of Mar had gathered 10,000 clansmen around him at Braemar, and held all the Highlands, while the Duke of Argyle, with a royal army strongly posted at Stirling, watched all his movements. The men of Northumberland had been called to **1715** A.D.

arms by the Earl of Derwentwater, and Forster, the member for the county; but few of them had obeyed the summons They were aided by 1800 Highlanders, a reinforcement from Mar, and were joined by a few lords of the Scottish Border But the royal troops, forcing Forster into the town of *Preston* in Lancashire, there compelled him to surrender On the same day, at
Nov. 13. **Sheriffmuir** in the south of Perthshire, Argyle inflicted, not an absolute defeat, but a severe check upon Mar, who after the engagement retreated hastily to Perth

The **Pretender,** who was called on the Continent the Chevalier de St George, by his English adherents James III., and by his Scottish friends James VIII, resolving to see what his presence in the native land of the Stuarts would do, landed at
Dec 22 Peterhead, but with no money, no troops, no warlike stores He found his party broken and dispirited, and his arrival without the aid from France, which had been so eagerly looked for, cast a deeper gloom over the Stuart cause. At Perth he frivolously wasted many days in preparing for his coronation, while the crown was yet to be won Amid his dreams of a splendour never to be realized, he heard that Argyle was advancing, and retreated northward towards Montrose, where he and Mar embarked for France, leaving the army to its fate The Earl of Derwentwater, Lord Kenmure, and about twenty others suffered death, the estates of many were confiscated, and more than a thousand were banished to North America Thus ended **"The Fifteen."**

The most remarkable constitutional change of this reign was the passing of the **Septennial Act,** by which the maximum length of our Parliaments was fixed at seven years. To
1716 the Whigs we owe this wise measure, which has done A.D. much to preserve the peace of the nation. In the days of the Triennial Bill the excitement of one general election had hardly time to settle down before the turmoil of another began. Party spirit ran into wild excess Although the collision of parties, when kept within due bounds, is, like the heaving and sweeping of the ocean, a wholesome influence, tending to keep the nation's life fresh and vigorous, and to prevent the settlement of error and abuse, yet there is no power so destructive when let loose from fit control. Hence the necessity and use of such laws as the Septennial Act

For the sake of Hanover, George embroiled himself with Sweden and with Spain. He had bought from the King of Denmark the duchies of Bremen and Verden, which Charles of

Sweden claimed as his own. A dispute followed, and war seemed certain, when the death of the great Swede at the siege of Fredericshall saved Britain from invasion The **Quadruple Alliance** was then formed, by which Germany, England, France, and Holland leagued themselves against Philip of Spain, who had interfered with the Italian interests of the Emperor. Admiral Byng destroyed the Spanish fleet off Cape Passaro in Sicily; and Alberoni, the Spanish minister, in retaliation sent an expedition to invade Scotland in favour of the Pretender But, a storm having shattered the fleet, this miniature Armada failed in its object Philip, worsted by land and sea, sought peace from the four Allies. **1718** A.D.

In the same year the Convocation of the English clergy, an assembly which, like a Senate of Churchmen, had been used to make ecclesiastical laws, and even to grant money to the King, was dissolved, never to meet again for that purpose The political influence of the English Church is now confined chiefly to the Archbishops and Bishops, who have seats among the Lords.

In 1719 the Mississippi Company, a scheme by which paper money was to fill the place of gold and silver, set on foot in Paris by Law, a Scotch banker, ruined thousands by its utter failure. In the following year the **South Sea Scheme** set all Britain crazy The National Debt then amounted to £53,000,000 The Government were obliged to pay to all those who had lent the money, or, as we say, had invested money in the funds, interest at six per cent, which came to £3,180,000 in the year This was a heavy burden on a yearly revenue of about £8,000,000; and to remove or lessen the debt became the grand problem, which occupied the financiers of the day. The Bank of England and the South Sea Company both proposed plans to accomplish this object. The offers of the South Sea Company, of which Sir John Blunt was a leading director, were accepted by the Government The Company proposed to redeem the public debt in twenty-six years, and to advance to the Government whatever money they needed at four per cent They agreed, besides, to pay to the Government, as a bonus, the sum of £7,560,000. This plan would reduce the interest on the debt by one-third every year, and would also give to the Government a large sum of ready money. In return for these advantages the Company received the sole right of trading to the South Seas. **1720** A.D.

Stories of the endless treasure to be drawn from golden islands in the far-off Pacific found eager listeners everywhere. Hundreds rushed to the offices of the Company to exchange their Govern-

ment stock for shares in the scheme Rich men and poor widows, statesmen and errand-boys, jostling each other in the race for gold, paid their money across the counters, and received from the clerks pieces of paper, which they fondly believed would secure to them the possession of twenty-fold riches The Company promised a dividend of fifty per cent. at least, and the shares rose rapidly. The excitement became a mania, and the mania became a frenzy Men paid away £1000 for the chance of the profits, which £100 might bring from the South Seas. The most ridiculous joint-stock companies were started in imitation of the great scheme,—one for extracting silver from lead, another for making salt water fresh, a third for importing asses from Spain The South Sea directors, armed with an Act of Parliament, crushed these rival companies, but amid the smaller crashes their own gigantic bubble burst. The eyes of the nation were opened. All ran to sell the South Sea stock; none would buy. The offices were closed, and thousands became ruined bankrupts

Sir Robert Walpole, who had all along cried out against the huge gambling transaction, now came forward to save the public credit His plan was to divide the losses, and thus make the pressure on the nation less Nine millions of South Sea stock were assigned to the Bank of England, nine more to the East India Company, while the Government gave up the greater part of their bonus of seven millions But, though the alarm was lessened, and the loss somewhat equalized, penniless crowds cried for vengeance upon the rulers, who had led them into the snare Sunderland the Premier, and Aislabie the Chancellor of the Exchequer resigned office Many a desolate home, many a broken heart, many a suicide's grave remained to mark the traces of the broken bubble.

Robert Walpole, then made Chancellor of the Exchequer, continued for twenty years to direct the Government. His talent lay in financial politics; and England owes much to his measures for the advancement of her commerce and manufactures.

The remaining years of the reign were marked chiefly by the discovery of a Jacobite plot, for connection with which Atterbury, Bishop of Rochester, was banished for life; and by the opening of an unimportant war with Spain and the Emperor, who had founded a rival East India Company at Ostend.

June 11, 1727 A.D. While travelling in Hanover, the King was seized near Osnabruck with apoplexy, and died next day. His children were George, his successor; and Sophia, the Queen of Prussia.

George I. was a thorough German in his character and habits,—heavy, cautious, and reserved. He possessed in no small degree the business qualities of industry and punctuality, but his treatment of his wife cannot be defended, and his government of England was sullied by undue partiality to the Whigs, and a tendency in every case to sacrifice British interests to those of Hanover He was in face and figure plain and solid-looking.

The most noteworthy points of progress during the reign are the invention of Fahrenheit's thermometer, the introduction of silk-throwing machines by Lombe, who brought the plans from Italy; experiments in vaccination, which were tried at first on criminals, and the earliest casting of types in England.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

LOUIS XIV., began to reign	1643	**FREDERIC WILLIAM I.**,	1713
LOUIS XV.,	1715		
PHILIP V.,	1700	**ACHMET III.**,	1703
LOUIS,	1724		
PHILIP V. (again),	1724	EMPEROR.	
SWEDEN.		**CHARLES VI.**,	1711
CHARLES XII.,	1697		
ULRICA LEONORA,	1719		
		CLEMENT XI.,	1700
RUSSIA.		**INNOCENT XIII.**,	1721
PETER (the Great),		**BENEDICT XIII.**,	1724

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS.

	A.D		
Death of Louis XIV. of France,	1715	Treaty of Nystadt (Sweden and Russia),	1721
Charles XII of Sweden killed,	1718		
Mississippi Bubble,	1719	Pragmatic Sanction (Charles VI.),	1724
Kingdom of Sardinia founded,	1720		

LEADING AUTHORS UNDER GEORGE I.

SIR ISAAC NEWTON, (1642–1727)—a native of Lincolnshire—Professor at Cambridge—discovered the Binomial Theorem, and the universal application of the Law of Gravitation—chief work, his *Principia*, a Latin treatise on Natural Philosophy—wrote also on *Daniel* and *Revelation*

DANIEL DEFOE, (1661–1731)—originally a hosier in London—journalist and novelist—chief work, *Robinson Crusoe* (1719)—noted for his plain idiomatic English—wrote in all 210 works

JONATHAN SWIFT, (1667–1745)—Dean of St Patrick's, Dublin—author of *Tale of a Tub* (1704)—the *Drapier Letters* (1724)—*Gulliver's Travels* (1726)—died a lunatic

JOSEPH ADDISON, (1672–1719)—a prose writer and poet—famous for his papers in the *Spectator*—chief poems *Cato*, a tragedy, and *A Letter from Italy* was made Secretary of State

SIR RICHARD STEELE, (1675–1729)—an Irishman, who in 1709 started the *Tatler*, the first regular English periodical—in 1711 began the more famous *Spectator*—wrote many plays also

ALEXANDER POPE, (1688–1744)—chief poet of the French Artificial School—chief works, *Essay on Criticism* (1711), the *Rape of the Lock* (1713), translation of *Homer* (1725), the *Dunciad*, a satire (1728), and *Essay on Man* (1731–1735)—lived at Twickenham

CHAPTER II.

GEORGE II

Born 1683 A D.—Began to reign 1727 A.D —Died 1760 A.D.

Sir Robert Walpole.
The Excise Bill (1733 A D)
Porteous Riots (1736 A D)
Spanish War (1739 A D)
The Methodists (1739 A D)
Retirement of Walpole (1742 A D)
Maria Theresa.
"The Forty-five"
Battle of Prestonpans (1745 A D)
March to Derby
Battle of Culloden, 1746 A D
Flight of Charles Edward
His Last Days
William Pitt
The Seven Years' War (1756–1763 A D)
Conquest of Bengal (1757 A D)
Fall of Quebec (1759 A D)
Death of the King
His Character
Notes.

GEORGE II, who, as Prince of Wales, had been, like his mother, jealously exiled from the English Court, now became King. He had reached the ripe age of forty-four, and had long been married to Caroline of Anspach, a woman of sense and virtue. The Whigs, or Court Party—as they were called in contrast to the Tories, or Country Party—retained their ascendency

Sir Robert Walpole for fifteen years of the reign held the office of Prime Minister He was a man of little learning, rough and boisterous in his manners and in his life, but he held his great power with a passionate grasp, and preserved it, not very honestly, indeed, but with consummate tact Bribery was the secret of his long reign as Premier To some he gave titles of honour, coronets, ribands, or stars, to others places of profit or of power, and among the general mass of members of the Commons he scattered gold without stint Thus he had always at his command a majority of votes in the Houses of Parliament.

A new Charter was granted to the East India Company in 1730, for which they paid the sum of £200,000 into the Royal Exchequer The most noticeable point, however, in Walpole's career was the **Excise Bill.** The Customs are duties paid upon certain foreign productions, when landed on our shores The Excise is a tax levied on articles manufactured at home To check smuggling, which was now practised openly to an immense extent, Walpole proposed to bring wine and tobacco under the law of Excise The merchants set up a cry of ruin This cry was loudly echoed by the Opposition, who imagined that they saw in the measure a scheme, by which the Premier meant to create a whole army of excisemen, whose votes, always ready at his beck, would carry the day in

1733 A.D.

every election. When the cautious minister saw the violence of the storm, content to lose his point rather than risk his power, he withdrew the Bill altogether The Opposition, exulting in their success, strove next session to repeal the Septennial Act; but the attempt failed

In 1736 all Scotland was agitated by the **Porteous Riots.** The mob of Edinburgh, enraged at the execution of a smuggler named Wilson, who had roused their admiration by helping his fellow-prisoner Robertson to escape, pelted the hangman and the soldiers. Captain Porteous, commander of the City Guard, ordered his men to fire on the crowd, and several were killed For this he was sentenced to death; but a reprieve came from London, and the rumour spread that a mail or two would bring him a full pardon. It was resolved that he should not escape. On the night of the 17th of September the jail in which he lay was broken open by a mob, he was brought out, and hanged on a dyer's pole. The Government, enraged at this violence, brought in a Bill to demolish the walls and take away the charter of Edinburgh So spirited, however, was the resistance of the Scottish members that the measure was abandoned, though not until it had excited among all classes in Scotland a feeling of deep rancour and hostility towards England.

The death of Queen Caroline in 1737 deprived Walpole of a warm friend and supporter The disasters of the Spanish War in 1739 shook his power past retrieving Besides the ill-will of the King and the hatred of Frederic, Prince of Wales, he had to contend against a brilliant phalanx of literary men, amongst whom were Thomson, Johnson, Swift, and Pope A section of discontented Whigs, too, who called themselves Patriots, threw their entire weight into the scale of opposition.

The Spanish War was caused by the cruisers of Spain claiming and using the right to search all British vessels sus-
1739 pected of smuggling on the coasts of Spanish America.
A.D. Walpole tried negotiation, but in vain, and war was proclaimed. When he heard the London joy-bells ringing for the declaration of the war, he was heard to mutter, "They may ring their bells now; they will be wringing their hands before long." The town of Portobello on the Isthmus of Darien was taken; but disasters soon eclipsed this brief success. A
1741 great fleet and army under Admiral Vernon and Lord
A.D. Wentworth failed in an attack upon Carthagena, chiefly through the disagreement of the leaders. The unhealthy climate swept off the British in hundreds; and there naturally arose great discontent at home.

Anson was sent with a squadron to relieve Vernon; but, failing in his object, he sailed into the South Seas, plundered Paita, a port of Chili, and, after three years' cruising, took a Spanish treasure-ship bound for Manilla, and laden with £300,000. On his return to England in 1744 with a solitary ship, the people, dazzled by the wealth he brought, received him with joy.

The **Methodists**—now numerous and influential, especially in England—separated from the Established Church about this time. The founder of the body was John Wesley. When a student at Oxford, he used to hold meetings for prayer in his college-rooms; and, carrying into the world the same spirit of practical piety, he soon became a celebrated preacher At a time when it was fashionable to sneer at all religion, he drew to his chapel the most brilliant audiences in the land. He was aided in the good work by Whitefield, a yet more distinguished preacher, whose electric eloquence could then be matched by none. To these two men our country owes much, for they led the van in that revival of religion, of which in the present day we are reaping the harvest.

The difficulties of **Walpole** became so great, that, finding the Opposition in the majority as the result of a general election, he resigned office, and retired with the title of Earl of Orford to his country seat of Houghton. He was succeeded by the Earl of Granville, who held office but a short time The Pelhams then took the helm of the State; which, partly by aristocratic influence, and partly by dint of wholesale bribery, they contrived to hold for fifteen years. **1741** A.D.

During their administration occurred a **Continental War** (1741–1745). Charles VI of Austria, dying in 1740, left a will called the *Pragmatic Sanction*, by which he bequeathed all his dominions to his daughter Maria Theresa. Scarcely had she ascended the throne when the Elector of Bavaria demanded the crown of Hungary, Frederic II. of Prussia seized Silesia, and Louis of France denied her right to any part of her inheritance. The British were alarmed at this union between France and Prussia, which under Frederic the Great was fast rising to be one of the leading powers in Europe; and their chivalry was roused at the thought of a young and beautiful Queen surrounded by greedy and treacherous foes, even while she still wore mourning for her dead father. The States of Hungary gathered round their Queen, and a British army crossed the Channel in her defence. George II., leading the British troops in person,—the last occasion upon which a Sovereign of Britain was under the fire of an enemy,—routed a French **1743** A.D.

army near the village of *Dettingen* on the Maine. Two years later (1745), at *Fontenoy* in Belgium, his second son, the Duke of Cumberland, was defeated by Marshal Saxe in almost the only victory won by the armies of Louis XV. In the end the cause of the young Queen triumphed: her husband, Francis Stephen, Grand Duke of Tuscany, was chosen Emperor in 1745; and in the same year the Peace of Dresden closed the war. This illustrious lady, amongst the most distinguished of the Austrian Sovereigns, held her throne until her death in 1780.

The Forty-five.—The exiled Stuarts, encouraged by France and Spain, now made a bold push for the throne of Britain. **Charles Edward Stuart**, the young Pretender, the July 25, "bonnie Prince Charlie" of those stirring Jacobite 1745 songs, which sprang from the burning heart of a revolted A.D. nation, landed near Moidart on the coast of Inverness-shire. He came with only seven officers to conquer a great empire, but at five-and-twenty hope is strong in the human soul. Many Highland chieftains, of whom the most distinguished was Cameron of Lochiel, hastened to his side; and Aug. 19. his standard was raised at Glenfinnan. At the head of 700 wild clansmen, whose hearts he had won by donning the kilt and tartans, he commenced a southward march. Sir John Cope, the royal leader, had incautiously moved to Inverness, and the road was open. At Perth Charles was proclaimed Regent for his father. Thence he passed through Linlithgow to Edinburgh, winning all hearts by his bright smiles and charming courtesy. His little army had swelled to more than 1000 men. The capital was unguarded except by the dragoons of Sept. 17, Colonel Gardiner. The magistrates, indeed, were loyal, 1745 and the Castle held out for the King, but the citizens A.D. gladly opened their gates to the young Stuart, who took up his abode in the Palace of Holyrood.

Cope, meanwhile, taking ship at Aberdeen, had landed with his troops at Dunbar, and was marching on Edinburgh from the east. Charles, reinforced by 1000 clansmen, moved out to meet him, and the two armies came face to face at **Prestonpans.** Sept. 21. They lay for a night round their watch-fires. Before the dawn of the next morning, Charles and his clansmen, suddenly crossing a marsh that lay between, made a dash at the English lines in true Highland style, first discharging their pistols, and then rushing on with the claymore. The surprise was complete: the royal troops were signally defeated. Their artillery, stores, and money-chest fell into the hands of the victors.

Among the slain was Colonel Gardiner, distinguished for the piety of his latter days.

If Charles had then pressed on to London, the throne of the Guelphs might have fallen. But his ranks were thin, and six weeks passed before he could muster 5000 men. During these six weeks royal troops poured in from Flanders, and the Duke of Cumberland marshalled an army to defend the throne. The young Pretender spared no pains to please the Scottish people. Night after night the ball-rooms of Holyrood were filled with brilliant crowds. All the ladies of Edinburgh were in love with the handsome youth, whose graceful words and kind looks made many a fair cheek blush with pleasure.

Entering England by the western border, he took Carlisle in three days But neither there nor in Manchester did the English Jacobites, as he had expected, flock around his banner. On the 4th of December he reached **Derby**; but further he did not go. Bickerings and open quarrels among the Highland chiefs had hampered every movement of the army, but now they united in forcing the Pretender to retreat. He yielded, sorely against his will, and the backward march began. **Nov. 17.** **Dec. 6, 1745 A.D.**

With dejected hearts and a hopeless leader the army reached the Highlands, followed by the Duke of Cumberland. A slight success at Falkirk, where he defeated General Hawley, roused the drooping heart of Charles for a time, but, after three months of inaction among the Grampians, he was finally routed by Cumberland on **Culloden Moor**, nine miles from Inverness. About one in the day the royal guns opened on the rebel ranks. The right wing of the Highlanders answered with a gallant charge, but were met by a storm of grape and musket-shot so terrible that few reached the line of English bayonets. On the left the Macdonalds, who stood gloomily nursing their anger at being deprived of the post of honour on the right, were broken and cut down by scores. In less than an hour the battle was fought and won. **April 16, 1746 A.D.**

Charles fled to the mountains A reward of £30,000 was offered for his head; but none was tempted, even by so great a sum, to betray his hiding-place For five months he wandered among the Grampians and the Hebrides, often suffering from want, always hunted by his foes, but followed even in his misery by a devoted few, among whom was the courageous Flora Macdonald. And, at length, almost at the very spot where, fourteen months before, fresh from the most brilliant Court in Europe, he

had leaped on to the heathery shore with the elastic step of hope, he crept into a hired French boat, a wretched spectre, Sept. 29. pale and haggard, with bloodshot eyes and ragged clothes. Though chased by two English cruisers, he landed safely at Morlaix in Bretagne. About eighty suffered death for their devotion to his cause, among whom were the Scottish Lords Kilmarnock and Balmerino The clansmen were forbidden to wear the Highland dress; the chieftains were stripped of nearly all their ancient power; and the appointment of the sheriffs—long an hereditary office—was vested in the Crown.

Charles Edward spent his latter days at Rome, under the title of **Duke of Albany.** Though the Jacobites long continued the custom of passing their glasses over the water-decanter, as they drank to the "King over the water," the Forty-five was the last effort of the exiled family to regain the British throne. The gallant young soldier, of whom so much has been said and sung, sank in later life into a broken-down drunkard He died of apoplexy in 1788, and nineteen years later died his brother Henry, Cardinal of York—the last male heir of the Stuart line. On a monument by Canova, in St. Peter's at Rome, may still be read three empty titles, not found in the roll of British Kings—James III, Charles III, Henry IX. Beneath the marble the bones of Charles Edward and his brother have long since mouldered into dust.

The war, still lingering on the Continent, was brought to a close by the Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, by which the rival nations agreed to restore their conquests. When the **1748** army was disbanded, a great number of discharged soldiers emigrated to Nova Scotia, where they built the city of Halifax.

During these events William Pitt, "the **Great Commoner,**" had been fast rising to the head of affairs. His grandfather was that Governor of Madras, who had brought from India the celebrated Pitt diamond, still sparkling on the crown of France. William was educated at Oxford, and for a short time served as a cornet in the Life Guards Blue. But, entering the House of Commons in 1735 as member for Old Sarum, he soon became so troublesome to the Ministry that Walpole dismissed him from the army. Thenceforward he devoted himself to politics. He gained the favour of the Prince of Wales, and under the Pelhams became Paymaster of the Forces. As a statesman, he was distinguished for his hatred of bribery and his honest disbursement of the public money. He was a complete master of sarcasm; and

often in a few scorching words, delivered with thundering voice and rapid gesture and flashing eye, he withered up the arguments of some unhappy member who had ventured to confront him. He was tormented from his earliest manhood by the gout, and some of his finest speeches were delivered as he leaned on crutches with limbs cased in flannel.

The Seven Years' War opened under the administration of the Duke of Newcastle. It was excited by the ambition of Frederic the Great, who still held Silesia. Maria Theresa obtained the aid of France, Russia, and Poland; while Britain formed an alliance with Prussia. Out of the great Seven Years' War grew a **Colonial War** between Great Britain and France. The boundary lines of their colonies were the subject of dispute. India and America were the theatres of the strife. **1756** A.D.

In the autumn of 1756 Pitt became Secretary of State and leader of the Commons. During the five months of his ministry, Admiral Byng was tried and shot for failing to retake the island of Minorca, which had been seized by the French. Pitt spoke out manfully for the Admiral, but could not save him. When "the Great Commoner," who was no favourite with the King, was dismissed, so great a cry of indignation arose that he was at once restored to office; and then began that succession of victories, by which Britain became pre-eminent in both hemispheres.

On the peninsula of **Hindostan** there were trading colonies of British, French, Dutch, and Portuguese. Of these the British settlements were the chief. Dupleix, the Governor of Pondicherry, the central station of the French, formed the gigantic scheme of conquering all India, and resolutely set himself, with the aid of the native princes, to uproot the British settlements. Holding Madras, which had been lately captured by the French, he soon overran the whole Carnatic. But the tide of conquest was turned by **Robert Clive**, who, entering the Company's service at first as a clerk, had joined the army as an ensign in 1746, and soon distinguished himself by the capture of Arcot. By the seizure of Fort St. David, near Madras, he obtained the complete command of the Carnatic. The conquest of Bengal was his most remarkable achievement. It was Surajah Dowlah, Nabob of Bengal, who shut up 146 British prisoners for a whole night in the Black Hole of Calcutta,—a den twenty feet by fourteen; from which only 23 came out alive on the next morning. This cruelty was avenged by Clive, who utterly overthrew the Nabob in the great battle of Plassey, and thus **1757** A.D.

gained for Britain the large and fertile province of Bengal, watered by the noble Ganges and studded with a thousand wealthy cities.

In **North America** the French held Canada, while the British settlers possessed the coast of that territory now called the United States. The natural boundary between the settlements was formed by the St. Lawrence and its Lakes. But the French insisted on building a chain of forts from the Lakes to the Mississippi, thus to shut out the British from the fur-trade with the Indian tribes. The New England colonists, naturally resenting this injustice, made several attacks on the French forts, but with little success. However, under the able direction of Sept. 13, Pitt, a remarkable change took place. Fort after fort **1759** fell, or was abandoned, until the capture of **Quebec**, A.D. before which General Wolfe was mortally wounded, left the British masters of Canada.

The year 1759 was also distinguished by a victory over the French at Minden in Germany, and by the total destruction of the Brest fleet by Admiral Hawke, who gained a splendid victory amid the darkness of a stormy night in Quiberon Bay off the rocky shore of Bretagne.

On the morning of the 25th of October 1760, George II. died suddenly of heart-disease. He had in all eight children. His eldest son, Frederic, Prince of Wales, who had married in 1736 Augusta of Saxe-Gotha, died in 1751, at the age of forty-four, from the bursting of an internal tumour, caused by the stroke of a tennis-ball, and left nine children. George III. was the eldest son of this prince.

The second George was very like his father in his temper and his attachments. He was fond of the Whigs; and, while he was always niggardly towards his kingdom, he spared neither British blood nor British gold in securing and enlarging his electorate of Hanover. Science, art, and literature were left by him to thrive as best they could; and he was more than once heard to growl in his German accent, that he saw no good in "painting and poetry." He was of a fair complexion, and of a small but well-shaped figure.

A remarkable change of this reign was the adoption of the Gregorian, or New Style of reckoning time. The time-keeping of the nation had gone, as we say of a clock, too fast; and, to set it right, eleven days were struck out of the year 1752, the 3rd of September being reckoned as the 14th of September. Pope Gregory had made the change in Italy in 1582. Hence in our

almanacs we have Hallow-eve and Old Hallow-eve, Christmas-day and Old Christmas-day The Russians still reckon time by the Old Style

In 1731 the *Gentleman's Magazine* was started by Edward Cave, a bookseller, in 1753 the British Museum was founded, and in 1758 the Bridgewater Canal—the greatest work of its kind yet constructed in England—was begun.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

			TURKEY.	A.D
LOUIS XV.,	began to reign	1715	**ACHMET III,** began to reign	1703
	SPAIN		**MOHAMMED V.,**	1730
PHILIP V.,		1724	**OSMAN II,**	1754
FERDINAND VI.,		1745	**MUSTAPHA III,**	1757
CHARLES III.,		1759		
	SWEDEN			
ULRICA LEONORA,		1719	**CHARLES VI,**	1711
ADOLPHUS FREDERIC,		1751	**CHARLES VII,**	1742
	RUSSIA		**FRANCIS I and MARIA THERESA,**	1745
CATHERINE I,		1725		
PETER II,		1727		
IVAN VI,		1740		
ELIZABETH,		1741		
	PRUSSIA		**BENEDICT XIII,**	1724
			CLEMENT XII,	1730
FREDERIC WILLIAM I,		1713	**BENEDICT XIV,**	1740
FREDERIC II. (the Great),		1740	**CLEMENT XIII,**	1758

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS.

Frederic the Great, King of Prussia,	1740	**Earthquake at Lisbon,**	1755
Peace of Dresden,	1745	**Battles of Rossbach and Leuthen,**	1757
Second Peace of Aix la Chapelle,	1748	**The Sicilies given up by Spain,**	1759

LEADING AUTHORS UNDER GEORGE II

JAMES THOMSON, (1700–1748)—a poet of Roxburghshire—chief works *The Seasons* (1726–27), in blank verse, and *The Castle of Indolence* (1748) in the Spenserian stanza—lived at Richmond.

SAMUEL RICHARDSON, (1689–1761)—first great novelist—printer by trade—author of *Pamela* (1740), *Clarissa Harlowe*, and *Sir Charles Grandison*

HENRY FIELDING, (1707–1754)—greatest novelist of his time—Justice of Peace—author of *Joseph Andrews* (1742), *Tom Jones,* &c

TOBIAS SMOLLETT, (1721–1771)—a physician of Dumbartonshire—author of *Roderick Random* (1748), a sequel to Hume's *England,* and *Humphrey Clinker*

THOMAS GRAY, (1716–1771)—Tutor and Professor of History at Cambridge—a most polished poet—author of *Elegy in a Country Churchyard* (1750), *The Bard, Progress of Poesy,* &c

DAVID HUME, (1711–1776)—historian—once keeper of Advocates' Library, Edinburgh—author of *History of England* (1754–62,—a sceptic in religion and philosophy

LEADING ARTISTS.

SIR JAMES THORNHILL, (1676–1732)—born at Weymouth—the painter of the dome of St. Paul's and some cartoons in Hampton Court—State-painter to Anne and George I

WILLIAM HOGARTH, (1697–1764)—painter and engraver—satirical painter of life—chief works, *The Rake's Progress, Marriage à la Mode,* &c—lived and died in London.

CHAPTER XII.

LIFE IN ENGLAND UNDER THE EARLY GEORGES.

Streets by Day
Streets by Night
Coffee-Houses
Ladies' Dress.
Men's Dress.
Public Resorts
Pastimes
The Theatre.
At Church
In the Country
Literary and Civic Life.

STREETS.—Instead of numbers to distinguish shops and dwelling-houses from one another, in the last century signs creaked and swung above each door These are now confined chiefly to inns but the Blue Boar, the Golden Key, the Spread Eagle, and similar emblems shone then with bright variety along every street. Cleanly sanitary arrangements had not yet been adopted. The kennels flowed with inky and unsavoury water. The foot-path was full of muddy puddles in rainy weather, and the black mire splashed far and wide from the hoofs of the horses that trotted on the causeway A row of wooden posts divided the road-way from the path

There were numerous hackney-coaches, but the **Sedan-chair** was the most fashionable mode of conveyance in the city. The watermen also rowed passengers from stair to stair in their wherries. At night the streets were badly lighted with oil-lamps; and it was customary for those who walked abroad after dark to hire link-boys to carry a torch before them in order to show the way. These boys, however, were often the accomplices of the thieves who abounded in London. The country roads were still infested with highwaymen, who, well horsed and closely masked, would hold a pistol to the coachman's head, stop the coach, and compel the passengers to yield their purses and jewellery.

Another plague of the streets by night consisted in the rioting of **Mohocks** or other gangs of dissolute young men, "flown with insolence and wine," who, in defiance of the feeble city watchmen, paraded the chief thoroughfares for the purpose of assaulting any unfortunate citizen whom they might chance to meet. Among their favourite pastimes were "tipping the lion"—that is, pressing a man's nose flat and scooping out his eyes with their thumbs; and "sweating" their victim, by surrounding him with drawn swords, and pricking him with the points till he sank from exhaustion and loss of blood. They sometimes varied their sports by

putting a woman in a barrel and rolling it down some steep street. Another gang, called Nickers, took revenge upon certain shopkeepers by flinging handfuls of halfpence at their windows by night.

The **Coffee-house** was the great resort by day: the Cocoa-Tree being the most celebrated Tory house, the St James's, that most frequented by Whigs. A Club then meant a company of men, who met regularly on certain evenings in a tavern for supper and conversation.

The use of mahogany for furniture, the more general adoption of carpets, and the improvement of earthenware made household life more refined and comfortable; but the low-ceiled rooms and narrow windows of the houses still gave but an insufficient supply of light and air.

The most fashionable districts of London were Bloomsbury and Soho Square.

The most remarkable part of the ladies' dress was the Hoop, a kind of cage on which the flowered brocade of the skirt was extended to an enormous size. Every lady also carried a Fan, of which she made constant use, furling, opening, fluttering it ceaselessly. Her face was spotted with black patches, which at a certain time had a political significance, Tory ladies wearing the spots on the left temple, and Whigs, the reverse. In reference to this practice, Goldsmith in the *Citizen of the World* makes his Chinaman propose to send home "a map of an English face patched according to the prevailing fashion." After a fashionable lady had enjoyed her chocolate in bed about noon, she completed her toilette, and then devoted an hour or so to the Toy-shop, where rare china, new fans, and curiosities were sold.

The dress worn by a gentleman was stiff and artificial. A huge periwig, white being most prized, flowed with bushy curls on his shoulders at the beginning of the period. This gave way to powdered hair, tied behind in an enormous queue. His coat was of claret velvet, or sky-blue silk, heavily bordered with gold or silver lace—his vest of flowered silk extended its flaps half-way to the knee—his three-cornered hat was carried under his arm, an empty form—knee-breeches, silk stockings, and diamond-buckled shoes completed his costume. A jewelled snuff-box, which he displayed as ceaselessly as the lady flirted her fan—a clouded cane—and a silver-hilted sword were also necessary to his equipment.*

* For a minute description of fashionables and their life at the beginning of this period read Pope's poem, *The Rape of the Lock*, published in 1718. Vanbrugh's character of Lord Foppington, in his comedy *The Relapse*, ridicules the affected pronunciation considered modish at the same time.

Resorts.—The usual dinner-hour was between two and five. After that meal the favourite promenades—St. James's Mall, Spring Gardens (afterwards Vauxhall), and the Mulberry Garden (where Buckingham Palace stands now)—began to fill, and fashionable life was in full flood about seven. Vizards or masks of black velvet were commonly worn, and it was customary to speak to any one, no ceremony of introduction being necessary. In the latter part of the century Ranelagh was a favourite resort.

Pastimes.—At the evening parties, which were called *ridottos* or *drums*, gambling was practised to a terrible extent. It was indeed the great vice of the age. Gentlemen gambled at their clubs, ladies in their boudoirs; and it was no uncommon thing to lose or win £10,000 in a single night at cards or dice. At various games, such as *ombre*, *bassett*, or *quadrille*, character and fortune were alike lost, and there were midnight masquerades for those who were fascinated by the deadly rattle of the dice-box. The stately *minuet* was the fashionable dance; but there were gayer movements also, such as the *cotillon* and the *corranto*. Duels constantly resulted from these evening assemblies: the usual places for deciding these "affairs of honour" were Hyde Park Ring, or the grassy space behind Montague House.

The Theatre.—The theatre began to fill at four. The actors wore the dress of their own time, and not the costume suitable to the parts they acted. A prominent figure in the pit was the Beau who was ambitious of being considered a dramatic critic, and who in consequence had smeared his upper lip with snuff. The gallery was filled with the footmen of the persons of quality who sat in the boxes. Drury Lane was then the principal theatre in London

Church.—The demeanour of people in church contrasted strongly with the decorous behaviour now usual. A lady came to stare about her, to flutter her fan, and to greet her friends with a stately courtesy or a familiar wink, according to the degree of intimacy existing between them. A gentleman made his bow all round, refreshed himself with snuff, and settled down to sleep. When the preacher concluded a passage of striking eloquence or made an apt political allusion, the whole congregation raised a loud *Hum* of approval. And it often happened that a number of noisy men in a front pew would debate the points in theology started by the preacher so loudly as to disturb the entire service.

Country Resorts.—Bath, Epsom, and Tunbridge Wells were

the principal provincial places of resort. There all the follies of metropolitan life were acted over again with the difference of rural surroundings. The constant embroilments with France and Spain, coupled with the insecurity of travel, prevented the natives of Britain from visiting the Continent, except on rare occasions.

Literary and Civic Life.—The authors of this time belonged of necessity to one of two classes. A fortunate writer attracted the attention of some eminent statesman, who gave him a pension or a sinecure, and employed his pen in the writing of pamphlets favourable to certain public measures. Or another made a sufficient livelihood by composing plays, deriving his chief profits from the receipts of the house on the third night of representation. But such men were obliged to degrade their calling by penning dedications of fulsome praise or by cringing to the valets of ministers or the secretaries of managers. All other writers may be characterized in a group as denizens of "Grub Street,"—a locality where the most hapless and improvident literary men herded together, eking out a scanty livelihood by compiling and drudging for booksellers. There was but a slight demand for books Even the circulating library had not yet come into existence, the usual method of reading a new book being to stand at the bookseller's counter for an hour or so, mark the place of leaving off, and then come back on succeeding days to complete the perusal of the work.

The citizen lived a quiet life, dining at twelve or one, and spending the evening till ten o'clock at one of the tavern-clubs, already referred to.

CHAPTER IV.

GEORGE III.

Born 1738 A.D.—Began to reign 1760 A.D.—Died 1820 A.D.

The Family Compact
The Peace of Paris (1763 A.D.)
John Wilkes
The Stamp Act (1765 A.D.)
Other Taxes on America.
Parliamentary Reports
The Congress
Bunker's hill (1775 A.D.)
Invasion of Canada (1775 A.D.)
The Fourth of July (1776 A.D.)
Brandywine River (1777 A.D.).
Surrender of Burgoyne (1777 A.D.).
Desertion of Arnold
Surrender of Cornwallis (1781 A.D.)
The Thirteen States
Siege of Gibraltar (1779–82 A.D.)
Gordon Riots (1780 A.D.)
Voyages of Cook (1767–72–76 A.D.).
Trial of Hastings (1788 A.D.)
Indian Conquests

GEORGE III ascended a glorious throne Through the energy and foresight of the Great Commoner Britain had become the first nation in the world.

The sovereigns of France and Spain, both of the Bourbon line, leagued themselves against Britain by the **Family Compact.** Pitt knew of this secret treaty, and urged immediate war with Spain. His plans being over-ruled on the ground of an exhausted Treasury, he resigned office in disgust, receiving as rewards of his public service a pension of £3000 a year, and the title of Baroness for his wife The Earl of Bute, once tutor to the King, became Premier As Pitt had foretold, Spain declared war. But Spain lost Havannah and Manilla; France was stripped of her finest West Indian islands, and both soon sought for peace. A treaty was signed at Paris, **1763** and in the same year the Seven Years' War was closed A.D. by the Peace of Hubertsburg.

Bute soon gave place to the Hon. George Grenville, whose ministry is remarkable for the prosecution of John Wilkes.

John Wilkes, the member for Aylesbury, was the editor of a weekly paper called *The North Briton.* In No. 45 of this publication he charged the King with uttering a lie in a speech from the throne. Arrested on a general warrant, he was thrown into the Tower. But there was great difficulty about his trial The Judges declared that no member of Parliament could be imprisoned except for treason, felony, or breach of the peace; and that general warrants, in which no name was given, were illegal. Notwithstanding this, he was found guilty of libel, and was outlawed.

Returning from France in 1768, he was elected for Middlesex by a large majority. But the House of Commons refused to admit him; and, though his sentence of outlawry was reversed, he was sent to prison for two years. There were great riots in his favour. pictures and busts of him were sold everywhere. Four times did the men of Middlesex return him to Parliament, and as often did the House of Commons reject him, accepting in his stead his rival, Colonel Luttrell. But in the end he triumphed, was allowed to take his seat, and became Lord Mayor of London. It was during these stirring times that the famous *Letters of Junius*, directed chiefly against the Duke of Grafton, appeared in the newspapers.

Meanwhile events had occurred, which led to the great **American War.** Grenville, desirous to meet the cost of the
1765 last war, proposed to tax certain papers and parchments
A.D. used in America; and the **Stamp Act** was therefore passed. The colonists, most of whom were descendants of those old Puritans who had beheaded Charles I. and had reared the Commonwealth, firmly replied, that, since they had no share in the government of the Empire, no representatives in the British Parliament, they would pay no taxes to Britain and buy no stamped paper.

Grenville at once resigned, and, under the brief ministry of the Marquis of Rockingham, the Stamp Act was repealed, but the right to tax the Colonies was still maintained. The Duke of Grafton, and Pitt, now Earl of Chatham, were next called to office; and, in spite of the warnings of the great statesman, new taxes—on tea, lead, glass, paper, and painters' colours—were laid on the Colonies, whose discontent grew hourly greater.

In 1768 Chatham gave up the Privy Seal, for his health was failing, and he missed, amid the calm monotony of the
1770 Lords, that stirring excitement of debate, in which his
A.D. genius gave forth its finest flashes. Two years later, the Duke of Grafton gave place to **Lord North**, a Tory Premier, under whom chiefly the American War was conducted.

The public mind was now stirred by a strife between Parliament and the London printers, about the right to publish the debates in the Houses Woodfall, who had printed the *Letters of Junius*, took a lead in demanding the right; and, by the support of the magistrates, the printers gained their point. The practice then adopted was, not to report in short-hand, as at present, but to take brief notes, and then write out the speeches from memory.

Lord North still sent out taxed tea to America; but the resistance of the States, among which Massachusetts was foremost, wavered not a jot. Some twenty daring spirits, dressed and painted like Indians, boarded the ships which lay in **Boston harbour**, and emptied the tea-chests into the sea (Dec. 1773). The British Government then shut up the port of Boston, and removed the Custom-house to Salem. Meanwhile in London the famous Dr. Franklin, once a printer's boy, strove vainly to bring about a reconciliation.

All the States except Georgia, meeting in a Great Congress at **Philadelphia**, sent forward an address to the King, in which they asked that the oppressive taxes should be removed. The petition was slighted; but wise men shook their heads. Chatham told the Lords that it was folly to force the taxes in the face of a Continent in arms. Edmund Burke bade the Commons beware lest they severed those ties of similar privilege and kindred blood, which, light as air, though strong as iron, bound the Colonies to the mother-land. The Ministers were deaf to these eloquent warnings, and blind to the gathering storm. British soldiers continued to occupy Boston. **1774** A.D.

Then, after ten years of wordy strife, actual war began. It continued during eight campaigns

The first outbreak was at **Lexington**, between Boston and Concord, where a few American riflemen attacked a detachment of British soldiers, who were marching to seize some warlike stores. Two months later, the armies met in battle on **Bunker's-hill**—a height overlooking Boston harbour. It was a drawn battle; but it taught the British troops that the Colonists were not to be despised. April 19, **1775** A.D. June 17.

George Washington, a Virginian gentleman, then took the chief command of the American army, whose ranks were filled with raw militia-men and leather-clad hunters; stout and brave, no doubt, and capital shots with the rifle, but undrilled and badly equipped, possessing few tents, scanty stores, and little money. At Boston, as head-quarters, lay the British army under General Gage, who was succeeded in October by General Howe. The second remarkable event of this campaign was the fruitless invasion of **Canada** by the American leaders, Montgomery and Arnold. Montreal fell before General Montgomery. Colonel Arnold, marching through the wild backwoods of Maine, joined him before Quebec. But they were beaten back from

that fortress, and Montgomery was slain. Meanwhile 17,000 Hessian troops had been called from Germany to aid the British arms. The royal forces in America now numbered 55,000 men.

Early in the second campaign, Howe was compelled, by the
1776 cannon of the Americans, to evacuate Boston and to sail
A D. for Halifax; and then was issued, by the Congress at Philadelphia, that famous and eloquent document called
July 4 **"The Declaration of Independence."** But the British were well compensated for the disasters of March by the triumphs of August, when General Howe, reinforced by his brother, seized Long Island, drove Washington from New York, and planted the British flag on its batteries.

At the opening of the third campaign, aid in men and money came from France to the Americans Of the French
1777 officers the most distinguished was the young Marquis
A D. de la Fayette. A victory at the Brandywine River and the capture of Philadelphia raised hopes in Britain that the subjugation of the Colonies was not far distant. But a great humiliation changed all these hopes into fears General Burgoyne, marching from Canada, was so hemmed in by the American troops at **Saratoga,** that he was forced to surrender with all his brass cannon, muskets, and military stores (Oct. 16, 1777). Thenceforward, through five campaigns America had decidedly the best of the war.

During the winter the soldiers of Washington were shoeless and starving in **Valley Forge** near Philadelphia; but, inspired by the noble patience of their leader, they bore their suf-
1778 ferings bravely. The fourth campaign did not open till
A.D. June. Howe had been succeeded meanwhile by Sir Henry Clinton, who soon abandoned the city of Philadelphia, in which the British army had passed the winter. It was during this year that the venerable Chatham, while thundering in spite of age and illness against the American War, fell in a fit on the floor of the House of Lords, and was carried to a bed whence he never rose.

No event of great note marked the fifth campaign (1779), which was conducted chiefly in the southern States.

In the sixth Sir Henry Clinton took **Charleston.** Arnold,
1780 commander of a fort on the Hudson River, deserted, and
A D. became a general in the British service Major André, who had arranged the affair, being seized by the American sentinels, was hanged as a spy by Washington, in spite of many entreaties.

During the seventh campaign a second great disaster tarnished the British arms. Lord Cornwallis, the conqueror of Gates and La Fayette, was, by the skilful movements of Washington, shut up in **Yorktown**, and compelled to surrender with 7000 men. This was the decisive blow; and, although the war lingered through another campaign, the American Colonies were now virtually severed from the British Empire. The independence of the **Thirteen United States** was after some time formally acknowledged by treaty; and they became a Republic governed by an elected President *

1781 A.D.

1783 A.D.

During the latter years of the American War Britain was engaged in a strife nearer home, which taxed her strength to the utmost. France, Spain, and Holland were in arms against her. Russia, Sweden, and Denmark had formed an *Armed Neutrality*; which means, in plain English, that they were ready to pounce upon her when they saw an opportunity fit and safe. But, even against such fearful odds, she triumphed. The chief event of the war was the unsuccessful siege of **Gibraltar** for three years by the French and Spaniards (1779–1782).

In 1780 London was convulsed by the *Gordon riots*. Two years earlier some heavy penal laws against Catholics had been repealed. In June 1780 Lord George Gordon, escorted by an immense mob, went to the House of Commons to present a petition against the removal of these laws. The petition was rejected, and a riot began. Catholic chapels were burned. Newgate and other jails were stormed, and the prisoners set free. For a week the mob held London streets, nor did they yield to the sabres and bullets of the soldiers, until more than 400 had been killed. Lord George was sent to the Tower, and tried; but he was acquitted. It is said that he afterwards became a Jew.

While civil war, as it may be called, was snapping the ties between Britain and the New England States, the discoveries of Captain **James Cook** were adding largely to the British Empire in another quarter of the globe. This celebrated sailor, whom

* The names of the Thirteen Original States, with the dates of their settlement or conquest, are appended.—

North Carolina	1585	New York	1664
Virginia	1607	New Jersey	
Massachusetts	1620	Delaware	
New Hampshire	1623	South Carolina	1680
Maryland	1634	Pennsylvania	1681
Connecticut	1635	Georgia	1732
Rhode Island	1636		

we may well call the founder of our great Australian Colonies, was born in Yorkshire in 1728 Between the years 1767 and 1779 he made three voyages round the world, exploring especially the South Seas and the coast of Australia. He was killed in 1779 at Owhyhee, by the spear of a treacherous native.

In 1783 **William Pitt** the younger, son of the Earl of Chatham, became, at the age of twenty-four, Chancellor of the Exchequer and Prime Minister There had never been so young a Premier, and few have been so good He had been already three years in Parliament

Our Indian Empire was rapidly enlarging The capture of Pondicherry in 1761 had ruined the French cause in Hindostan **Warren Hastings,** who in 1750 had left England at the age of seventeen, as a clerk in the Company's service, was in 1773 appointed the first Governor-General of India His chief victories were over the Mahrattas of Central India, and the Mohammedan Rajahs of Mysore—Hyder Ali and his son Tippoo Saib But the plunder of Benares, a sacred Hindoo city on the Ganges, and the spoliation of the Princesses of Oude, that he might have money to carry on these wars, are dark stains on his administration, and excited so much indignation in England, that on his return he was impeached before the Lords for cruelty and oppression in India.

The trial took place in **Westminster Hall.** Edmund Burke led the impeachment in a speech that has seldom been surpassed for stately eloquence Charles James Fox and Richard Brinsley Sheridan followed on the same side. The culprit was defended by three lawyers, who afterwards worthily wore the ermine of the Bench. For seven years the trial went on at intervals, and ended in the acquittal of Hastings, whom, however, it left nearly penniless His last days were spent at Daylesford—an old family seat—in the enjoyment of a pension of £4000 from the East India Company

Feb. 13, 1788 A.D

Lord Cornwallis, who was made Governor-General in 1786, stripped Tippoo of half his dominions, and under the Marquis Wellesley in 1799 **Seringapatam** was taken, Tippoo Saib slain, and the throne of Hyder Ali finally overturned Four years later, the Mahrattas, who had seized Delhi, were routed at Assaye (Sept. 24, 1803) by General Sir Arthur Wellesley, and also (Aug. 7) on the Jumna by General Lake. The *Great Mogul*, a blind old man, captured in Delhi sitting on a ragged carpet, then became a pensioner of the East India Company.

Ireland.—During the reign of Queen Anne, and subsequently, penal laws of the greatest severity were enacted against the Irish Catholics They were deprived of the power of acting as guardians to their own children, of holding land longer than thirty-one years, of inheriting property left to them by Protestants, of teaching in schools, of voting at elections, &c. Such laws reduced the peasantry to misery In 1724 an English brassfounder, named Wood, obtained a patent to supply Ireland with copper coinage, which drew forth the celebrated *Drapier Letters* from Dean Swift The members of the Irish Parliament at this time held their seats at the pleasure of the Crown, and the Lord-Lieutenant visited the country only once in two years The year 1745 produced a change, owing to fears of a French invasion in the weakest portion of the Empire. Lord Chesterfield was sent over to inaugurate a more soothing policy, and the bonds of penal law were slightly relaxed A descent of Thurot, a French commodore (in reality an Irishman named O'Farrell), upon Carrickfergus was the only movement of France at that time But Thurot was defeated and killed off the Isle of Man (1760)

Free trade was granted to Ireland in 1779; the Lord-Lieutenant was made to reside permanently in Dublin, but organized societies began to muster for the advocacy of Irish questions against the domination of the Government. The loss of America, as a market for Irish linen and provisions, consequent on the war, increased the distress The *Volunteers*, almost exclusively Protestants, and the *United Irishmen*, a Catholic association, were the chief societies dividing the people The discontent of the people needed only a spark to kindle it into a destructive explosion That spark was supplied by the French Revolution.

LEADING AUTHORS UNDER GEORGE III (1760–90 A D)

WILLIAM ROBERTSON, (1721–93)—minister of the Scottish Church—Principal of Edinburgh University—author of *Histories of Scotland* (1759), *Charles the Fifth*, and *America*

OLIVER GOLDSMITH, (1728–74)—poet, essayist, novelist—author of *Vicar of Wakefield* (1764), a novel, the *Traveller*, and the *Deserted Village* (1770), poems, and *She Stoops to Conquer*, and the *Good-Natured Man*, comedies

SAMUEL JOHNSON, (1709–84)—chief master of Latinized style—author of Essays in the *Rambler* (1750–52), *Rasselas*, a tale, a *Dictionary*, and *Lives of the Poets*

LAURENCE STERNE, (1713–68)—a clergyman—author of *Tristram Shandy* (1759–62), and *Sentimental Journey* (1765)

ADAM SMITH, (1723–90)—founder of Political Economy—author of *Wealth of Nations* (1776), showing Labour to be the source of Wealth.

JAMES BOSWELL, (1740–95)—a Scottish advocate—a devoted admirer of Dr John son, whose *Life* he wrote

EDWARD GIBBON, (1737–94)—our greatest historian—author of *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire* (1776–87), finished at Lausanne

ROBERT BURNS, (1759–96)—Scottish lyric poet—author of *Songs Tam o' Shanter, Cottar's Saturday Night,* &c.

EDMUND BURKE, (1730–97)—a celebrated orator and statesman—author of an *Essay on the Sublime and Beautiful, Reflections on the French Revolution* (1790)

BRINSLEY SHERIDAN, (1751–1816 —theatrical manager and writer of comedies—chief plays, *The Rivals* and *The School for Scandal*—noted also as an orator and statesman

WILLIAM COWPER, (1731–1800)—poet—author of the *Task* (1785), *Homer translated* (1791) &c —wrote chiefly at Olney in lucid intervals of religious mania

LEADING ARTISTS

THOMAS GAINSBOROUGH, (1727–88)—born in Suffolk—a fine painter of English landscapes—lived in Ipswich Bath and London

SIR JOSHUA REYNOLDS, 1723–92)—born in Devonshire—the first President of the Royal Academy—a famous portrait and historical painter—published *Discourses on Painting*—a great friend of Dr Johnson

LEADING INVENTORS, ETC

JAMES BRINDLEY, (1716–72)—native of Tunsted Derbyshire—engineer of the canal made by Duke of Bridgewater from Worsley to Manchester, and hence the founder of our Canal Navigation

SIR RICHARD ARKWRIGHT, (1732–92)—born at Preston, Lancashire—originally a hair dresser—invented the Spinning frame (1771) by which hand labour is saved in the cotton mills—hence may be called the founder of our great Cotton Manufacture

JOSIAH WEDGEWOOD, (1731–95)—the great improver of our Porcelain Manufacture—the son of a Staffordshire potter inventor of the "Queen's ware," made of white Dorsetshire clay mixed with ground flint

JAMES WATT, (1736–1819)—native of Greenock—invented the double acting condensing Steam engine, and applied it to machinery—lived first in Glasgow, and then in Birmingham

CHAPTER V.

GEORGE III —(CONTINUED)

The French Revolution (1789–95 A D)
Rise of Napoleon I
Mutiny at the Nore (1797 A D)
Irish Rebellion (1798 A D)
The Nile (1798 A D)
Union of Ireland (1801 A D)
Trafalgar (1805 A D)
Peninsular War (1808–14 A D)
Corunna (1809 A.D)
Walcheren Expedition (1809 A D)
The Regency (1811 A D)
Napoleon in Russia (1812 A.D)
Vitoria (1813 A D)
War with United States (1812–14 A D)
Escape of Napoleon (1815 A D)
Plans of the Allies
Waterloo (1815 A.D)
The National Debt
Algiers Bombarded (1816 A D)
Death of the King (1820 A D)
Notes

THE **French Revolution**, which began in 1789 and ended in 1795, was the greatest event of the eighteenth century. It was excited chiefly by three causes,—the infidel writings of Voltaire and Rousseau, the oppression of the lower orders by insolent nobles, and the want of money consequent on the reckless extravagance of the French Court. During its progress the ancient Bourbon monarchy was overturned, the King and the Queen—Louis XVI and Marie Antoinette—were guillotined; the Christian faith was trampled under foot, and a goddess of Reason set up for worship; and all France was drenched in blood The storm spread far and wide over Continental Europe, and beat strongly, though harmlessly, against our island-shores.

The attack of the French mobs upon hereditary monarchy alarmed all the great neighbouring thrones, and, when the blood of Louis stained the scaffold, war was declared against the new **French Republic** by Britain, Holland, Spain, Austria, Prussia, and five smaller States The strife, then kindled, continued with little interruption for twenty-two years. **1793** A.D.

It was soon manifest that the energies of France had been braced rather than exhausted by the hurricane of Revolution. Toulon, a strong fortress of the Mediterranean shore, having surrendered to a British fleet, was retaken by the cannon of the Republic, directed chiefly by a little Corsican officer of artillery called Napoleon Bonaparte, who had been much distinguished for mathematics in the military schools

Napoleon became conspicuous in France from the day, on which he scattered the National Guard with a volley of grape-shot

before the Palace of the Tuileries, and thus saved the French Directory That day was the 4th of October 1795 In the following year he married Josephine Beauharnois, by whose influence he gained the command of the French army in Italy; and there, in a single campaign, by a series of most brilliant victories, he broke the power of Austria and her Allies

In the British Parliament Pitt was earnestly urging the prosecution of the war at all risks Fox, his great opponent, cried eloquently for peace, and pointed to the National Debt, which was now more than four hundred millions

In 1797 Spain declared war against Britain Holland had already deserted her alliance She stood alone among the Powers of Europe. It was a time of great gloom and distress, which grew deeper when the Bank of England stopped cash payments, and a dangerous mutiny broke out in the royal navy. The seamen demanded more pay. At Spithead they were easily pacified; but at the **Nore** the mutineers seized the ships, and anchored them across the Thames, in order to shut up the mouth of the river. The men did not return to their duty until the ringleaders were arrested and hanged But two great naval victories relieved the gloom of the year. In February, off Cape *St Vincent*, Admiral Jervis and Commodore Nelson, with twenty-one sail, defeated thirty-two Spanish ships of war In October the ships of Holland were scattered by Admiral Duncan off the Dutch village of *Camperdown*

The following year was noted for the Irish rebellion, and Napoleon's invasion of Egypt

In no part of Europe did the evil example of the French Revolution bear more bitter fruit than in **Ireland.** In 1780 the *Volunteers*, influenced by the success of the American Colonists, banded themselves together to secure the reform of Parliament. They were disbanded by the skilful policy of the Government In 1791 at Belfast another society, called *The United Irishmen*, was formed under the same pretence, but with the real purpose of separating Ireland from the British Empire A secret correspondence was held with France; and, when all seemed ready, a day was fixed for the outbreak of rebellion. But the Government, receiving timely notice of the plot, seized the leaders, among whom was Lord Edward Fitzgerald. Then an aimless and unsuccessful rising took place In Antrim and Down it was slightly felt; but it raged cruelly and fiercely for about two months in Wicklow and Wexford. In the battle of Vinegar-hill near Enniscorthy in the latter

1798 A.D.

county, General Lake routed the great mass of the rebel army (June 21) When all was over, 900 French troops, under Humbert, landed at Killala Bay in Mayo, and marched inland. In less than a month, however, they were forced to surrender at Carrick-on-Shannon

Napoleon spent two campaigns in **Egypt** and **Syria**, engaged in a fruitless attempt to open a path to the conquest of India. Sailing from Toulon with a great fleet and army, he took Malta on his way, and landed at Alexandria Then pressing on to Cairo, he defeated the Mamelukes of Egypt in the battle of the Pyramids. But he had been followed by Admiral Nelson, who annihilated his fleet as it lay in the Bay of **Aboukir.** The action began at sunset, and lasted until day-break. Nelson was severely wounded in the head by a splinter of iron The French flag-ship, *Orient*, blew up during the battle, with the admiral and his crew of 1000 men. Never was a naval victory more complete. Of thirteen French men-of-war, nine were taken and two burned; and of four frigates two escaped By this brilliant victory the army of Napoleon was imprisoned amid the sands of Egypt But, never inactive, he led his soldiers, early in 1799, across the desert between Egypt and Palestine, took the town of Jaffa by storm, and laid siege to Acre Thence he was repulsed by British and Turkish troops under Sir Sidney Smith Alarming news from France caused him to leave his soldiers in Egypt, and hurry to his adopted country. The army, thus abandoned, lost spirit, and was finally routed at Alexandria in 1801 by Sir Ralph Abercromby, who received a mortal wound during the action. Aug. 1 **1798** A D.

The rebellion of 1798 showed the necessity of binding Ireland more closely to the Empire After many debates and much opposition in Ireland, the **Union** of the Parliaments was accomplished; from which already, even in half a century, Ireland has reaped numberless blessings. Henceforward the people of Ireland were to be represented in the Imperial Parliament by thirty-two Lords and one hundred Commoners; their traders enjoyed many new and valuable commercial privileges; while the taxes were far less heavy than those paid in Great Britain. For some time after the Union there was considerable discontent in Ireland; and a rising, suppressed, however, in a single night, took place in the streets of Dublin in 1803. The clever but misguided Robert Emmet, who led this attempt at insurrection, suffered death for the crime. Pitt thought that the Union would be more complete and lasting Jan. 1, **1801** A D.

if the Catholics were emancipated from penal laws. The King did not agree with him on this point. He therefore resigned, and was succeeded by Henry Addington

Russia, under the Czar Paul, now menaced Britain. The Armed Neutrality of the Northern States was revived But Admiral Nelson, entering the Sound, totally destroyed the Danish fleet at Copenhagen in four hours (April 2, 1801) A few days earlier the Czar Paul was murdered, and his son Alex-
Mar. 27, ander soon made peace with Britain. The Powers of
1802 Europe then signed the **Treaty of Amiens**. But this
A.D. peace was a mere empty form, and in little more than a year the war was renewed.

In 1804 **Pitt** again became Prime Minister Napoleon, elected First Consul for life in 1802, was then Emperor of the French. Surrounding his throne with eighteen Marshals, veterans in war and devoted to his cause, he bent his great genius to the conquest of Europe. Never was the balance of power so seriously threatened, and never was a grasping despot more resolutely met or more utterly overthrown

The **invasion** of Britain was a part of the daring scheme, and a flotilla of gun-boats lay at Boulogne, ready to pour a French army on the shores of England, but the watchfulness of Nelson and the terror of his name saved our island from invasion The army of the French Emperor was then turned to the Danube, on the banks of which Austria was marshalling her legions to oppose his grasping ambition

At first Spain sided with Napoleon, but Lord Nelson inflicted upon the combined fleets a most decisive defeat off Cape **Trafal-**
gar, capturing nineteen ships out of thirty-three. Dur-
Oct. 21, ing the action Nelson was struck by a rifle bullet
1805 from the enemy's rigging as he stood on the quarter-
A.D. deck of the *Victory*, and died before the day was past. He was borne to his last resting-place in St. Paul's Cathedral with princely honours amid the tears of a mourning nation.

On the 2nd of December 1805 Napoleon crushed the power of Austria in the great battle of *Austerlitz*, on the 14th of October 1806 Prussia was humbled in one day on the field of *Jena*. All Europe then lay at his feet except Russia and Britain;—the one strong in her snowy steppes and her thick forests of pine, the other safe within her island shores, and securely guarded by her "wooden walls."

In 1806 Pitt and Fox died, within a few months of each other,

both worked to death by the toils of statesmanship. Pitt was only forty-six; Fox had reached the age of fifty-seven.

Napoleon well knew that in commerce chiefly lay the strength of the British—"that nation of shopkeepers," as he contemptuously called them From **Berlin** he issued **Decrees**, ordering that the British Islands should be strictly blockaded, and that all the ports of Europe should be shut against British vessels. The British Ministry, in return, decreed that no neutral power should trade with France or her allies The fleet of Denmark, a neutral State, was then seized by Britain,—an act that can hardly be defended.

Already Napoleon had begun to fill the thrones of Europe with his kinsmen His brother Louis was King of Holland, his brother-in-law, Murat, sat on the throne of Naples He now sought to make his brother Joseph King of Spain; and from this act of aggression sprang the **Peninsular War**, which gave the first decided check to the march of his ambition.

The Spaniards rose in arms, and called upon Britain for help. Sir Arthur Wellesley, already distinguished in Indian wars, was sent to their aid with 10,000 men Landing **1808** at **Mondego** Bay in Portugal, he defeated Marshal Junot A.D. at *Vimiero* on the 21st of August.

But, through jealousy at home, he was recalled. His successor, Sir Hew Dalrymple, made a treaty called the *Convention of Cintra*, by which the French were allowed to evacuate Portugal with all their arms and warlike stores. This foolish lenience cost Sir Hew his command, and Sir **John Moore** took his place Deceived by promises of aid which the Spanish Junta could not fulfil, Moore led his army into the heart of Leon; but there he received the alarming news that, notwithstanding the gallant defence of Saragossa by the Spaniards, Napoleon was master of Madrid. There was no course open to the British leader but a retreat towards the shore of Galicia. The sufferings of the army during that backward march were past description. It was mid-winter; food was scarcely to be had; and Soult pressed constantly on their rear.

When the British army, famished and rag-clad, reached **Corunna**, their ships had not yet arrived, and Soult was close upon them. Facing round, they moved to meet **Jan. 16,** him, and won a brilliant and decided victory. Moore, **1809** killed by a cannon-ball towards the close of the action, A.D. was laid in a soldier's grave on the ramparts of Corunna.

Sir Arthur Wellesley then again took the command of the

army. Invading Spain, he won a great battle at **Talavera** on
July 28. the banks of the Tagus For this victory he was created Viscount Wellington But the approaches to Madrid being covered by three French armies, under Soult, Ney, and Mortier, he was then obliged to fall back upon the frontiers of Portugal. Austria during this year made a desperate effort to retrieve the glory of her arms; but on the field of *Wagram* her power was again shattered by Napoleon, and the eagles of France were borne in triumph into Vienna.

George III having reached the fiftieth year of his reign, the rare event was celebrated in October by a national jubilee. To aid Austria in her struggle against Napoleon, the ill-fated **Walcheren** expedition was sent to the coast of the Netherlands One hundred thousand men were placed under the command of the Earl of Chatham, elder brother of Pitt The great object of the movement was to seize the French batteries on the Scheldt, and destroy the naval works at Antwerp; but in the marshy island of Walcheren disease swept off the troops in thousands, and only a wreck of the splendid force returned to Britain in December.

Portugal was the scene of the next Peninsular campaign The armies of France were concentrated upon that country
1810 for the purpose of driving the British to their ships;
A D. but in the battle of *Busaco* (Sept. 27) Wellington repulsed Massena with heavy loss Then, retreating to the heights of **Torres Vedras**, some distance north of Lisbon, he took up a position from which no efforts of the French Marshals could dislodge him. The war in Spain was carried on chiefly by irregular troops called *Guerillas*.

It was during this year that Napoleon, having divorced Josephine, married Maria Louisa of Austria An important constitutional question was discussed in the British Parliament. The King's mind, long tottering, had given way; blindness, too, fell upon him. The appointment of a Regent became necessary, and in December it was resolved that the Prince of Wales should rule as Prince Regent, with power little less than royal. On the 5th of February 1811 the **Regency** began.

Three important victories marked the fourth campaign
1811 in the Peninsula. Graham defeated Marshal Victor at
A D. *Barrosa* (March 5). Massena was routed by the British at *Fuentes d'Onoro* (May 5). More glorious still was the victory of **Albuera** (May 16), where Soult, marching to relieve the frontier fortress of Badajoz, besieged by Beresford, was repulsed with great slaughter. The long war had now begun to

tell heavily on the commerce of Britain, and there were many bankruptcies. In the East Batavia, the capital of the Dutch colonies in Java, surrendered to a British force.

Holding Portugal as a base of operations, on which he could at any time fall back, Wellington invaded Spain for the third time *Cuidad Rodrigo* and *Badajoz*, great forts which guarded the western frontier of Spain, soon fell before him. The defeat of Marmont at *Salamanca* opened the way to **Madrid**, into which the victor led his troops on the 12th of August amid the rejoicings of all Spain But the approach of two French armies, marching in hot haste from the south and the east, forced him to retreat upon Portugal. In the spring of this year the British Premier, Mr. Perceval, was shot in the lobby of the House of Commons by a merchant named Bellingham, whose business had been ruined by the war.

1812 A.D. July 22.

Meanwhile the Empire of Napoleon had received a heavy blow in the defeat of his Russian campaign With an army of nearly half a million he had penetrated the vast territory of the Czars to its very heart But the flames of **Moscow** drove him back; and in all history there is nothing more appalling than the story of his retreat When the winter snow melted, the bones of 400,000 men lay white from Moscow to the Niemen.

Step by step the French eagles were driven across the Pyrenees. The decisive battle was fought at **Vitoria** in Biscay. The capture of St. Sebastian and Pamplona speedily followed, and the victorious Wellington, crossing the Bidassoa into France, scattered the remnant of Soult's army on the 10th of April 1814 in the battle of *Toulouse*. Six days earlier, Napoleon, routed in the great battle of *Leipsic*, and followed even into Paris by a victorious host of Russians, Swedes, Germans, Austrians, and Prussians, had abdicated the throne of France The Bourbons returned to Paris and Madrid; on the 30th of May 1814 the first Peace of Paris was signed; while the fallen Emperor retired to the island of Elba.

June 21, **1813** A.D.

During these mighty changes Britain had been at war with the **United States** of America. The British claimed the right of searching American vessels for deserters; the Americans resisted; and hence the war arose It lasted for nearly three years (1812–1814). The Americans made some unsuccessful attacks on Canada. British soldiers burned the public buildings of Washington, but were repulsed with loss at New Orleans. Of the many naval engagements between single ships, the most

notable were one between the British frigate *Guerrière* and the American ship *Constitution*, in which the Americans were victorious; and a second duel off Boston (June 1, 1813), between the English frigate *Shannon* and the American frigate *Chesapeake*, in which the English proved successful The *Peace of Ghent*, signed in December 1814, put an end to the war, but without deciding the original ground of quarrel.

For his great success in the Peninsula Wellington was made a Duke, was publicly thanked by the Houses of Parliament, and received a grant of £400,000 Towards the close of 1814 a Congress met at Vienna to settle the affairs of Europe, which were all confused after a war so long and costly.

But the news of March 1815 brought their meetings to a sudden close. **Napoleon** had escaped from Elba, had landed on the 1st of March on the coast of Provence, and was marching rapidly on Paris His Marshals hastened to his side. The French soldiers, disgusted with the government of the Bourbons, flocked in thousands round his banner And, in twenty days after his landing, he once more held the capital and the throne of France.

All Europe was alarmed and enraged at his daring disregard of treaties and oaths The British Parliament voted £110,000,000 for his overthrow. The Duke of Wellington took the command of 80,000 troops. Blucher marshalled 110,000 Prussians for the campaign. Austria and Russia were preparing to invade France on the eastern frontier with enormous armies. All offers of negotiation from Napoleon were unheeded, and his only hope lay in instant action

Wellington's plan was to join the Prussian army in Belgium, and thence to march on Paris from the north-east. Napoleon, resolving if possible to prevent this union, crossed the French frontier on the 15th of June The British lay then at Brussels: the Prussians were at Ligny, some miles nearer the frontier. Wellington received the news of the French advance on the afternoon of the 15th. In the ball-room of the Duchess of Richmond a hurried whisper passed round among the officers; and at day-break the British regiments began to pour out of Brussels towards **Quatre Bras**, an important point twenty miles off, where two roads crossed. There they were attacked on the 16th by Marshal Ney, who strove without success to force the position. But on the same day Napoleon drove the Prussians from *Ligny*, and sent Grouchy in pursuit with 35,000 men, to cut them off from a union with the army of Wellington.

This defeat of the Prussians obliged Wellington to fall back on the village of **Waterloo.** Even there Blucher was distant from him nearly a day's march; and Napoleon exulted in the prospect of certain victory, for he had got, as he thought, between the allied armies, and all that now remained was to defeat them in turn.

The battle of Waterloo—called by the French St. Jean—was fought on a Sunday. All night before, the rain had fallen in torrents, and when the troops rose from their cheerless bivouac among the crushed and muddy rye, a drizzling rain still fell. The armies faced each other upon two gentle slopes, across which ran the high road to Brussels. The army of Wellington numbered 69,000,—that of Napoleon about 80,000 men Between, in a slight hollow, lay the farm-house La Haye Sainte, and on an angle of the northern slope, serving as a key to the British position, was Hougoumont, an old red-brick chateau round these the bloodiest combats of the day took place. June 18, **1815** A D.

The battle began at ten o'clock. Napoleon knew that he was a ruined man unless he could pierce and break the red masses that lay between him and Brussels He kept closely to one plan of action,—a storm of shot and shell upon the British ranks, and then a rapid rush of lancers and steel-clad cuirassiers But the British infantry, formed into solid squares, met every charge like the rocks that encircle their native shore. Again, and again, and again the baffled cavalry of France recoiled with many an empty saddle This was a terrible game to play; and well might Wellington, when he looked on the squares, growing every moment smaller, as soldier after soldier stepped silently into the place of his fallen comrade, pray that either night or Blucher would come. It was four o'clock in the afternoon before the distant sound of the Prussian cannon was heard Bulow had outmarched Grouchy, and was hastening to Waterloo Napoleon then made the grandest effort of the day. The Old Guard of France, unconquered veterans of Austerlitz and Jena, burst in a furious onset upon the shattered ranks of Britain; but, at one magic word, the British squares dissolved into "thin red lines," glittering with bayonets, and, with a cheer that rent the smoke-cloud hovering above the field, swept on to meet the foe. The French columns wavered—broke—fled; and Waterloo was won. During the three eventful days 40,000 French, 16,000 Prussians, 13,000 British and Germans were killed. We are told that Wellington wept as he rode over the plain by moonlight. But who can tell

the thoughts of the fallen despot, as he fled from the field where his mighty sword, stained with the blood and the tears of millions, lay shivered into atoms?

Paris, where he abdicated in favour of his son,—Rochefort, whence he tried to escape to America,—the Roads of Aix, where, on the quarter-deck of the *Bellerophon*, he cast himself on the mercy of Britain,—the lonely rock of **St. Helena** where for six years he dwelt imprisoned by the Atlantic waves,—these are the last scenes in the history of Napoleon I. He died on the 3rd of May 1821, and in 1840 his remains were removed to France.

Thus ended a war, during which Britain had made gigantic efforts. The **National Debt**, which at the end of the Seven Years' War was £139,000,000, and at the end of the American War £268,000,000, had now reached the incalculable sum of £880,000,000. The sudden change from war to peace caused great distress. Bread was still dear, while wages sank very low. The wheat crop of 1817 failed; and riotous meetings took place, which were not suppressed without much trouble. But fast as our debts grew, still faster grew the wealth of our cotton-mills, where steam-power had come to the aid of the spinning-frame and the power-loom.

In August 1816 **Algiers**, a nest of pirates, was attacked by a British fleet, under Lord Exmouth. After a bombardment of six hours the Dey struck his flag, and agreed to set free all his Christian slaves, and to seize no more.

The death of the Princess Charlotte, only child of the Prince Regent, and wife of Prince Leopold, cast a heavy gloom over the nation. A twelvemonth later died Queen Charlotte, and on the 29th of January 1820 George III closed his long reign at the age of eighty-two. He had twelve children, of whom the four eldest were the Prince Regent, Frederic Duke of York, William Duke of Clarence, and Edward Duke of Kent.

Nov. 6, **1817** A.D.

George III was a good man and a wise King. Unlike his predecessors of the same name, he made the glory and the good of Britain his highest objects. In his old age nothing pleased him better than to escape from the noise and smoke of London to his quiet farms; and the name, "Farmer George," by which he was sometimes called, well describes the simple, homely old man, who was known and loved as well in the cottage as in the castle.

In 1781, Robert Raikes of Gloucester opened the first Sunday

school; and about the same time, John Howard made his tour of mercy among the prisons of Europe. In 1785 the *Times* was established, under the name of the *Daily Universal Register*, a small sheet of four pages. London streets were first lighted with gas in 1806. In the same year, Fulton, an American, launched the first regular steam-boat on the Hudson; and in 1811 Henry Bell of Helensburgh started on the Clyde the first steam-vessel in Europe.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

FRANCE

	A.D.
LOUIS XV., began to reign	1715
LOUIS XVI.,	1774
REVOLUTION,	1789
REPUBLIC,	1792
DIRECTORY,	1795
NAPOLEON, First Consul,	1799
NAPOLEON, EMPEROR,	1804
LOUIS XVIII.,	1814

SPAIN.

CHARLES III.,	1759
CHARLES IV.,	1788
FERDINAND VII.,	1808
JOSEPH BONAPARTE,	—
FERDINAND VII, restored,	1814

ADOLPHUS FREDERIC,	1751
GUSTAVUS III,	1771
GUSTAVUS IV,	1792
CHARLES XIII,	1809
CHARLES JOHN BERNADOTTE	1818

ELIZABETH,	1741
PETER III.,	1762
CATHERINE II.,	—
PAUL I.,	1796
ALEXANDER,	1801

PRUSSIA.

	A.D.
FREDERIC II., began to reign	1740
FREDERIC WILLIAM II.,	1786
FREDERIC WILLIAM III.,	1797

MUSTAPHA III.,	1757
ABDUL-AHMED,	1774
SELIM III.,	1788
MUSTAPHA IV.,	1807
MAHMUD II.,	1808

FRANCIS I.,	1745
JOSEPH II,	1765
LEOPOLD II,	1790
FRANCIS II. (title changed to Emperor of Austria in 1804)	1792

CLEMENT XIII.,	1758
CLEMENT XIV.,	1769
PIUS VI.,	1775
PIUS VII.,	1800

the thoughts of the fallen despot, as he fled from the field where his mighty sword, stained with the blood and the tears of millions, lay shivered into atoms?

Paris, where he abdicated in favour of his son,—Rochefort, whence he tried to escape to America,—the Roads of Aix, where, on the quarter-deck of the *Bellerophon*, he cast himself on the mercy of Britain,—the lonely rock of **St. Helena** where for six years he dwelt imprisoned by the Atlantic waves,—these are the last scenes in the history of Napoleon I He died on the 3rd of May 1821, and in 1840 his remains were removed to France

Thus ended a war, during which Britain had made gigantic efforts The **National Debt**, which at the end of the Seven Years' War was £139,000,000, and at the end of the American War £268,000,000 had now reached the incalculable sum of £880,000,000 The sudden change from war to peace caused great distress Bread was still dear, while wages sank very low. The wheat crop of 1817 failed; and riotous meetings took place, which were not suppressed without much trouble But fast as our debts grew, still faster grew the wealth of our cotton-mills, where steam-power had come to the aid of the spinning-frame and the power-loom

In August 1816 **Algiers**, a nest of pirates, was attacked by a British fleet, under Lord Exmouth After a bombardment of six hours the Dey struck his flag, and agreed to set free all his Christian slaves, and to seize no more.

The death of the Princess Charlotte, only child of the Prince Regent, and wife of Prince Leopold, cast a heavy gloom over the nation A twelvemonth later died Queen Charlotte, and on the 29th of January 1820 George III closed his long reign at the age of eighty-two He had twelve children, of whom the four eldest were the Prince Regent, Frederic Duke of York, William Duke of Clarence, and Edward Duke of Kent

Nov. 6, **1817** A.D.

George III was a good man and a wise King Unlike his predecessors of the same name, he made the glory and the good of Britain his highest objects In his old age nothing pleased him better than to escape from the noise and smoke of London to his quiet farms, and the name, "Farmer George," by which he was sometimes called, well describes the simple, homely old man, who was known and loved as well in the cottage as in the castle.

In 1781, Robert Raikes of Gloucester opened the first Sunday

school; and about the same time, John Howard made his tour of mercy among the prisons of Europe In 1785 the *Times* was established, under the name of the *Daily Universal Register*, a small sheet of four pages Londo streets were first lighted with gas in 1806 In the same year, Fulton, an American, launched the first regular steam boat on the Hudson, and in 1811 Henry Bell of Helensburgh started on the Clyde the first steam-vessel in Europe

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

	A D
LOUIS XV, began to reign	1715
LOUIS XVI,	1774
REVOLUTION,	1789
REPUBLIC,	1792
DIRECTORY,	1795
NAPOLEON, First Consul,	1799
NAPOLEON, EMPEROR,	1804
LOUIS XVIII,	1814
CHARLES III,	1759
CHARLES IV,	1788
FERDINAND VII,	1808
JOSEPH BONAPARTE,	—
FERDINAND VII, restored,	1814
ADOLPHUS FREDERIC,	1751
GUSTAVUS III,	1771
GUSTAVUS IV,	1792
CHARLES XIII,	1809
CHARLES JOHN BERNADOTTE	1818
ELIZABETH,	1741
PETER III,	1762
CATHERINE II.,	—
PAUL I.,	1796
ALEXANDER,	1801

PRUSSIA	A D
FREDERIC II, began to reign	1740
FREDERIC WILLIAM II,	1786
FREDERIC WILLIAM III,	1797
MUSTAPHA III,	1757
ABDUL-AHMED,	1774
SELIM III,	1788
MUSTAPHA IV,	1807
MAHMUD II,	1808
FRANCIS I.,	1745
JOSEPH II,	1765
LEOPOLD II,	1790
FRANCIS II (title changed to Emperor of Austria in 1804)	1792
CLEMENT XIII,	1758
CLEMENT XIV.,	1769
PIUS VI,	1775
PIUS VII.,	1800

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

	A.D.		A.D.
Birth of Napoleon I.,	1769	Austria made an hereditary Empire,	1804
First Partition of Poland,	1772	Battle of Austerlitz,	1805
Frederic the Great dies,	1786	Battle of Jena,	1806
French Revolution,	1789–95	Portuguese Court emigrate to Brazil,	1807
Siege of Ismail (Turkey),	1790	Defence of Saragossa (Spain),	1808
Final Partition of Poland,	1793	Napoleon's Russian Campaign,	1812
Napoleon in Italy,	1796–7	Battle of Leipsic and Abdication of Napoleon,	1814
He is made First Consul,	1799		
Negro Empire established in Hayti,	1801		
Napoleon, Emperor of the French	1804		

LEADING AUTHORS UNDER GEORGE III (1790–1820 A.D.)

GEORGE CRABBE, (1754–1832)—a Dorsetshire clergyman—author of various poems, *The Village* (1783) *Parish Register Borough* &c.

S. T. COLERIDGE, (1772–1834)—a poet of the Lake School—chief works, *The Ancient Mariner, Christabel* (a fragment), *Wallenstein* (a translation), *Lectures on Shakspere*

THOMAS CAMPBELL, (1777–1844) a poet—author of *Pleasures of Hope* (1799), *Gertrude of Wyoming* (1809), ballads such as *Hohenlinden*, naval lyrics, such as *Battle of the Baltic* and *Mariners of England*

ROBERT SOUTHEY, (1774–1843)—a Lake poet—Laureate (1813–43)—author of poems, *Thalaba* 1801), *Madoc* (1805), *Curse of Kehama* (1810), and prose works, *Life of Nelson* (1813), Histories of *Brazil* and *Portugal*

WALTER SCOTT, (1771–1832)—a Scottish lawyer—Sub sheriff of Selkirkshire and Principal Clerk of Session—chief poems *Lay of the Last Minstrel* (1805), *Marmion* and *Lady of the Lake* —author of the *Waverley Novels* (1814–31)—lived chiefly at Ashestiel and Abbotsford on the Tweed

LORD BYRON, (1788–1824)—romantic poet—author of *Childe Harold's Pilgrimage* (1812–18), and Turkish tales in verse, such as the *Giaour* and the *Corsair*—a supporter of the revolted Greeks—died at Missolonghi

WILLIAM WORDSWORTH, (1770–1850)—chief of Lake poets—Distributer of Stamps—lived at Rydal Mount—chief poem, *The Excursion* (1814)—other works, *White Doe of Rylstone* and the *Prelude* (pub after death)—Laureate (1843–50)

PERCY B. SHELLEY, (1792–1822)—a poetic genius marred with infidelity—chief works, *Queen Mab, Alastor, Prometheus Unbound*, among minor poems, *Skylark* and *Sensitive Plant*—drowned at Spezzia

JOHN KEATS, (1795–1820)—a surgeon's apprentice—a poet of the senses—chief works, *Endymion* (1818), *Hyperion, Eve of St Agnes*, &c

LEADING ARTISTS

BENJAMIN WEST, (1738–1820)—born at Springfield in America—distinguished historical painter—President of the Royal Academy

JOHN FLAXMAN, (1755–1826)—born at York—a great sculptor—chief works, Illustrations of Homer, Dante, and Æschylus—Professor of Sculpture to the Royal Academy

---

LEADING INVENTORS, ETC

SIR WILLIAM HERSCHEL, (1738–1822)—born in Hanover—at first a musician—the great improver of the reflecting telescope—discovered the planet Uranus in 1781—also volcanoes in the moon, and many satellites—received a pension of £300—died at Slough

THOMAS TELFORD, (1757–1834)—Eskdale in Dumfries shire—engineer of the *Caledonian* and *Gotha Canals*, and of the *Menai Bridge*

HENRY CORT,—an iron master of Dean Forest—greatest improver of iron-manufacture by discovery of *puddling*—that is, changing cast iron by the flame of pit-coal into wrought iron.

CHAPTER VI.

GEORGE IV.

Born 1762 A.D —Began to reign 1820 A.D —Died 1830 A D.

The Cato Street Gang (1820 A D)
Queen Caroline
Visits of the King
The Burmese War (1824 A D)
Money Panic
Death of Canning (1827 A.D)
Navarino
The Emancipation Bill (1829 A.D)
Death
Character
Notes

THE Prince Regent, who had already ruled for nine years, now became **King George IV.** A few days after his accession, a plot to murder the Ministers, when they were assembled at an official dinner given by Lord Harrowby, was discovered by the police. The leader of the gang was Thistlewood, a broken-down profligate When the murder had been perpetrated, the prisons were to be broken open, London was to be set on fire, and a Revolution accomplished On the very evening fixed for the crime, the police came suddenly upon the conspirators in a hay-loft in Cato Street, near the Edgeware Road A desperate scuffle ensued; a policeman was killed, but the capture was made. Thistlewood and four others were executed; the rest were transported. A slight rising about the same time at Kilsyth in Stirlingshire was soon suppressed

Nothing showed George IV in a worse light than his treatment of his wife, **Caroline of Brunswick,** to whom he was married in 1795 They had never agreed, and had soon separated. Indeed his life was such that no wife could live happily with him. During the Regency she had lived in Italy; but when she heard that her husband was King, she hastened to England to claim the honours due to a Queen. On the 6th of July 1820, a "Bill of Pains and Penalties" was brought into the House of Lords, charging her with unfaithfulness to the King. She was nobly defended by Brougham and Denman; and on the 10th of November the Bill was abandoned, to the great joy of the people, who were all on her side.

Aug. 7, 1821 A.D. In the following year she came to the door of Westminster Abbey on the day of her husband's coronation, but was refused admittance by the officers in attendance. Nineteen days later she died. Even round her coffin,

as it was borne from London to Harwich, there was deadly strife between the soldiers and the people.

In the same month as his wife died, the King visited Ireland, where he was received with joy, as the first British King who had paid a visit of peace to the island. Next month he went to Hanover, and in the August of the following year he stayed for thirteen days in Scotland. There he received the news that one of his chief ministers, the Marquis of Londonderry,—better known as Lord Castlereagh—had committed suicide The Marquis was succeeded as Foreign Secretary by **Mr. George Canning**, once the witty poet of the *Anti-Jacobin*.

In February 1824, the British Government, irritated by outrages on their colonies beyond the Ganges, declared war against Burmah. In the first campaign Sir Archibald Campbell captured the town of **Rangoon** and the forts at the mouth of the Irrawaddy. A small force under General Morrison seized the province of Aracan during the following year. In 1826 a treaty was made, by which the coasts of Tenasserim and the district of Aracan were given up to Britain.

Money Panic.—In 1824, a great rage for joint-stock companies seized the nation. Money was abundant, and men invested it, on the promise of high interest, in schemes of the wildest description. Loans were granted to half the States on the face of the globe Paper money was issued by the banks to an extent far beyond what was prudent. The natural result was a panic or commercial crisis in 1825, when 50 banks shut their doors, and more than 200 merchants became insolvent.

In the spring of 1827 the Earl of Liverpool, who had been Prime Minister for the last fifteen years, suffered a stroke of paralysis, and **Canning** was called to the head of the Government. But this gifted and eloquent statesman, sinking under the heavy load of so great an office, died in the August of the same year. He was succeeded by Lord Goderich.

Early in the reign of George IV. the **Greeks** rose in revolt against the Turks, who had been grinding them in abject slavery for more than three centuries. The heroic courage of the Suliotes and other Greek mountaineers, among whom the spirit of the ancient race was still alive, won the admiration and sympathy of Europe. Our poet Byron devoted his pen and his fortune to the cause of Greece, and spent the wreck of his short life in her service.

In the year 1827 three great Powers of Europe—Russia, France, and Britain—signed a treaty in London, by which they

agreed to force Turkey into an acknowledgment of Grecian independence. Towards the close of the year, the allied
Oct. 20, 1827 A.D. fleet under Admiral Codrington, sailing into the harbour of **Navarino** in the south-west of the Morea, destroyed the whole navy of Turkey in a few hours. Soon afterwards the Turkish soldiers were withdrawn, Greece was formed into an independent kingdom, and Otho, a Bavarian prince, was placed on the newly-erected throne.

The most remarkable political event of this reign was the passing of the **Emancipation Bill** under the ministry of the Duke of Wellington, who, aided by Mr. Robert Peel as Home Secretary, took office in 1828. Penal laws had been pressing heavily since the Revolution on the Catholics of Ireland, who now assumed a threatening attitude, showing clearly that a change must be made to preserve the peace of the Empire. In 1828 the Test and Corporation Acts of Charles II were repealed. But they demanded more than this. In spite of the law forbidding Catholics to sit in Parliament, they returned **Daniel O'Connell**, an Irish barrister of great popular eloquence, as member for the
1829 A.D. county of Clare; and so well did he fight the battle of his Church, that a Bill was passed removing all penal laws against Catholics, and placing them on the same political footing as the Protestant subjects of the Crown.

On the 26th of June 1830 the King died at the age of sixty-eight. He left no heir.

The flatterers of George IV used to call him "the first gentleman in Europe." If a shapely figure, fine taste in dress, and manners of courtly polish alone make up a gentleman, he had a good claim to the title, but if, as some men think, a true gentleman must have a feeling heart and lead a moral life, then this King deserves not the name.

During this reign Captains Parry and Ross explored the Arctic Seas in search of the North-West Passage. In 1820 the use of broken stones in road-making was introduced by Mr. Macadam. In 1821 the first iron steam-boat was seen on the Thames. In 1824 Mechanics' Institutions were established. In 1825 the *Enterprise*, under Captain Johnson, made the first steam voyage to India. The Atlantic had already been crossed by the steamer *Savannah* in 1819. The London University, chartered in 1826, was opened in 1828.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS.

	A.D		A.D
FRANCE		**PRUSSIA**	
LOUIS XVIII., began to reign	1814	**FREDERIC WILLIAM III.**,..	1797
CHARLES X.,	1824	**TURKEY.**	
SPAIN		**MAHMUD II**, ...	1808
FERDINAND VII,	1814		
REVOLUTION,	1823	**FRANCIS I**, ..	1804
SWEDEN		**POPES.**	
CHAS. JOHN BERNADOTTE,	1818	**PIUS VII.**,	1800
RUSSIA.		**LEO XII.**,	1823
ALEXANDER,	1801	**PIUS VIII**, ...	1829
NICHOLAS,	1825		

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS.

Spain loses her American Empire,	1820–24	**Brazil severed from Portugal**,	1825
Rising of Ypsilanti in Moldavia,	1821	**Fall of Missolonghi**,	1826
Greek Congress at Epidaurus,	1822	**Destruction of the Janissaries (Turkey)**,	1826
French invasion of Spain,	1823	**Battle of Navarino**, ...	1827

LEADING AUTHORS UNDER GEORGE IV.

THOMAS MOORE, (1779–1852)—Irish lyric poet—author of *Irish Melodies*, *Lalla Rookh*, an Eastern Tale, &c.

SAMUEL ROGERS, (1763–1855)—a London banker—poet—wrote *Pleasures of Memory* (1822), and *Italy*

FELICIA HEMANS, (1793–1835)—lyric poetess—chief work, *Forest Sanctuary*, but better known by shorter pieces of tender beauty, such as *Graves of a Household*, *Voice of Spring*, &c

CHARLES LAMB, (1775–1835)—clerk in India House—essayist—chief work, *Essays of Elia*.

LEADING ARTIST

SIR THOMAS LAWRENCE, (1769–1830)—born in Bristol—called the English Titian—celebrated for his portraits—succeeded Reynolds as State-painter to George III.—elected President of the Royal Academy 1820

LEADING INVENTORS, ETC

SIR HUMPHRY DAVY, (1778–1829)—born at Penzance in Cornwall—son of a wood carver—apprenticed to a surgeon—the inventor of the Safety Lamp (1815)—made great discoveries in chemistry and electricity—wrote *Salmonia*, and *Consolations in Travel*—died at Geneva.

GEORGE STEPHENSON, (1781–1848)—born at Wylam, Northumberland—the great Railway Engineer—inventor of the Locomotive Engine—died at Tapton, aged 67 His son Robert is distinguished as the engineer of the Tubular Bridge over the Menai Strait.

CHAPTER VII.

WILLIAM IV

Born 1765 A.D.—Began to reign 1830 A.D.—Died 1837 A.D.

French Revolution (1830 A.D.)	The Reform Bill (1832 A.D.)	Change of Ministry
First English Railway (1830 A.D.)	Its Changes	Municipal Act (1835 A.D.)
The Cholera	Abolition of Slavery (1833 A.D.)	Foreign Policy
	The Poor Laws	Death of the King
		His Character

THE Duke of Clarence, brother of the late King, now ascended the throne as William IV. In his young days he had seen service in the navy, and he has therefore been called the "**Sailor King.**" His wife was Adelaide of Saxe-Meiningen.

Soon after his accession a second **Revolution** occurred in France, when, after three days' fighting (July 27–29) in the streets of Paris, Charles X. was driven from the throne, and Louis Philippe, Duke of Orleans, was appointed King of the French. The people of Belgium, influenced by this example, threw off the yoke of Holland, and made Prince Leopold their King. There was at the same time much discontent in Britain, and a loud cry arose for a reform of the House of Commons. The Duke of Wellington, who was opposed to any change of the kind, then resigned in favour of a Whig Ministry, of which the chief members were Earl Grey and Lord John Russell.

1830 A.D.

Sept. 15, 1830 A.D. During this year the first of those **Railways**, which now lie like a net-work of iron over the whole face of the Empire, was opened between Liverpool and Manchester.

A new epidemic disease, called *Cholera*, which was noticed first in India, travelling westward, broke out at Sunderland in the October of 1831. Its ravages continued for more than a year, sweeping off nearly 60,000 persons. Since then it has visited Britain thrice, but, by active sanitary improvements in sewerage and ventilation, its effects have been much lessened.

The great political event of the reign was the passing of the **Reform Bill.** On the 1st of March 1831 Lord John Russell proposed the measure in the House of Commons. It was fiercely opposed in both Houses, especially in the Lords, but the mass

of the people were resolved on the change. For fifteen months the struggle went on Great riots took place in Bristol, Nottingham, and Derby. The Lords threw out the Bill (Oct 7, 1831) on its second reading, but Lord John Russell brought in a new Bill (Dec. 12). This passed the Commons, but the opposition in the Lords grew so strong that Earl Grey resigned, and the Duke of Wellington was called on to form a Ministry. But this he failed to do; the current of public feeling turned fiercely against him, and the conqueror at Waterloo was obliged to fortify his house against a London mob. Earl Grey was then restored, and the Bill soon became law. The Reform Bills of Scotland and Ireland received the royal assent on the 17th of July, and on the 7th of August. June 7, 1832 A.D.

Three great changes were thus made 1. The right of sending members to Parliament was taken away from many places—called pocket or rotten boroughs—in which there were very few voters, and sometimes none residing in the borough. Of this class the most notorious example was Old Sarum, in which there was not a single house. 2 Several towns, such as Birmingham, Leeds, Manchester, and Sheffield, which had sprung within the last century into first-class cities, now for the first time received the right of sending members to Parliament. 3 The franchise, or right of voting, was extended more widely among the middle classes The right of voting in towns was given to the owners, or to the tenants of houses worth £10 a year or upwards For county members all were entitled to vote who owned land worth £10 a year, or who paid a yearly rent of at least £50 for their holdings.

Ever since the year 1787 a movement to set free all slaves in the British Colonies had been at work in the House of Commons. **William Wilberforce**, member for the county of York, first brought forward the motion, and through a long life he clung with noble perseverance to the noble work Sharp, Clarkson, and Buxton were his fellow-workers. From time to time the debates were renewed amid great opposition from slave-holders, planters, and merchants. It was not until the question was forty-six years old that the Bill was finally passed. £20,000,000 were granted to slave-owners as compensation · and the slaves were not set free all at once, but were bound to serve their masters as apprentices for seven years longer. It was afterwards thought better, however, to shorten the time of apprenticeship by two years, and in 1838 eight hundred thousand slaves received their freedom. Wilber- 1833 A.D.

force lived only to see the triumph of his life's work. He died in 1833.

In 1834 many changes were made in the **Poor Laws.** The rate to support the poor had been lately as high as £7,000,000 a year; and a great part of the sum was squandered on the support of strong men and women, who were too idle to work. The new Bill placed the local boards under the superintendence of the Government, and ordered that no aid should be given to able-bodied paupers, unless they chose to go to the poor-houses, and work for their living there.

While this measure was passing through the Houses, Earl Grey resigned, having disputed with his colleagues about the Irish Coercion Bill. He was followed as Premier by Viscount Melbourne, with whom were associated Lord John Russell and Lord Palmerston Towards the close of the year these ministers were thrown out of office, and Sir Robert Peel was called in haste from Italy to form a new Government But in four months Melbourne returned to the head of affairs.

In 1835 was passed the **Municipal Act,** by which the Town Councils of England and Wales were reformed To the ratepayers and freemen was given the right of appointing the councillors, who elected the magistrates from among themselves. Similar changes were made in Scotland and Ireland.

During 1835 and 1836 the Spanish Government was allowed to enlist British soldiers for service against the Carlists. This, and the aid given to the revolted Belgians in 1832, when British ships blockaded the ports of Holland, are almost the only noteworthy points in the foreign policy of the reign

The King died on the 20th of June 1837, aged seventy-two. His two daughters had died in infancy, one of them on the day of her birth.

The warm heart, the open hand, the free and cordial manner of the Sailor King won the love of his people. He possessed neither brilliant genius nor excellent wisdom, but strong sound sense guided every act of his useful reign.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

CHARLES X, began to reign	1824	**FREDERIC WILLIAM III**,	1797
LOUIS PHILIPPE,	1830		
		TURKEY	
SPAIN		**MAHMUD II**,	1808
REVOLUTION,	1820		
ISABELLA II,	1833	AUSTRIA	
		FRANCIS	1804
		FERDINAND I,	1835
CHAS JOHN BERNADOTTE,	1818		
		POPPS	
		PIUS VIII,	1829
NICHOLAS,	1825	**GREGORY XVI**,	1831

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS.

Second French Revolution,	1830	Rebellion of Mehemet Ali (Turkey),	1832
Revolution in Belgium,	—	Attempt of Louis Napoleon at Strasbourg,	1836
Polish Revolution,	1830–32	Carlist War begins Spain),	1836
Battles of Growchow and Ostrolenka,	1831		
Otho made King of Greece,	1832		

LEADING AUTHORS UNDER WILLIAM IV

HENRY HALLAM, (1778–1859)—the most judicial of our historians—author of *Middle Ages* (1818), *Constitutional History of England* (1827) and *Literature of Europe* (1837–38)

SIR DAVID BREWSTER, (1781–1868)—Editor of the *Edinburgh Encyclopædia*, begun 1808, ended 1830—wrote *Letters on Natural Magic* and a *Life of Newton*—famous for his discoveries in Optics

CHAPTER VIII.

VICTORIA.

Born May 24, 1819 A D —Began to reign June 20, 1837 A.D.

Hanover Separated.
Canadian Rebellions (1837 A.D)
The Chartists
The Queen's Marriage (1840 A.D)
Afghan War (1839 A.D)
Syrian War (1840 A D)
First Chinese War (1839–42 A D)
Repeal Agitation
The Disruption (1843 A.D)
The Ameers of Sinde
Sikh Wars (1845–49 A.D)
Corn Laws Repealed (1846 A.D)
Railway Panic (1847 A.D)
Irish Riots
The Great Exhibition (1851 A D)
Kaffir War (1852–53 A D)
Burmese War (1852 A D)
Russian War (1853-6 A D)
Battle of Inkermann (1854 A D)
Sebastopol taken (1855 A D)
China and Persia.
Indian Mutiny (1857 A D).
Money Crisis
The India Bill (1858 A D).
Trent and Alabama
Cotton Famine (1862–3 A.D)
Fenianism
Atlantic Cable (1866 A D)
Second Reform Bill (1867 A D)
Abyssinian War (1868 A D.)
Irish Church Bill (1869 A D)

ALEXANDRINA VICTORIA, the daughter of Edward Duke of Kent, and the niece of the late King, became Queen at the age of eighteen. She was crowned at Westminster on the 28th of June 1838. Since the Salic Law permits no woman to wear the crown of **Hanover**, by the accession of Victoria that State was severed from the British dominions, and Ernest, Duke of Cumberland, and brother of William IV , became its King.

A rebellion, headed by Papineau and Mackenzie, disturbed the **Canadas** in December 1837. The former leader was defeated in a few days at St Denis and St Charles on the Richelieu; the latter attacked Toronto, but was repulsed by Colonel M'Nab. In the following year, at the same season, when the hard frost of the Canadian winter had set in, there was a second rising in Lower Canada; but it was soon suppressed by the energy of Sir John Colborne, who defeated the rebel leader at Napierville. To strengthen the Government of the colony, an Act of Parliament was passed in 1840, by which the two Canadas were made one province.

About this time the proceedings of a set of men, who called themselves **Chartists**, began to attract notice. They took their name from the People's Charter, a document in which they demanded six sweeping changes in the Constitution —1. Universal Suffrage—that every man should have a vote. 2. Vote by ballot. 3. Annual Parliaments. 4. That Members of Parliament should be paid. 5. That every man, whether owning property

or not, should be eligible for a seat in Parliament. 6. That the country should be divided into electoral districts.—A band of these discontented men, headed by John Frost, who had once been a magistrate, made an unsuccessful attack on Newport in Monmouthshire. For this reason Frost and two others were sentenced to death, but they were afterwards reprieved, and transported for life.

On the 10th of February 1840 the Queen was married to **Prince Albert** of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha. The Princess Royal—now Crown Princess of Prussia—was born on the 21st of November in the same year; and on the 9th of November 1841 was born Albert Edward, Prince of Wales, the heir-apparent to the British throne. Soon after the royal marriage it was decreed in Parliament that, if the Queen should die before the Prince of Wales came of age, Prince Albert should rule the Empire as Regent.

From 1839 to 1842 a war raged in **Afghanistan.** The suspicion that Russia might have evil designs upon our Indian Empire made it of the highest importance that a Prince friendly to Britain should sit on the throne of Afghanistan, for that state lies between India and Persia, and Persia has always been friendly to the Czars. Accordingly, early in 1839 a British army, under Sir John Keane, entered Afghanistan to replace Shah Shoojah on the throne, which had been usurped by Dost Mohammed. Within a few months the great cities of Candahar, Ghuznee, and Cabul were taken, and Shah Shoojah was enthroned. But the victors were hemmed in at Cabul by a host of wild Afghans under Akbar Khan, the son of Dost Mohammed. Sir William Macnaughtan and many officers, being invited to a conference, were basely murdered, and the remnant of the army, leaving Cabul to march through the snow to Jelalabad, a distance of ninety miles, were slaughtered on the road, only a few escaping out of many hundreds. Shah Shoojah soon fell by an assassin's hand. But General Pollock, having fought his way nobly through the Khyber Pass, joined Sir Robert Sale and General Nott, and then marched on Cabul, on which the British flag was planted once more amid the peals of martial music. The fortifications of the city were soon destroyed, and the British then withdrew from Afghanistan. In 1855 Dost Mohammed made a friendly alliance with Britain.

Sept. 15, 1842 A.D.

At the same time there was war in the **Levant.** Mehemet Ali, the Pacha of Egypt, and his son Ibrahim, had long been troublesome to the Turkish Sultan, and in 1839 the latter

defeated the Ottoman troops at Nezib on the Euphrates. The Sultan sought aid from Britain and other states; which was readily granted, because the war had more than once shut the Dardanelles and stopped the Black Sea trade. A British fleet, under Admiral Stopford and Commodore Napier, having previously destroyed Beirout on the Syrian coast, appeared
Nov. 3, before the ancient walls of Acre In three hours that
1840 stronghold, the key of all Syria, which had baffled even
A D. the mighty Napoleon, yielded to British cannon Napier then sailed to Alexandria, but the Pacha, after a short delay, agreed to withdraw his troops from Syria. By a treaty with Turkey, some time afterwards, the Pachalic of Egypt was granted as an inheritance to the family of Mehemet Ali.

A dispute arose with **China** about the trade in opium, a drug which the Chinese love to smoke and chew, although hundreds die from its poisonous effects The Emperor, alarmed at the growth of the practice, forbade the importation of opium, but British merchants, who made great profits by the trade, still smuggled it into the country. The mandarins in authority seized and destroyed many cargoes of the forbidden drug Captain Elliot the Commissioner, and other British subjects were imprisoned War was declared in 1840. British troops soon forced Chusan to surrender, and the Bogue Forts, at the mouth of the Canton River, were reduced, and in the north Sir Henry Pottinger, having captured Amoy, marched to the very
Aug. 29, walls of Nankin There a peace was concluded, by
1842 which the island of Hong Kong was given up to Britain;
A D. and, besides Canton, the four ports of Amoy, Foo-choo, Ningpo, and Shanghai were opened to foreign trade

In 1843 riots in opposition to toll-bars took place in Wales. The rioters called themselves "**Rebecca's daughters**," from Gen xxiv. 60, where Rebecca's kindred pray that her seed may possess *the gates* of their enemies; and, to support their assumed sex, they wore women's night-caps and bed-gowns

During the riots, which lasted until the close of the year, every turnpike in South Wales was destroyed.

At the same time the agitation in Ireland for a **Repeal of the Union** reached its crisis. The collection known as the Repeal Rent, which was made at the doors of the Catholic chapels in aid of O'Connell, amounted in 1843 to £48,000. Monster meetings were held at Tara, the site of the ancient Irish capital, and other places. Clontarf, the scene of Brian Boru's victory over the Danes, was chosen as a fitting place for one of these; but the

Lord-Lieutenant sent soldiers to occupy the ground. O'Connell and nine others were then brought to trial, and sentenced to imprisonment for two years, but they were soon released. O'Connell died at Genoa on the 15th of May 1847, aged seventy-two.

The **Disruption** in the Church of Scotland occurred in 1843. It was occasioned by certain decisions in the supreme civil tribunals, which overturned sentences that had been passed by the ecclesiastical courts of the Church of Scotland A large party in the Church, considering that her independence was by this means invaded, and her efficiency injured, separated from the State, and formed themselves into the Free Church. About the same time the Church of England was much disturbed by the movements of the Puseyite or Tractarian party, who thought that the forms of worship should be brought into strict conformity with the Liturgy and the rubrics. They derived their first name from their leader, Dr. Pusey of Oxford.

During the Afghan war **Sinde**, a district of 50,000 square miles with a sea-coast of 150 miles, lying round the mouths of the Indus, was occupied by British troops. The *Ameers* or rulers of Sinde objected to this, and an attack was made on the British Residency at Hydrabad. Major Outram, who had only 100 men, retreating skilfully after a gallant defence, joined the main army under Sir Charles Napier A few days later the British won the battle of Meeanee, and a second victory at Dubba completed the conquest of Sinde

North-east of Sinde, higher up the Indus, lies the great district of the Punjaub, watered by five large rivers, and thence deriving its name, from the Persian words which mean "five waters" The country was then held by the warlike **Sikhs**, who had seized it in the middle of the last century. One of their princes, Runjeet Singh, had been a firm friend to the British; but his death in 1839 caused a bloody strife for the throne, during which an unprovoked attack was made on a British force stationed at Moodkee. The Sikhs were repulsed with loss; but they were no mean foes,—they had fine horses, and their gunners were drilled by European officers of artillery The British army, under Sir Hugh Gough and Sir Henry Hardinge, then moved upon the Sikh camp at *Ferozeshuhur*, and took it after two days' hard fighting. The Sikhs fled across the Sutlej. The victories of *Aliwal* on the 26th of January 1846, and **Sobraon** a fortnight later, opened the path of the British soldiers to Lahore, the capital of the Punjaub, where a treaty was signed. But in 1849 the war broke out

Dec. 18, 1845 A.D.

again. The Sikhs, strongly posted at *Chillianwalla* on the Jhelum, were attacked by Lord Gough on the 13th of January, and a victory was won; but the loss of the British was so severe, that their leader was greatly blamed for risking the engagement. However, on the 21st of February, at *Goojerat* Gough utterly routed an immense host of Sikhs, and thus redeemed his fame. The Punjaub was shortly afterwards, by a proclamation of the Governor-General, annexed to our Indian Empire

The most important political event of Victoria's reign was the **Repeal of the Corn Laws.** In 1841 the Anti-Corn-Law League was formed in Lancashire in support of Free-trade principles Its leading spirit was Richard Cobden, a mill-owner of Manchester Sir Robert Peel, who became Prime Minister in 1841, was at first in favour of high duties on foreign corn, but in 1845 his opinions on the subject changed All who lived by agriculture—the land-owners, the farmers, and the labouring classes—wished to keep foreign grain out of the country, in the mistaken belief that it was their interest, by high duties, to keep up the price of corn grown at home This long depressed the commerce
June 26. of the country, but in the end the cause of Free-trade
1846 triumphed, and the duty on wheat from abroad was re-
A.D duced to 1s a quarter Two days afterwards Sir Robert Peel resigned, and Lord John Russell became Premier.

In 1845 a blight fell upon the **potato crop**, which caused sore famine and fever in Ireland Generous aid was sent to the starving peasants from Britain and America, but between death and emigration, the population was lessened by nearly two millions.

A **mania** for making railways now seized the nation. Hundreds of companies were started, and everybody bought and sold railway shares. But after the mania came its natural result—the panic, when the opening eyes of the people discovered that half the proposed lines would be utterly useless. Every newspaper was then full of dissolving companies, profitless shares, and bankrupt speculators The pressure of the crisis was felt most severely in October 1847 . However, this gloomy year saw the first practical use of the Electric Telegraph

In February 1848 Louis Philippe was driven from his throne, and a Republic established by the third **French Revolution.** The exiled monarch took refuge in England, where he died at Claremont in 1850. Towards the close of the year Louis Napoleon, son of the ex-King of Holland and nephew of the great Emperor, became President of the French Republic; and, in four years afterwards, Emperor of the French with the title of Napoleon III.

The year 1848 was stormy over all Europe. There were tumults at Vienna, Berlin, and Rome. There were Chartist riots in England, and a great meeting assembled on the 10th of April on Kennington Common, to escort Fargus O'Connor to the Parliament with a petition embodying their demands. But the streets were filled with 200,000 sturdy citizens, sworn in as special constables, and the astonished Chartists slunk quietly through the day's programme.

In Ireland the more violent members of the Repeal Society, headed by William Smith O'Brien, had formed themselves into the **Young Ireland Party**, and were bent on war. Rebellious newspapers, of which the cleverest and most violent was the *United Irishman*, edited by John Mitchell, excited the people to arms. Groups of workmen were to be seen every day at ball-practice on the sands or in the fields. But all ended in nothing. A feeble rising under O'Brien and others took place in Tipperary; but it was suppressed by a few policemen. The leaders were soon taken, four of them were condemned to death; but the sentence was afterwards changed to exile. They were afterwards released one by one, or allowed to escape.

A change in the Navigation Laws; a visit of her Majesty to Ireland, where she was heartily welcomed, and the death of Adelaide, the Queen-dowager, were the chief domestic events of 1849.

On the 29th of June 1850 Sir Robert Peel fell from his horse, and four days afterwards he died from the effects of the accident. He was in his sixty-third year. A striking event of the same year was a movement of Pope Pius IX, who sought, by creating Cardinal Wiseman Archbishop of Westminster, to re-establish in Britain the Catholic hierarchy abolished by Elizabeth. The attempt was vigorously and successfully opposed.

One of the last hours of Peel's useful life was spent in discussing the plans for the **Great Exhibition** of the Industry of all Nations. To Prince Albert is due the credit of starting the first idea of this great enterprise It was indeed a splendid success. A palace of iron and glass—the strongest and the frailest of building materials—designed by the genius of Sir Joseph Paxton, was raised in Hyde Park, inclosing many acres with its walls and over arching lofty trees with its crystal roof. There were gathered articles of various kind from almost every land; and for five summer months, day after day, wondering thousands thronged the courts of the vast building. Its grand results were two: It gave a great impulse to every branch of our manufactures and our arts; while, by drawing together

May 1 to Oct. 14, 1851 A.D.

men of every complexion, costume, and national character, who met under the same roof for the same peaceful end, it could not fail to cause a kindlier feeling among the nations of Earth. Similar Exhibitions took place at Dublin in 1853, at Paris in 1855, and again in London in 1862.

In February 1852 the Russell Ministry, being defeated, resigned. A war with the **Kaffirs**, our troublesome neighbours at the Cape, broke out in the same year; and it was not until 1853 that they were subdued The Exhibition year was further remarkable for the discovery of gold in Australia, by which great streams of emigrants were drawn from our shores to the "diggings"

A second **Burmese war** broke out in 1852 The governor of Rangoon having ill-treated the commanders of two British vessels, Commodore Lambert was sent by the Indian Government to demand compensation He was met with an insulting refusal. A second attempt to arrange the difficulty also failed, and a British army then entered Burmah. Martaban on the shore, Rangoon on the eastern branch of the Irrawaddy, and Pegu on the river of the same name were soon captured. A determined effort of the Burmese to recover Pegu was bravely met by Major Hill of the Madras Fusiliers. Notwithstanding these severe losses, the Court of Ava still refused to treat with the Indian Government; and the Province of Pegu was therefore annexed to the British dominions by proclamation

Early in 1852 Lord Derby and Mr Disraeli succeeded Lord John Russell in the direction of affairs; but before the close of the year they gave place to a Cabinet, of which the Earl of Aberdeen as Premier, Lord John Russell as Foreign Secretary, and Lord Palmerston as Home Secretary, were the leading members.

On the 14th of September in the same year the "**Iron Duke**," or the "Hero of a hundred fights," as he was proudly called by his grateful countrymen, died at Walmer Castle, aged eighty-three On the 18th of November his coffin was borne with warlike honours to St. Paul's, where lay the dust of Nelson.

Russian War—There had been no great European war since Waterloo; but, Russia having seized the Principalities of Moldavia and Wallachia, which are separated from the rest of the Turkish dominions by the Danube, the balance of power was disturbed. France and Britain formed an alliance in aid of the Sultan, and sent their fleets into the Black Sea. The Russian

ambassador soon left London, and war was formally declared on the 28th of March 1854

The first operation of the war was the bombardment of **Odessa.** Then followed the noble defence of Silistria by the Turks, who drove the Russian troops across the Danube Sir Charles Napier, commanding the Baltic fleet, destroyed the batteries of Bomarsund, and reconnoitred the great fortress of Cronstadt, which guards the approach to the Russian capital

But the **Crimea** was the chief theatre of war An army of 51,000 men, under Marshal St Arnaud and Lord Raglan, landed at Eupatoria on the 14th of September As they pressed southward along the shore, they found 50,000 Russians lining the steep slopes on the left bank of the Alma In three hours the passage of the river was forced, and the Russians fell back on their great stronghold The Allies then took up a position to the south of Sebastopol. Behind the British, some ten miles distant, was the port of Balaklava, where lay their ships and stores On the 17th of October the city was bombarded by land and sea But the Russians had made good use of their time, and the works, strong before, were now made almost impregnable. Sept. 20, 1854 A D

A Russian attack on the British lines at Balaklava was nobly repulsed The brilliant though useless charge of the Light Cavalry Brigade upon the Russian cannon will be long remembered Oct 25

Near the ruins of **Inkermann,** on the extreme right of the British position, a still more glorious victory was won. In the dusk of a November morning the sentinels saw the grey-coated Russians close upon them in overwhelming numbers, bent upon forcing the lines Hastily a few troops ran to the front, volley after volley awoke the camp, officers and men fought shoulder to shoulder; French aid arrived, and, before the short day had closed, the Russians were in full retreat, leaving on the field one-fourth of their number. Nov. 5.

During the **winter** the troops suffered greatly from want of food and shelter, although ships laden with abundant stores lay thick in Balaklava harbour. A motion, brought forward by Mr. Roebuck, taxing the Ministry with mismanagement of the war, was passed in the Commons by a majority of 157 votes. The Earl of Aberdeen then resigned, and Lord Palmerston became Premier. More active measures were at once taken. A railway soon ran from Balaklava to the camp; and then was seen the strange spectacle of a locomotive puffing to the field of war with

biscuit, beef and rum, or with a deadly load of shot and shell. There were other novel features in this Russian war, unknown to the heroes of Vitoria and Waterloo. An electric wire passed from the Crimea, under the Black Sea, to the shore near Varna, and thence to London, where every turn in the great struggle was known an hour or two after its occurrence The leading newspapers, too, had reporters in the camp Of these the most distinguished was Dr William Russell, the special correspondent of the *Times*, whose *Letters on the War* have made him famous.

On the 2nd of March 1855 the Czar Nicholas died, but the war still went on under his son Alexander An expedition to Kertch and the Sea of Azof, in May 1855, destroyed many Russian ships and towns Sardinia having joined the Anglo-French Alliance, her troops, in conjunction with the French, won a bril-

Aug. 16, 1855 A.D. liant victory on the banks of the *Tchernaya* Twice during the war the French and British leaders were changed. St Arnaud, dying after the victory of Alma, was followed by Canrobert, who in May 1855 gave place to the victorious Pelissier In the following month Lord Raglan died of cholera, General Simpson then took the command, but he was soon displaced by Sir William Codrington.

The Russian earthworks, to which their engineers had learned to trust rather than to granite walls, were forced at last The French, already masters of the Mamelon, took the **Mala-**

Sept. 8 **koff Tower** with a brilliant dash. At the same time a British forlorn-hope seized the Redan, but Russian guns, sweeping it from every side, forced them to retreat with heavy loss. During the next night Gortschakoff led the Russian garrison across the harbour to the northern part of the city; which, however, they held but a short time Before their flight they sank their ships. All the batteries and great dockyards were blown up by the Allies; and the grand fortress of Southern Russia is now a heap of ruins.

During the summer of 1855 Admiral Dundas, who had superseded Sir Charles Napier in the command of the Baltic fleet, inflicted a severe blow upon Russia by the bombardment of **Sveaborg** (Aug. 9–11, 1855).

The Russian war raged also in Circassia, where the distinguished Schamyl fought against the troops of the Czar. **Kars**, the central point of attack, was nobly defended by General **Williams**, until a want of reinforcements compelled him to surrender.

Crippled both in the Baltic and the Black Seas, Russia at last

sought for peace; and the final treaty was signed at Paris in March 1856.

Late in 1856 a war with **China** began. It arose from an outrage offered by the Chinese to a vessel sailing under the British flag. The most remarkable event of the war was the seizure of Canton by the French and British troops, and the capture of Yeh the Commissioner, who was sent a prisoner to Calcutta. The Treaty of *Tien-tsin*, which brought the war to a close, opened five new ports to our trade, and permitted British subjects to travel in the interior of China Despatches from the East afterwards announced that a treaty had been made, throwing all China open to the missionaries and merchants of Europe. About the same time British forces entered Persia—an old ally of Russia—while a British fleet sailed up the Persian Gulf Herat and Bushire were soon taken, and the Court of Teheran then sued for peace.

The **Indian Mutiny** broke out at Meerut near Delhi (May 10, 1857). Its immediate occasion was an attack made by the 3rd Bengal Cavalry upon the prison, where some of their comrades were confined for refusing to bite greased cartridges. They alleged that the use of cows' fat on these cartridges was intended to make them lose caste.

Delhi was seized by the mutineers, who withstood a siege of more than three months (June 4 to Sept 20) At **Cawnpore** the Mahratta chieftain, Nana Sahib, treacherously massacred a great number of Europeans, including many women and children. And at **Lucknow**, when the outbreak occurred on the 30th of May, Sir Henry Lawrence was shut, with all the European inhabitants, into the Residency, round which the natives crowded in ferocious swarms.

Colonel **Havelock**, having first driven the retainers of Nana Sahib from bloodstained Cawnpore, set out to relieve the British at Lucknow Through the tropical rains, the deadly fire of rebels, the terrors of cholera, the gallant band pressed on, and forced their way into the Residency (Sept 23) But Havelock was besieged there himself; and was with difficulty relieved (Nov 17) by Sir Colin Campbell. Delhi had, meanwhile, fallen into British power, chiefly owing to the skill and energy of Sir John Lawrence. It remained for Colin Campbell, afterwards for his services created Lord Clyde, to trample out the smouldering embers of the mutiny. The fall of Bareilly (May 7, 1858) may be regarded as its final event.

The close of 1857 was a gloomy time in the commercial world.

Mad speculations having plunged the traders of America into difficulties, the effect was severely felt in Europe. Many long-established houses of business failed Those that were working without capital, on accommodation bills, speedily fell; and in the crash more than one of our banks came down, ruined by those to whom they had advanced money with reckless imprudence It was the old story of 1720 and 1797, of 1825 and 1847, told over again—men, rich on paper, dreaming that they were rich in gold

The attempt of Orsini to assassinate the French Emperor caused Lord Palmerston to bring in a Bill to amend the Law of Conspiracy, for the plot had been formed in England. Being defeated on the second reading, the Premier resigned, and a new Ministry was formed under Lord Derby, with Mr Disraeli as Chancellor of the Exchequer (Feb 1858).

The affairs of India claimed immediate attention The Government brought in the **India Bill**, which became law on the 3rd of August It enacted that the control of affairs in India should henceforth be vested in a special Secretary of State and a Council of Eighteen, of whom one half were to be nominated by the Crown A proclamation, in front of Government House at Calcutta, announced that the days of the East India Company, as a governing power, had come to an end Arrangements were also made in 1858 for the admission of Jews into Parliament, the obligation to use certain words in the oath taken by new members being set aside in the case of those professing the Hebrew faith

The Derby Government brought in a Bill for Parliamentary Reform, but were defeated on the second reading Lord Palmerston then returned to office, with Mr Gladstone as his Chancellor of the Exchequer (June 1859) Britain observed a strict neutrality in the war between France and Austria, which occupied the summer of 1859 Her sympathies were, however, strongly enlisted in the cause represented by the Italian hero Garibaldi, who invaded Naples and Sicily in 1860

The enrolment of **Volunteers** began in 1859. This great army of civilians, who took for their motto the words, "*Defence, not Defiance*," owed its origin to some floating fears, with very slight foundation, that the Emperor of the French might be induced to aim at carrying out that invasion of Britain, which was a favourite scheme of his uncle. A remarkable increase of skill in shooting with the rifle, as testified annually at Wimbledon and elsewhere, has been an important result of the Volunteer movement.

The Third Chinese War occurred in 1860 When a British Envoy was entering the Peiho, in order to obtain the ratification of the Treaty of Tien tsin, a fire was opened upon his squadron The British in reprisal stormed the Taku forts, and, in conjunction with the French, advanced on Pekin Having taken the Summer Palace of the Emperor, they were preparing to bombard the city, when it was surrendered (Oct 1860) The cession of Kooloon, a district at the mouth of the Canton River, was one of the advantages gained by Britain in this war

Previous to this war Lord Elgin, making a personal visit to **Japan**, succeeded in negotiating a commercial treaty with that country, which had hitherto been jealously sealed against all foreign traders, except the Dutch

The **Census** of March 1871 showed the population of the British Isles to be, 31,817,108

In the terrible **Civil War**, which convulsed the United States for more than four years (1861–65), Britain endeavoured to observe a strict neutrality But there were two occurrences, which threatened to disturb the peaceful relations between Britain and America

One was the **Trent** affair A Federal vessel—the *San Jacinto* —commanded by Captain Wilkes, fired at a British steam packet called the *Trent*, while sailing from Havannah to St Thomas, and, having stopped her, arrested two Southern gentlemen, Mason and Slidell, who were proceeding to Europe as Envoys from the Confederate States This was deemed an affront to the British flag, but the dispute was settled by the American authorities releasing the Envoys and placing them on board of a British ship (1861)

The other difficulty concerned a vessel called the **Alabama**, which had been built on the Mersey in 1862, and which left Liverpool ostensibly as a ship of peace Off the Azores, however, another vessel joined her with stores and equipments, and she soon sailed away prepared for her real mission, as a Confederate cruiser seeking to injure the commerce of the Northern States. The American Government claimed compensation, and in 1872 a Court of Arbitration at Geneva decided that Britain should pay to the United States upwards of three millions sterling

The closing month of 1861 was saddened by the death of **Prince Albert**, at the early age of forty two He sank under typhoid fever In him Art and Science found a wise and willing patron. The Great Exhibition of 1851, and the Kensington

Museum of Science and Art owed their origin to the good Prince.

Cotton Famine.—Our supply of Cotton from the Southern States of America being cut off by the disastrous Civil War, the mills of Lancashire were stopped for want of material This told most severely upon the mill-workers during the winter of 1862-63 It was happily a mild season, but there were much suffering and wide-spread want The nation contributed more than £1,000,000 to a *Relief Fund*, which was distributed by committees in weekly sums, and the Poor-rates afforded some assistance to the sufferers. There were no bread-riots, no rick-burning Except at Staleybridge, where a passing disturbance took place, no violence blemished the noble patience with which the operatives of Lancashire endured this trying time. The commencement of certain works of public improvement, and the arrival of increased supplies of cotton from India and elsewhere, diminished the suffering of the people

In March 1863 the Prince of Wales was married at Windsor to **Alexandra**, the daughter of the present King of Denmark Upon her landing at Gravesend a brilliant and most cordial welcome greeted this fair-haired daughter of the House of Oldenburg The Queen was present at the ceremony; but only as a spectator.

March 10, 1863 A.D.

The year 1864 was unmarked by any incidents of importance A son—heir to the throne—was born to the Prince of Wales And a visit of the Italian patriot Garibaldi to our shores drew forth an outburst of enthusiasm.

The death of Lord Palmerston, whose genial tact had kept a Ministry together for six years, caused Earl Russell to assume the reins of Government (Oct 1865). Two evils began to trouble the country seriously during this year

A contagious and fatal disease, called the **Rinderpest** or Steppe-murrain, swept away the cattle of England and Scotland in hundreds. The Metropolitan Cattle Market seems to have been the cradle of the disease in England, and it was first noticed in a dairy at Islington. The contagion spread into Norfolk, Suffolk, Shropshire, and many other English counties, then crossed the Border into Scotland, and broke out in Wales By forbidding the movement of cattle under certain conditions, and slaughtering all infected beasts, the ravages of the plague were lessened; but it continued to trouble the land during the following year also. In many parts of England old grass land was given to the plough, since there were no oxen to graze on the pasture.

The treasonous plotting of the Fenians in Ireland now assumed alarming proportions. They took their name from *Fionn*, the reputed leader of a band of ancient Irish militia Organized in the United States, and drawing its chief strength from beyond the Atlantic, this association, possessed of a secret machinery of circles, pass-words, oaths, &c, aimed at the separation of Ireland from the British crown, and the formation of the island into an independent Republic. Money was raised, midnight drills were held, the artisans and peasantry of Ireland were inveigled into taking the oath, in spite of the wise warnings of the Roman Catholic clergy, and an insurrection was fast ripening, when Lord Wodehouse (Sept 15) suddenly seized some of the ring-leaders in the office of the *Irish People* in Dublin. Arrests were made at Cork and elsewhere, but the prin- **1865** cipal Fenian taken was James Stephens, a Head-Centre, A.D. who was subordinate only to O'Mahony, the chief of the American fraternity He was seized at Sandymount near Dublin, and lodged in Richmond Jail in that city, but he soon escaped by the connivance of a turnkey A Special Commission tried the other prisoners, who were sentenced to various terms of penal servitude Early in 1866 it was found necessary to suspend the *Habeas Corpus* Act in Ireland—a step which had the beneficial effect of ridding the island for a time of a swarm of disbanded American soldiers, whose trade was civil war, and who, indeed, were the chief fomenters of the Fenian plot. There was much talk during the summer of the "green flag" being unfurled, and arms and money continued to pour into Ireland from the States. However, a slight rising in March 1867, easily quelled by the Irish constabulary, was the only result of these movements.

Fenianism then began to show signs of existence in England. A plot to seize the arms in Chester Castle was frustrated. A prison-van in Manchester was attacked, and a police-sergeant was shot And a diabolical outrage was committed in Clerkenwell, a district of London, where a prison-wall was blown down with gunpowder, and numerous persons in the adjacent houses were scorched and injured. The attempt of O'Farrell, a Fenian, to assassinate the Duke of Edinburgh in 1868 at Sydney, was a part of the same system of cowardly outrage

In 1866 the great design of uniting Europe and America by means of a Submarine Telegraphic Cable was successfully completed A cable had been laid in 1858; but in less than a month it lost the power of transmitting the electric currents.

The attempt was renewed in 1865; but then the cable snapped, and all efforts to raise it failed But in the following year a new cable was safely laid by the *Great Eastern* between Valentia and Newfoundland; and, not content with this success, the victors set to work at fishing with grapnels for the cable lost during
1866 the previous year; and, after they had dragged it from
A D. the depths of ocean, they spliced an addition to it, by which a second link was formed between the Old World and the New. In the year 1869 a French Cable was successfully laid from Brest to St Pierre, south of Newfoundland.

The chief political event of 1867 was the passing of a **Reform Bill**, brought in by a Conservative Government, who, in the summer of the previous year, took office in room of the Russell Cabinet. This Act, which received the royal assent on the 15th of August 1867, conferred the borough franchise on
1867 every occupier of a dwelling-house rated for the relief
A.D. of the poor, and on every holder of an unfurnished lodging at the annual value of at least £10 In counties the property franchise was extended to copyholds of £5 yearly value, and the occupation franchise to lands or tenements rated at £12 a year. A Scottish and an Irish Reform Bill were passed in the following year

The failure of the Earl of Derby's health caused the elevation of Mr Disraeli to the position of Prime Minister. The other prominent members of the Conservative Government were Lord Stanley, who was Foreign Secretary, and Sir Hugh, afterwards Lord Cairns, who became Lord Chancellor

Abyssinian War.—An Abyssinian King, who had assumed the name of Theodore, and whose fortress was on the rock of Magdala, resented the visits paid by Consul Cameron to some neighbouring Egyptian provinces. He was further irritated at receiving no reply to a letter, which he had sent to Queen Victoria. In his rage he seized all the Europeans in the country, and refused to set them free. Britain resolved on war

An army of 11,770 soldiers, with about 14,000 non-combatants, landed at Annesley Bay under the command of Sir Robert Napier, an officer skilled in Indian warfare. Through a country consisting chiefly of naked rock, rising into terraced flat-topped mountains, some of which were 10,000 feet high, the expedition proceeded slowly towards Magdala, sometimes threading a stony pass in single file, sometimes halting until a road had been cut or blasted on the mountain shelf. Mountain-guns were carried in separate pieces on the backs of elephants. The Bashilo ravine

was the most formidable which the army had to pass The natives offered no resistance

Theodore, whose subjects were in rebellion all round him, took post on the hill of Fahla, with a big gun, on whose powers he placed implicit confidence; and as a part of the British army advanced up the *Arogee Pass*, he opened fire upon them. But his force was completely withered by an answering fire from the Snider rifles, rockets, and light cannon of our troops. Next morning two of the European prisoners came to Sir Robert with a flag of truce; but he would hear no proposals until *all* the captives were released The entire company were then sent into the English camp.

Magdala was then assailed by 5000 men, and, when the rocky path to the northern gate was climbed, and the stockade forced, it was found that King Theodore had shot himself with a pistol (April 13, 1868). Of the fortress of Magdala nothing was left but "blackened rock" Sir Robert Napier received a peerage, with the title of Lord Napier of Magdala

Rather than let go the seals of office, Mr. Disraeli decided in 1868 upon an appeal to the country, but the results of a general election in November were so unfavourable to his cause that he resigned A Liberal Government was then formed under the Premiership of Mr Gladstone

The parliamentary session of 1869 was occupied almost exclusively with the question of the disestablishment and disendowment of the **Irish Church.** After an awkward collision between the Houses of Lords and Commons, a Bill for these purposes was passed on 26th July On the 1st of January 1871 the Irish Church lost all the prestige of a State Establishment; and her prelates ceased to sit in the House of Lords The surplus of her revenues has been applied to the relief of "unavoidable calamity" in Ireland

An **Irish Land Act,** putting the relations of landlord and tenant on a more equable basis, was passed in 1870 The same year produced an **Elementary Education Act** for England and Wales In 1872 **Vote by Ballot** was introduced experimentally for eight years in parliamentary and municipal elections, and a system of **National Education** was established in Scotland.

In the beginning of 1874 Mr. Gladstone suddenly resolved on a dissolution of Parliament. The general election resulted in a Conservative majority of nearly 50. Mr. Gladstone resigned before the new Parliament met, and a Conservative Government was formed, with Mr. Disraeli at its head.

CONTEMPORARY SOVEREIGNS

	A.D
FRANCE.	
LOUIS PHILIPPE, began to reign	1830
REPUBLIC,	1848
NAPOLEON III.,	1852
REPUBLIC,	1870
SPAIN	
ISABELLA II.,	1833
AMADEO I.,	1870
REPUBLIC,	1873
SWEDEN	
CHAS. JOHN BERNADOTTE,	1818
OSCAR I.,	1844
CHARLES XV.,	1859
OSCAR II.,	1872
RUSSIA.	
NICHOLAS,	1825
ALEXANDER II.,	1855
FREDERIC WILLIAM III.,	1797
FREDERIC WILLIAM IV.,	1840
WILLIAM I.,	1861
WILLIAM I. (of Prussia),	1871
TURKEY.	
MAHMUD II.,	1808
ABDUL MEDJID,	1839
ABDUL-AZIZ I.,	1861
AUSTRIA	
FERDINAND I.,	1835
FRANCIS JOSEPH I.,	1848
POPES	
GREGORY XVI.,	1831
PIUS IX.,	1846

CONTEMPORARY FOREIGN EVENTS

	A.D
Attempt of Louis Napoleon at Boulogne,	1840
Sonderbund War (Switzerland),	1847
Second French Revolution,	1848
Battle of Temeswar (Hungary),	1849
Louis Napoleon's Coup d'etat, Dec.	1851
Elected Emperor of the French,	1852
Campaign of Solferino (Italy)	1859
Garibaldi in Sicily and Naples,	1860
Kingdom of Italy formed,	1861
American Civil War,	1861–65
Denmark loses the Three Duchies,	1864
President Lincoln assassinated,	1865
War between Austria and Prussia—Battle of Sadowa,	1866
Maximilian shot (Mexico),	1867
Franco-Prussian War,	1870
French Republic proclaimed,	1870
Fall of Paris,	1871
New German Empire founded,	1871

LEADING AUTHORS UNDER VICTORIA

LORD MACAULAY, (1800–1859)—the finest historian of the day,—chief work, *History of England* (1849) giving the reign of James II and part of William III, with a sketch of earlier history—distinguished also as the author of *The Lays of Ancient Rome* (1842)

SIR ARCHIBALD ALISON, (1792–1867)—Sheriff of Lanarkshire—a Scottish lawyer—author of a *History of Europe* (from 1789 to 1852)

LORD LYTTON, (Sir Edward Bulwer)—(1805–1872)—wrote novels, such as *Rienzi*, *Last of the Barons*, *Caxtons*, &c, poems, as *Arthur* and *Milton*, plays, *Richelieu*, *Lady of Lyons*

THOMAS CHALMERS, (1780–1847)—Scottish clergyman and remarkable orator—author of *Natural Theology*, *Astronomical Discourses*, *Commentary on Romans*, &c.

THOMAS CARLYLE, (born 1795)—native of Dumfries-shire—historian and essayist—author of *Sartor Resartus* (1833), *French Revolution* (1837), and *Frederic the Great* (1858)—lives at Chelsea.

E. BARRETT BROWNING, (1809–1861)—finest poetess of her time—resided much at Florence—author of *Casa Guidi Windows, Aurora Leigh, Duchess May,* &c

ALFRED TENNYSON, (born 1810)—present Laureate—author of *In Memoriam* (1850), *Idylls of the King* (1859), &c

WILLIAM M THACKERAY, (1811–1863)—novelist and lecturer—author of *Vanity Fair* (1846), *Esmond* (1852), *The Newcomes* (1855)—edited the *Cornhill*

CHARLES DICKENS, (181 -1870)—novelist—admirable actor of his own works—author of *Pickwick Papers* (1837), *Old Curiosity Shop, David Copperfield,* &c.

CHARLOTTE BRONTE, (1816–1855)—known as Currer Bell—author of *Jane Eyre* (1847), a novel of remarkable power and originality—wrote also *Shirley,* and *Villette*

HUGH MILLER, (1802–1856)—journalist and geologist—author of the *Old Red Sandstone* (1841), *Footprints of the Creator* (1850), and *Testimony of the Rocks* (1857)

GEORGE ELIOT—most eminent living English authoress—wrote *Adam Bede,* and *Romola,* novels, and *The Spanish Gipsy,* a dramatic poem—real name Miss Evans.

LEADING ARTISTS

SIR DAVID WILKIE, (1785–1841)—born in Fifeshire—famed for his paintings of Scottish peasant life—chief works, his *Blind Fiddler, Village Festival,* and *John Knox Preaching before Queen Mary*

SIR FRANCIS CHANTREY, (1782–1848)—native of Derbyshire—a distinguished sculptor—finest work, *Monument of Two Sisters in Lichfield Cathedral*

JOSEPH M. W TURNER, (1775–1851)—one of the best landscape painters of the English school—painted also several historical pictures—died under an assumed name in a humble lodging in London.

LEADING INVENTORS AND DISCOVERERS.

SIR ISAMBARD BRUNEL, (1769–1849)—a distinguished engineer—greatest work, the Thames Tunnel, begun 1825, finished 1843

SIR JOSEPH PAXTON, (1804–1865)—once gardener to the Duke of Devonshire—designer of the Crystal Palace of 1851

CHARLES WHEATSTONE—born at Gloucester, 1802—musical instrument maker, and Professor in King's College, London.

W. FOTHERGILL COOKE—a retired Indian officer, who resided for a time at Heidelberg These two gentlemen may be regarded as the joint-inventors of the Electric Telegraph (1837)

LORD ROSSE, (1800-67)—constructer, at Birr in Ireland, of the largest Telescope yet made—tube 8 feet, and speculum 6 feet in diameter—completed in 1845

ROBERT MACLURE, (born 1807)—captain R N —the discoverer of the North West Passage in the *Investigator* (1850)—entering by Behring Strait, he established the fact that a passage exists by Banks Strait and Melville Sound into Barrow Strait.

DAVID LIVINGSTONE, (1817–1873)—a factory-boy at Blantyre—medical missionary to Africa—discovered *Lake Ngami* (1849), *Victoria Falls* on the Zambesi, and *Lake Nyassa* (1859)

JOHN HANNING SPEKE, (1827–1864)—an Indian officer—noted as an African explorer—starting from Zanzibar, he discovered the *Victoria Nyanza* in 1858—killed in England by the accidental discharge of his gun.

SIR SAMUEL BAKER, (born 1821)—native of Worcestershire—ascending the White Nile from Khartoum, discovered the *Albert Nyanza* in 1864

CHAPTER IX.

PROGRESS OF THE NINETEENTH CENTURY

Steam	Ironclads and Rifles	Zambesi and Nile
Penny Post	Iron Bridges	Australia
Electric Telegraph.	North-West Passage	General Progress.

STEAM.—The application of steam to the purposes of locomotion has wrought a marvellous change upon the life of the civilized world since the present century began. In 1811 an innkeeper of Helensburgh launched upon the Clyde the **Comet**, a vessel of 25 tons burden, propelled by steam Four years later, George Stephenson, a native of Wylam in Northumberland, achieved the construction of a locomotive engine capable of drawing waggons on a railway In 1830 the same mechanical genius, aided by his son Robert, placed the **Rocket** upon the rails of the new line between Liverpool and Manchester, and thenceforward the Railway System grew and expanded over the world. The great ocean triumphs, achieved by steam-boats, were the voyage of the *Savannah* from New York to London (1819), and that of the *Enterprise* to India (1825) The *Great Britain*, an iron steamer with wire rigging and a screw-propeller, and the *Great Eastern* (680 feet long), built at Millwall between 1854 and 1857, are two of the most remarkable steam-boats of the age

Communication.—The efforts of Rowland Hill, the son of a Birmingham schoolmaster, resulted in 1840 in the establishment of a general **Penny Postage**, which had the effect of immensely increasing correspondence But this was comparatively a slight matter, when viewed beside the achievement of Wheatstone and Cooke, who, in 1837, united in the construction of the **Electric Telegraph.** Their first successful trial took place on wires laid between Euston Square and Camden Town A necessary sequel was the invention of the **Submarine Cable**, of which the first idea occurred in 1842 to an American electrician named Morse. Jacob Brett reduced this idea to a practical form in 1851, by laying a wire wrapped in gutta-percha from Dover to Calais. This was followed in 1858 by the gigantic enterprise of placing a cable across the Atlantic between Valentia on the Irish coast and Trinity Bay in Newfoundland This cable conveyed messages for three weeks, but then ceased to carry the currents: there was a leak in the rope.

The eight years, intervening between this failure and the grand success of 1866, were marked by the placing of lines in the Red and Mediterranean Seas and the Persian Gulf In 1865 the Atlantic Cable snapped during the process of laying it; but in the following year (1866) skill and science triumphed not only in the successful laying of a new and stronger **Ocean Cable**, but in the recovery by grappling of the lost rope from the depths of the mid-ocean.

Iron.—In 1821 an iron ship, put together in a London dock, steamed down the Channel to Havre And the application of iron armour to vessels of war became an object of rivalry between France and Britain These **Ironclads**, as they have been called, came into practical use during the recent Civil War in America English constructers arm their vessels with solid plates of rolled iron, strongly backed by planks of teak strengthened with iron bars, and defended within by an iron skin Iron armour has been recently applied also to forts, but the contest between cannon and iron-plating is not yet over A shot-proof **turret**, or cupola, revolving on a pivot, is generally placed on the iron-clad or iron fort The gun within, and its port-hole, can both be turned in any direction Steel cannon, not cast but built ring by ring, are now made, capable of throwing enormous conical steel shells with such force as to penetrate iron plates six inches thick In small guns or fire-arms remarkable changes and improvements have been made. The old flint musket, throwing its round leaden bullet, received a percussion or detonating lock, which proved a great advantage; but it has undergone further and more momentous changes, by which it has become a **Breech-loading Rifle**, capable of sending a conical bullet with remarkable precision and force These advances, and the introduction of the Railway, the Electric Wire, and even the Balloon into the field of war, have made the modern battle-field a scene, whose conditions but slightly resemble those of even Waterloo and Austerlitz.

But we must thankfully remember that the modern applications of iron have not been confined to the science of destruction. In addition to the railroads, locomotives, and steamboats already noticed, vast bridges of iron, such as the **Britannia Tubular Bridge** across the Menai Strait (1850), and the Victoria Bridge across the St Lawrence at Montreal, both the work of Robert Stephenson, have been constructed of this metal. It has been applied also to building purposes, of which the Crystal Palace, erected for the Great Exhibition of 1851 from Paxton's design, has been the most notable example.

Geographical Discovery.—The Polar Seas and the interior portions of Africa and Australia have been the chief regions of exploration during the present reign.

The secret of the **North-West Passage** from Europe to the Pacific Ocean has been solved by two independent explorers. The earlier was the hapless Sir John Franklin who left England in 1845 with the *Erebus* and the *Terror*, but was frozen up with his ships, and perished with all his associates The relics of the expedition were found at the mouth of the Great Fish River in 1857 Captain Robert Maclure, in the *Investigator*, sailed, after much delay and peril of life among the ice, from Behring's Straits into the Atlantic (1851)

In **Africa** the basin of the Zambesi has been explored by David Livingstone, a medical missionary, who has dispelled the delusion that the portion of Africa north of Cape Colony is an arid tract of barren sand. During his first journey (1849) he discovered Lake Ngami. His second (1852-56) resulted in the discovery on the Zambesi of the Victoria Falls, a cataract larger than Niagara He then explored Lake Nyassa (1859), and everywhere found a fertile land, inhabited by tribes of some advancement, but blighted by the evil influences of the slave-trade, connived at by the Portuguese The **Nile** has also received its share of attention from explorers, of whom two have been most distinguished Captain Speke, an Indian officer, penetrated the continent from Zanzibar, and discovered (1858) a vast lake, which he named *Victoria Nyanza* As Speke and his intrepid companion Grant were descending the Nile after this triumphant result of their toil, they met Mr (now Sir Samuel) Baker at Gondekoro. Accompanied by his wife, Baker pressed up the stream, and was rewarded by the discovery (1864) of another lake of colossal size, the *Albert Nyanza*

The most successful explorer of **Australia** was Captain Sturt, who traced the course of the tributaries of the Murray (1829), and in 1847 penetrated the sandy interior of the island A tragic interest hangs over the expedition of Burke and Wills in 1860–61. After having reached almost to the shore of the Gulf of Carpentaria, they retraced their steps, but reached Cooper's Creek too much exhausted to proceed. There they died of starvation.

General Notes.—The *Thames Tunnel* is a remarkable work of engineering—a passage of arched brickwork under the river—begun in 1825, and opened for traffic in 1843. Sir Mark Brunel was the engineer; his son constructed the two monster ships already named—the *Great Britain* and the *Great Eastern*. The

giant reflecting *Telescope*, constructed at Birr in Ireland by the Earl of Rosse (1844), has added greatly to our astronomical knowledge Among new planets recently discovered are Astrea, (1845), Neptune (1846), and Victoria (1850)

The general use of *Gas* in dwelling-houses—the advance of *Photography* (first applied to taking portraits in 1839)—the adoption in domestic life of the *Sewing-Machine*, invented by Elias Howe of Massachusetts—may be noted as steps of progress. In *Sanitary* affairs the removal of cemeteries to the outskirts of cities —the improved ventilation and sewerage of houses—the spread of vaccination, now compulsory by law—have done much to abate the virulence of diseases such as cholera and small-pox, and to improve the tone of public health. There is more providence among the working classes, and this has been encouraged by the establishment of *Savings' Banks*, and the increased facilities afforded by *Insurance Companies*. *Emigration* to the colonies clears the land of its surplus hands; while the *Poor-houses*, under Government control, minister to the wants of those unable to support themselves. The *Repeal of the Paper Duty* (1861) gave an important impulse to the cause of popular education The cheap newspaper—usually a penny, but in many cases sold at a *halfpenny*—is a marvel of the present day, which would have astonished a previous generation quite as much as a telegram or an express train would have done.

Two of the greatest engineering triumphs of modern times are due mainly to French enterprise—the **Suez Canal** and the **Mont Cenis Tunnel**. The Suez Canal, by which large ships may pass from the Mediterranean to the Red Sea, and thence to the Indian Ocean, thus avoiding the long voyage by the Cape, was opened for traffic in 1869 In the following year the boring of the Alps at Mont Cenis, so as to connect France and Italy by rail, was successfully completed. The great undertaking had been begun in 1857 by the Italian Government, and on Christmas Day 1870 the French engineers who had entered on the north side, and the Italian engineers who had entered on the south side, met and shook hands in the very middle of the mountain. The tunnel was opened for traffic in 1871.

CHAPTER X.

THE BRITISH CONSTITUTION.

Parliament	Chiltern Hundreds.	Cabinet.
Three Estates.	Privilege.	Revenue.
The Lords	Progress of a Bill.	Trial by Jury
The Commons.	Privy Council.	Courts of Law

THE *Witenagemot* of the Saxons and the *Curia Regis* of the Early Norman Kings grew into the English **Parliament**, chiefly by the separation of the minor from the greater nobles, and the reinforcement of the former by representatives from the boroughs. This change, from which originated the House of Commons, began to be apparent in the reign of John. At the Revolution of 1688 the organization of the British Parliament was distinctly defined.

The Three Estates of the Realm, or constituent parts of the Parliament, are the **Sovereign**, the **Lords**, and the **Commons**. Thus the Constitution is not pure monarchy, pure aristocracy, or pure democracy, but a compound of all three; and in this chiefly lies its strength.

The office of **Sovereign** is hereditary, a woman being permitted to reign, for we have not, as they have in France, a Salic Law. The checks upon the power of our Sovereign lie in the laws of the land, and the advice of Ministers, who are responsible to Parliament. The chief branches of the royal prerogative are: The Sovereign alone—can make war or peace; can pardon a convicted criminal, can summon, prorogue, or dissolve the Parliament; can coin money; can confer nobility. The assent of the Sovereign is necessary to the passing of a Bill. He or she must be a Protestant of the Church of England; but must maintain Presbyterianism in Scotland.

The business of the two **Houses** is to make laws, vote supplies, keep the Ministry in check, and advise the Crown.

The **Lords** are of two kinds, Lords Spiritual and Lords Temporal: classified as follows:—

Spiritual.		Temporal.	
English Archbishops ..		English Peers . .	410
English Bishops	24	Scottish Peers . . .	16
		Irish Peers	28
			454

The Temporal Peers are of six ranks—Royal Princes, Dukes, Marquises, Earls, Viscounts, and Barons Any number of new peers may be created by the Sovereign The Scottish Representative Peers are elected by their own body for every new Parliament, the Irish hold their seats for life Upwards of 40 Scottish peers, and upwards of 70 Irish peers sit in the House of Lords as peers of England or of Great Britain The Lord Chancellor sitting on the *woolsack*, acts as Speaker or Chairman of the Lords The Upper House forms the highest Court of Justice, to decide appeals from the Courts of Chancery, Queen's Bench, or Session A Peer may vote by proxy; and any Bill, except a Money Bill, may originate in the Upper House.

The House of **Commons** possesses the sole right of levying taxes, and of voting money for the public service Commanding all the sources of supply, they can thus effectually control the Sovereign In the reign of Edward I the Commons contained 275 members there were 300 under Henry VI In 1801 there were 658, including 27 for Wales, 45 for Scotland, and 100 for Ireland The Reform Bill of 1832 retained this number, but redistributed the seats thus —

England and Wales,	500	Members.
Scotland,	53	,,
Ireland,	105	,,
Total,	658	

The Reform Bills of 1867–8 have arranged the numbers thus —

England and Wales,	493	Members
Scotland,	60	,,
Ireland,	105	,,
Total,	658	

The Parliament is **dissolved** (1) by the will of the Sovereign: (2) after seven years of existence The necessity of voting supplies to carry on the Government secures its meeting annually When a new Parliament must be summoned, the Lord Chancellor, acting under orders from the Crown, directs the Clerk of the Crown to issue *Writs* These are despatched to the Sheriffs of counties, who fix a day for the nomination of candidates. The election, in case of opposition, is decided by ballot.

According to the theory of the Constitution no member of Parliament can resign his seat But a law of Queen Anne provides that a member, who takes office under the Crown, vacates his seat. It has accordingly come to be the custom for members,

wishing to resign, to apply to the Chancellor of the Exchequer for the Stewardship of the **Chiltern Hundreds**, whose beech-woods *now* need no custodian This office, accepted one day, is resigned the next and so the member is free.

When a new Parliament meets, the first thing the Commons do is to elect a Speaker The members of both Houses take an oath against conspiracy, treason, &c., according to the provisions of the Act of Settlement.

Members of Parliament have many important **privileges**, one of which is freedom from arrest or imprisonment upon civil matters. But some of their old privileges—such as the non-publication of their debates and the non-admission of strangers—have been waived in order to suit the spirit of modern times.

Three Lords form a quorum—that is, a number sufficient for the transaction of business It takes *forty* members of the Commons to form a working assembly The Lords say *Content* or *Non-Content* in voting *Ay* and *No* are the decisive words of the Commons. The Speaker of the Commons does not vote except in cases of equality, when he has a casting vote: the Lord Chancellor can both join in the debates and give his vote In the Lords, when a case of equal voting occurs, the Non-Contents gain the victory.

The introduction of Bills by the Commons originated in the reign of Henry VI. The Crown can originate no Act but one of grace or pardon Most public Bills originate with the Commons, because they alone deal with matters relating to the public purse

The process by which a Bill becomes an **Act of Parliament** is as follows After notice of motion is duly given and seconded, leave is given to bring in the Bill It is then read for the first time, but no voting takes place, since this reading merely makes the members acquainted with the details of the measure. A day is then fixed for the second reading, before the arrival of which the Bill is printed and circulated. The first debate and voting take place after the second reading. The members vote by going into different lobbies; and they are counted by *tellers*, who hand the division lists to the Speaker. The House then forms a *Committee*—either select or of the whole House—to discuss and amend the details of the measure. After a third reading and voting the Bill is sent up to the Lords

In the Upper House it undergoes a similar procedure. But if amended or altered there, it is sent back to the Commons, who either agree to its provisions or demand a conference with the

Lords. An endorsement in Norman-French—a relic of the olden days when all statutes were written in that language—marks the successful passage of the measure through either of the Houses

The **royal assent** is then required before the Bill becomes an Act. This is given either personally or by letters-patent The Sovereign, though constitutionally possessed of a *veto* on every measure passed by the Houses, never exercises the prerogative now The last instance of refusal occurred, when Queen Anne in 1707 declined to sanction a Scotch Militia Bill.

The maxim that "the King can do no wrong" implies that he acts by the advice of Ministers, who are responsible to Parliament The **Privy Council**, whose members are dignified with the title of Right Honourable, have been from very early times the advisers of the Sovereign But this assembly being too numerous and scattered for the regular transaction of public affairs, the Government is conducted by a committee of the Privy Council, known as the **Cabinet.**

When the Ministry is overthrown by a defeat on any important Bill which they have brought in, or by a vote of want of confidence, the Sovereign sends for the principal statesman of opposite politics, and intrusts him with the task of forming a new Government. For the various posts, mentioned below, he selects his leading political supporters.

The Cabinet consists necessarily of —

1. **The First Lord of the Treasury; otherwise called the Premier, or Prime Minister.**
2. **The Lord Chancellor.**
3. **The Chancellor of the Exchequer**
4. **The Home Secretary.**
5. **The Foreign Secretary.**
6. **The Colonial Secretary.**
7. **The Indian Secretary.**
8. **The Secretary at War.**
9. **The President of the Privy Council.**

The following Ministers usually belong to the Cabinet —

10. **The First Lord of the Admiralty.**
11. **The President of the Board of Trade.**
12. **The Postmaster-General.**
13. **The President of the Poor Law Board.**
14. **The Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster.**

A statesman, for whom no place can be found but whose advice and influence are important, often joins the Cabinet as

Lord Privy Seal. and the Chief Secretary for Ireland sometimes has a seat there

When the House of Commons resolves itself into a Committee of Ways and Means, the Chancellor of the Exchequer presents his **Budget,** containing the financial arrangements he proposes for the coming year (ending April 12th), and the estimates of the Revenue he expects to derive from the various sources of the national income

The chief items of Revenue and Expenditure for the year 1873 are subjoined—

Revenue		Expenditure	
Customs,	£21,032,332	Public Debt,	£26,804,853
Excise,	25,904,450	Civil List	406,910
Stamps,	9,998,033	Diplomatic Service,	628,420
Land and Assessed Taxes,	2,339,033	Law and Justice,	4,497,686
Property and Income Tax.	7,403,737	Army,	14,466,700
Post Office	5,212,145	Navy,	9,543,000
Telegraphs	978,066	Education Science, and Art,	2,223,216
Crown Lands	458,903	Civil Service	2,848,509
Miscellaneous	3,796,770	Public Works, &c	1,077,669
		Other Items	8,605,933
Total,	£77,123,469	Total,	£71,102,896

The administration of British law is founded on three great principles—the Jury, the Habeas Corpus Act, and the independence of the Judges In England and Ireland a Grand Jury sit to judge whether a case is fit to go to trial, then a second Jury of twelve decide upon the case, and must be unanimous in their verdict of "Guilty" or "Not Guilty" In Scotland there is no Grand Jury—a Jury of fifteen try the case, and return a verdict of "Guilty," "Not Guilty," or "Not Proven," by a majority of votes.

There are various Courts, in which the Statute-law, the Common-law, and the law of Equity are administered Statute-law is that embodied in Acts of Parliament Common-law is the law of old custom, and depends on the decision of former cases. The law of Equity applies to those cases in which the Sovereign interferes, through the Lord Chancellor, to prevent injustice arising from the Common-law. The principal English and Irish Courts are those of Chancery, Queen's Bench, Common Pleas, and Exchequer. In Scotland the Court of Session and the High Court of Justiciary are the chief tribunals In the country justice is administered at Assizes, held generally twice a year by those Judges who go on circuit.

LEADING DATES OF THE BRUNSWICK PERIOD

GENERAL EVENTS

	A.D.	
The South Sea Bubble,	1720	George I
Walpole resigns,	1742	George II
New Style of reckoning time,	1752	—
Arrest of John Wilkes,	1763	George III
Trial of Warren Hastings begins,	1788	—
First English Railway opened,	1830	William IV.
Slavery abolished in British Colonies,	1833	—
The O Connell State Trials,	1844	Victoria.
The Railway Panic,	1847	—
The Great Exhibition in Hyde Park,	1851	—
Death of Wellington,	1852	—
Death of Prince Albert,	1861	—
Marriage of the Prince of Wales,	1863	—
Death of Viscount Palmerston,	1865	—
The Atlantic Cable successfully laid,	1866	—
Dominion of Canada formed,	1867	—

CONSTITUTIONAL CHANGES

Riot Act,	1715	George I
Septennial Act,	1716	—
The American Stamp Act,	1765	George III
Union of Great Britain and Ireland,	1801	—
Test and Corporation Acts repealed,	1828	George IV
Catholic Emancipation Bill,	1829	—
The Reform Bill passed,	1832	William IV.
The Corn Laws repealed,	1846	Victoria.
The India Bill,	1858	—
The Second Reform Act,	1867	—
The Irish Church Act,	1869	—
The Irish Land Act,	1870	—
The English Education Act,	1870	—
The Ballot Act,	1872	—
The Scottish Education Act,	1872	—

DOMINION ACQUIRED OR LOST

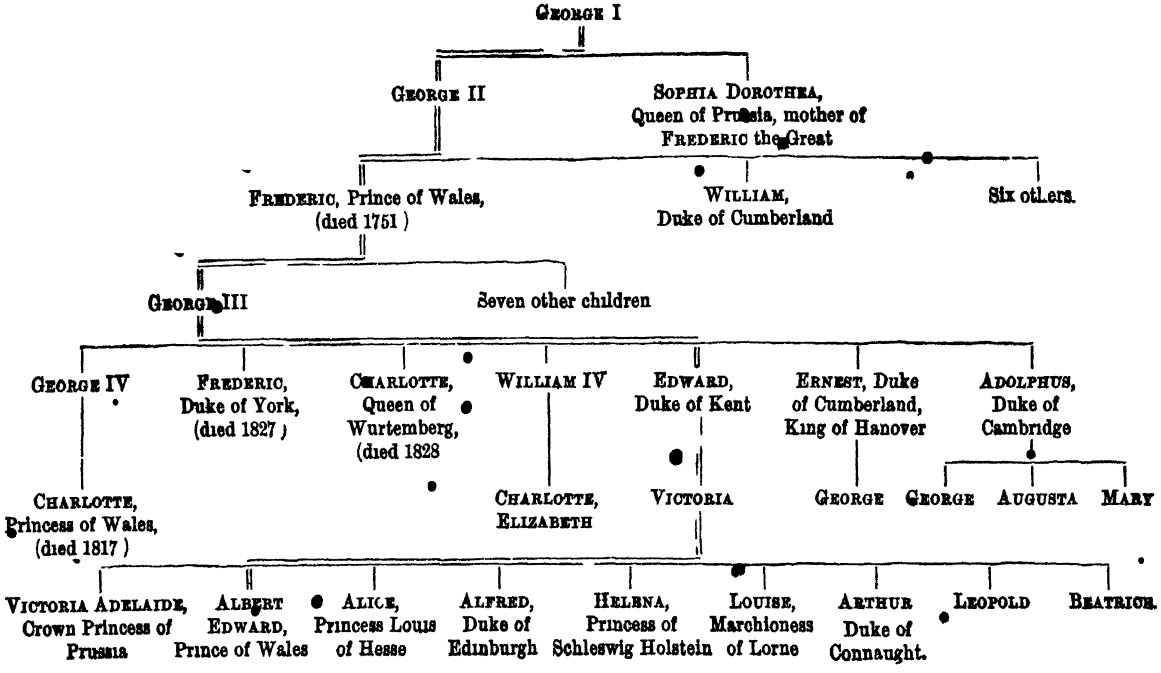
Conquest of Bengal,	1757	George II
— Canada,	1759	—
American Independence acknowledged,	1783	George III.
Hong-Kong acquired,	1842	Victoria.
Sinde annexed,	1843	—
The Punjaub taken,	1849	—
Oude annexed,	1856	—

WARS, BATTLES, TREATIES, ETC

	A D	
James the Pretender in Scotland,	1715	George I.
Battle of Dettingen,	1743	George II.
— Fontenoy,	1745	—
Charles Edward lands in Scotland,	1745....	—
Battle of Culloden,	1746	—
Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle,	1748	—
Seven Years' War begins,	1756	—
Battle of Plassey,	1757	—
First Peace of Paris,	1763	George III.
American War begins,	1775	—
Battle of Bunker's Hill,	—	—
— Brandywine River,	1777	—
Siege of Gibraltar,	1779–1782	—
Great French Revolution,	1789–1795	—
Battle of the Nile,	1798	—
Irish Rebellion,	—	—
Treaty of Amiens,	1802	—
Battle of Trafalgar,	1805	—
Peninsular War begins,	1808	—
War with United States,	1812–1814	—
Battle of Vitoria,	1813	—
— Waterloo,	1815	—
Second Peace of Paris,	—	—
Algiers bombarded,	1816	—
Battle of Navarino,	1827	George IV.
First Chinese War,	1839–1842	Victoria.
Battle of Aliwal,	1846	—
— Sobraon,	—	—
— Chillianwalla,	1849	—
— Goojerat,	—	—
Russian War begins,	1854.	—
Battle of Alma,	—	—
— Balaklava,	—	—
— Inkermann,	—	—
Sebastopol taken,	1855	—
Peace concluded at Paris,	1856	—
Second Chinese War,	1856–1857	—
The Indian Mutiny,	1857	—
Third Chinese War,	1860	—
Abyssinian War,	1868....	—
Ashantee War,	1873–1874....	—

GENEALOGICAL TREE

GENEALOGY OF THE HOUSE OF BRUNSWICK.



BRITISH COLONIES AND DEPENDENCIES.

EUROPEAN.

GIBRALTAR—A rocky promontory in the south of Spain. Its extremity is called Europa Point It is the ancient *Calpe* The Rock is 3 miles long and 1500 feet high The name is derived from *Gibel* a mountain, and *Tarik* a Saracen leader, who landed there in 712 to conquer Spain It was often taken and retaken by Moors and Spaniards, finally by the latter in 1462 The British, under Sir George Rooke, aided by the Prince of Hesse Darmstadt, took it from Spain July 24, 1704 It was ceded to Britain by the Treaty of Utrecht The French and Spaniards besieged it unsuccessfully from June 1779 till February 1783 Rodney brought relief during the siege, but Lord Howe saved the Rock for England It is very valuable as a naval and military station, being the "Key of the Mediterranean"

HELIGOLAND—An islet (one mile by one-third of a mile) 60 miles north-west from the mouth of the Elbe The name means "Holy Land," for the Saxons worshipped the goddess of Earth there The natives are Frisians It was held chiefly by the Dukes of Schleswig until 1714, then taken by Denmark, occupied by Britain, September 1807; formally ceded by treaty in 1814 In the days of Napoleon it served as a station to secure the entrance of British goods into the Continent—now prized for its light-house, its pilots, and its safe anchorage

MALTA—Anciently Melita—the scene of Paul's shipwreck. It is about 60 miles south of Sicily Capital, *La Valetta* Given by Charles V to the Knights of St John in 1530, often attacked by the Turks taken by Bonaparte in 1798, retaken by British and Maltese in 1800; then delivered up to Britain by the Maltese It is the central station of the Mediterranean fleet Gozo (5 miles to north-west) is a fertile island, but with few inhabitants

THE CHANNEL or NORMAN ISLES—A group in St Michael's Bay, off Normandy Jersey the largest Belonging to Britain since the Norman Conquest; often attacked by the French Valued for cheap living and healthy climate

MAN or MONA—An island in the Irish Sea. Taken by Alexander III of Scotland from the Norwegians in 1270, surrendered to Edward I in 1289, became the property of the Dukes of Athol in 1735 by inheritance, finally purchased by Britain in 1825. Ruled by officials who are aided by the House of Keys, consisting of 24 chief commoners

ASIATIC.

ADEN—A town in south-west of Arabia. Taken by the British in 1839. Steamers between Bombay and Suez stop there for coal, &c Fine harbours—safe anchorage

CEYLON—An oval island (270 miles by 145) lying south-east of Hindostan It has always been a Crown Colony It was occupied by Portuguese in the sixteenth

century, then by Dutch, from whom we took the coasts about 1796 It produces coffee, sugar, rice, pepper, teak, cinnamon, and gems, especially pearls

INDIA—Hindostan and the provinces of Assam and British Burmah beyond the Ganges, now form one dependency under the Viceroy or Governor General of India For administrative purposes the Indian Empire is divided into eleven provinces, each governed by a Governor a Lieutenant-Governor, or a Commissioner,—viz, the Punjab, the North West Province, Oude, Bengal Assam, British Burmah, the Central Province Bombay and Scinde, Madras, Mysore and Berar, two states directly under the government of India—Ajmeer and Coorg, and 153 feudatory states ruled by native chiefs, with the help of political agents representing the Viceroy The chief events in the history of British India are —Charter granted by Elizabeth in 1600—Settlement at Madras 1639—Bombay acquired by marriage of Charles II to Catherine of Portugal 1662—Fort William, Calcutta erected 1698—Surajah Dowlah of Bengal takes Calcutta in 1756—Clive recovers Calcutta, and wins battle of Plassey 1757—Warren Hastings made Governor General in 1773—His wars with Hyder Ali and Tippoo Saib of Mysore—Fall of Seringapatam and death of Tippoo in 1799—Overthrow of the Mahrattas at Assaye by Major General Wellesley, afterwards Duke of Wellington September 24, 1803—Afghan War (1839–1842)—Scinde annexed 1843—The Punjab conquered 1849—Oude annexed 1856—Indian Mutiny 1857—East India Company ceased to rule the Indian Empire September 1, 1858 India is rich in all tropical produce, and its possession gives Britain great weight among the nations

HONG-KONG—A small island (8 miles long) at the mouth of the Canton River It is 75 miles from Canton Ceded by the Chinese in 1842. Occupied chiefly by British traders in tea, silk and opium

EASTERN STRAIT SETTLEMENTS—(1) Penang (16 miles by 8)—an island in the north entrance of the Malacca Strait Takes its name from *betel nut* Capital *Georgetown* Rich in spices Purchased from Quedah in 1786 (2) Province Wellesley—on west side of Malaya—separated by a strait from Penang with which it was acquired Produces sugar cane (3) Malacca—on the strait of same name—transferred by Dutch to Britain in 1824. (4) Singapore—an island (25 miles by 15) off the south point of the Malay Peninsula A chief depôt of tropical produce, and mid way station between India and China Purchased in 1824 from the Sultan of Jahore

LABUAN—An island (10 miles by 5) off the north west of Borneo—ceded by the Sultan in 1846. Rich in coal, spices, drugs and dye woods

AUSTRALASIAN

AUSTRALIA—The largest island in the world Probably first discovered by the Dutch in 1606 Called New Holland by Dutch settlers Its coast was traced by the British navigators Cook, Furneaux, Bligh, Bass, and Flinders At Botany Bay, discovered by Cook in 1770, and so called from its beautiful flowers, a penal colony was formed by Britain in 1788 The settlement was called New South Wales; and its capital, *Sydney*, was built on Port Jackson In 1829 West Australia was colonised—capital, *Perth* in 1834 South Australia—capital, *Adelaide* in 1837 Victoria—capital, *Melbourne*, on Port Philip in 1838 North Australia—capital, *Victoria* in 1859 Queensland—capital, *Brisbane* In 1851 gold was discovered, and a great rush of emigration took place Chief productions are wool, gold, tallow, and train oil

TASMANIA—An island nearly the size of Ireland, south of Australia. Discovered by Tasman, a Dutch sailor, in 1642—called by him Van Diemen's Land in honour of the Governor of Batavia—now called Tasmania from the discoverer Found in 1798 to be an island by Bass, who gave his name to the Strait Regularly occupied by the British in 1803 as a penal colony, declared independent of New South Wales in 1825, and placed under a Lieutenant-Governor and Council. Capital, *Hobart Town* on the Derwent Productions similar to those of Australia

Norfolk Island, 900 miles to the east of Australia, is under the Government of Tasmania, and used to be only a penal colony

NEW ZEALAND—Two large islands, North Island and South Island, and a small one, Stewart Island, to the south-east of Australia. Capital, *Auckland*, in North Island. Colonized in the present century by the New Zealand Company: recognized as a British Colony in **1842**. Enjoys a very temperate climate, has coal, native flax, and some gold. The *Maories* are bold and warlike.

AFRICAN.

GAMBIA—At the mouth of the river of that name—chief station, *Bathurst*—originally founded in **1631**, as a place for trading in negro slaves. Chief productions, palm oil, gold dust and gum.

SIERRA LEONE—The basin of the Rokelle on western coast of Africa. Means 'Mountain of the Lion.' Colonized by freed negroes in 1787. So unhealthy that it is called 'The white man's grave.'

GOLD COAST—A portion of the Guinea Coast. Produces gold, ivory, and palm oil. Taken from the Dutch in **1661**. Troubled by the warfare of the Ashantees.

ST. HELENA—A rocky island (10 miles by 7) in the South Atlantic. Discovered by the Portuguese in 1502, occupied by the Dutch 1645–51), then taken by the British. Famous as the prison of Napoleon from 1815 to 1821, his grave till 1840. A station for ships sailing to India.

ASCENSION—A small volcanic island half way between Brazil and Guinea. Turtles taken there in abundance. Useful as an outlying station of our Empire. Occupied in **1815**.

THE CAPE—The southern extremity of Africa. Orange River the northern boundary. Discovered by Bartholomew Diaz in 1487, but he could not land—named Cape of Good Hope by John II. of Portugal, in hope of better fortune next voyage. Doubled by Vasco di Gama in 1497—colonized by the Dutch in 1652, and held by them for 150 years. Taken from the Dutch by the British in 1795, but restored at the Treaty of Amiens—recaptured from the Dutch, who were then allied with France, in January **1806**, by Sir David Baird and Sir Home Popham. Capital *Cape Town*, under Table Mountain.—**Port Natal** (so called from the coast being discovered on Christmas day) is outside the bounds of Cape Colony, and was established in 1824, and fully recognized in 1845. The Cape is the maritime key to India and the East. Produces wool, wheat, and wine, beautiful flowers, especially heaths.

MAURITIUS—An island 500 miles east of Madagascar. Capital, *Port Louis*. Discovered by the Portuguese in 1507, and by them called Cerné. Abandoned. Taken by the Dutch in 1598, and called *Mauritius* in honour of the Prince of Orange. Again abandoned. Colonized by the French in 1715; they called it *Isle of France*. Powerful under Labourdonnais (1734). Taken from France by British ships in **1810**. A naval station on the sea road to India; exports sugar, cotton, ebony, indigo.

Two groups of islets north of Madagascar—the **Seychelles** and the **Amirante Islands** were taken from France in **1794**. They have a fine climate, safe harbours, and produce spices. **Rodriguez** and the **Chagos** group also belong to Britain.

NORTH AMERICAN.

THE DOMINION OF CANADA—Constituted in 1867, by the union of Quebec (Lower Canada), Ontario (Upper Canada), Nova Scotia, and New Brunswick. It now includes all the North American provinces except Newfoundland.

1 **Quebec**—Watered by the St Lawrence. Discovered by Cabot in 1497. Jacques Cartier, a French admiral, sailed up the St Lawrence in 1535. Taken by the British in **1759**. Called Lower Canada from 1791 till 1867. Chief towns, *Quebec* and *Montreal*, on the St. Lawrence.

2 **Ontario**—Separated from Quebec by the river Ottawa. The first British settlers were refugees from the States at the time of the Revolutionary War, who preferred to remain under British institutions.

The province was called Upper Canada from 1791 till 1867 Chief town *Ottawa*, which is also capital of the Dominion

3 **Nova Scotia**—A peninsula south of the Gulf of St Lawrence Discovered by Cabot in 1497 The French (1605) called the colony *Acadie* Called Nova Scotia by Sir William Alexander in **1621.** Finally ceded to Britain by the Treaty of Utrecht in 1713 The first permanent British settlement was formed at *Halifax* the capital in 1749 Incorporated with Nova Scotia is the island of Cape Breton

4. **New Brunswick**—On the mainland south of the St Lawrence and connected with Nova Scotia by an isthmus First colonized by the British about **1760**; made a separate province in 1784 • Capital *Fredericton* on St John River

5 **Manitoba**—A rectangular area south of Lake Winnipeg Organized in 1870 Formerly called *Selkirk Settlement* and *Red River Settlement* • •

6 **The North-West Territory**—Formerly the Hudson Bay Company Territory The Company received Rupert Land from Charles II in **1670.** In 1785 a rival company was established called *The North Fur Company* In 1821 the two companies were united The whole was ceded to the Dominion of Canada in 1870, the Company receiving 1½ million dollars, retaining liberty to trade, and certain other privileges Chief station, *Fort York*

7 **British Columbia**—Between the Rocky Mountains and the Pacific Until 1858 it was a part of the Hudson Bay Territory Then the discovery of gold attracted crowds of miners, and the country was organized as a British province It was admitted into the Dominion in 1871 Capital *New Westminster* British Columbia includes Vancouver Island, the capital of which is *Victoria*

8 **Prince Edward Island**—In the Gulf of St Lawrence, north of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick Partially colonized by the French under the name of St John's Island Ceded to Britain in **1763.** Until 1770 it was attached to the government of Nova Scotia Then it became a separate province It joined the Dominion in 1873 Capital, *Charlottetown*

NEWFOUNDLAND—A large island at the entrance of the Gulf of St Lawrence Supposed to have been discovered by an Icelander in 1001 Visited by Cabot in 1497 Taken possession of by the English in **1583** The sovereignty of England was acknowledged in the Treaty of Utrecht in 1713 Attached to the government of Nova Scotia till 1728 Separate colonial legislature instituted in **1832.** The small islands of Miquelon St Pierre, and Langley, on the south still belong to France At St Pierre is the terminus of the French Atlantic Cable The coast of Labrador is attached to the government of Newfoundland Capital, *St Johns*

HONDURAS—On eastern side of Yucatan, with a coast line of 270 miles Discovered by Columbus in 1502 Ceded to Britain in **1763.** Governed by a Superintendent, who is subordinate to the Governor of Jamaica Valuable for its forests of logwood and mahogany Capital, *Belize*

SOUTH AMERICAN.

BRITISH GUIANA—In north east of South America Colonized by the Dutch in 1613 Seized by French in 1783 Taken from the Dutch in **1803.** Insurrection of slaves 1823 Settlements on the rivers Berbice, Demerara, and Essequibo, united 1831 Tropical produce chiefly sugar and coffee Capital, *Georgetown.*

FALKLAND ISLANDS—Rocky islands 300 miles east of Patagonia Discovered by Hawkins in 1594 Taken possession of for George III by Byron in **1765.** Claimed by Spain, but afterwards ceded to Britain Chief value, their fine harbours, especially in East Falkland

WEST INDIAN.

JAMAICA, or Xaymaca (Indian for plenty of wood and water)—Discovered by Columbus in 1494 Taken from Spain by General Venables and Admiral Penn in **1655.** Staple commodities, sugar and rum produces tropical plants, fine cabinet woods Chief towns, *Spanish Town* and *Kingston*

TRINIDAD (Spanish for Trinity)—Off mouth of Orinoco Discovered by Colum-

bus in 1498 Colonized by Spaniards in 1588. Attacked by Raleigh 1595 Taken by Britain in 1797. Contains mud volcanoes and a lake of pitch. Tropical produce

Our other West Indian Islands are — **Tobago**, taken from the French in 1793, **Grenada** and **St Vincent**, taken from the same in 1762, **Barbadoes**, colonized by Sir William Courteen in 1625, **St. Lucia**, taken from France in 1803, and **Dominica** in 1783; **Montserrat**, colonized with **Antigua** and **Barbuda** in 1632, and **St. Kitts** in 1623, and **Nevis** in 1628, **Anguilla**, colonized in 1650, and the **Virgin Islands** in 1666 The **Bahamas**—one of which, San Salvador, was the first American land seen by Columbus—were occupied by the British in 1629, and the **Bermudas** in 1611 These last lie out in the Atlantic They are healthy and picturesque, and produce fine arrow-root.

QUESTIONS.

NOTE TO TEACHERS.

THE following Questions will be found of great use, not only for class-examination, but also as the headings for easy Exercises in Composition. Every teacher is aware of the suggestive force upon intelligent children of well arranged questions They not only recall the information received, but prompt its expression in a variety of forms, which prove that the pupil has made it his own It is suggested, therefore, that—especially in schools where the teacher has more than one class to superintend—the questions be used as Notanda, from which to compose a short narrative of the events recorded in each chapter or section.

Before commencing, the teacher should draw attention to the points brought forward in each lesson, note the train of thought running through the narrative, warn against the frequent or improper use of conjunctions, insist, especially in the earlier stages of such Exercises, on clear expression in short sentences, excite interest in anything having a local reference, and then leave each pupil entirely to his own resources

As a really good Exercise must not only be correct in spelling, in grammar, and in the statement of facts, but should likewise manifest thought in variety of expression, or in the filling up of the outlines, it is obvious that all Exercises should be examined by the teacher himself This will be best done when the pupil is at his side, by pointing out and suggesting the appropriate correction of inaccuracies, wants of clearness or force of expression, and whatever in any degree renders the language of the Exercise less effective in conveying the intended meaning

It is scarcely necessary to say that the Exercises are meant chiefly for those who may not have formally entered on the study of English Composition With even little technical knowledge of English grammar, the boy who feels interested in a story will repeat or reproduce it with few or no important modifications Indeed any such changes will make the narrative from him more natural than the mere transcript or verbatim rehearsal of the original would be

As a first Exercise, the Interrogative form of the questions may be simply changed to the Indicative, with any other alterations that may be necessary to complete the affirmation. We take the second paragraph—"ANCIENT BRITONS; THEIR MANNERS AND THEIR RELIGION"—and give it something like the form we might expect it to assume in the hands of an average pupil of eleven or twelve years of age. The Exercise contains a personal observation —within the reach of most pupils—in illustration of the text. Such remarks, relating either to men or objects connected with their own locality, pupils should always be encouraged to make It evokes a more intelligent notice of objects often brought but cursorily before them, and increases their interest

in the subject in hand. Boys who live near places made historic will write not only with increased accuracy of detail, but even with some enthusiasm, of the great men and the great events of their district. As they advance, reflections on points of likeness or unlikeness to our own times may be introduced, and the kindly judicious criticism of these original remarks by the teacher will be amply repaid by the pupils' increased grasp of mind and power of expression.

SPECIMEN EXERCISE

Almost our only information regarding ancient Britain and its inhabitants is obtained from the Latin writers Chief among these are Julius Cæsar and Tacitus, both of whom visited the country About that time the country seems to have been either marsh or forest Some few patches of the land on the shore next to Gaul were rudely cultivated. The food of the natives of the interior was milk and flesh In the far north they often fed on leaves and the roots of plants Their clothing consisted of skins The limbs, painted or stained in blue patterns with woad, were left bare. They were accustomed to hardships They had some knowledge of war, and in general were a brave people They fought on foot, on horseback, and in chariots having scythes projecting from the axle In times of common danger the tribes united and chose a single leader From more frequent intercourse with other nations, those in the south were more civilized than the rest Their dress consisted of woollen cloth woven in colours Some were adorned with chains of gold, silver, or bronze They had also ornaments of gold and silver for the arms, neck, and head For money they had rings of different kinds of metals Their spear and arrow heads were of flint and bronze, often shaped with great care I have seen examples of these different kinds of articles in the British Museum in London At Stonehenge and Avebury in Wiltshire, there are some great stone circles which belong to this period. Beyond these there are scarcely any memorials of the inhabitants of ancient Britain.

The religion of the ancient Britons was called Druidism Their priests, who were called Druids, had their principal place of worship in the island of Mona, the modern Anglesey The name Druid seems to be derived from *drus*, the Greek word for the oak, which was their sacred tree Besides being priests, they were also the national poets, lawgivers, and teachers The people held them in great respect, and were completely under their control. To distinguish themselves from the rest of the community, the Druids wore long white robes and flowing beards They taught the worship of one God, but regarded with scarcely less respect the serpent, the sun, the moon, and the oak. Human victims enclosed in cages of wicker-work were offered on their altars. These victims were generally such as had been convicted of crime, but in the absence of these the innocent were sacrificed The Druids had their dwellings in the oak groves, and there also were the temples for the daily worship Their three principal feasts related to the harvest The first was after the seed was sown, the second, when the crop was ripening, and the third, when it was gathered in. On the sixth day of the moon nearest to 10th March, which was their New Year's Day, they observed a very solemn ceremony With a golden knife the Archdruid cut the mistletoe from the oak, while attendants caught it in their white robes as it fell. Some traces of these ancient customs still linger amongst us In the south of England in particular, May-day sports, the fires of Midsummer Eve, the rejoicing at the Harvest Homes, and the cutting of mistletoe on Christmas Eve, still may remind us of the Druidical worship of our forefathers

A second Exercise, or one for pupils a little more advanced, should narrate the same facts with equal correctness, and in a similar order, with such attendant circumstances as might fairly be presumed to be connected with them. In preparing such advanced Exercises, it is desirable that, wherever possible, the author's Junior History should be used for home reading The one book may be said to be the complement of the other The fuller details of the Senior will be relieved by the biographical and picturesque character of the Junior History. The perusal of both will not only lend interest to the subject, but will give more completeness to the instruction. This will sometimes make it necessary to divide, for such Exercises, a chapter into still shorter portions. In this there will be no disadvantage, as it will tend to counteract that

tendency to diffuseness and inconsecutiveness into which young composers are apt to fall, and will give room for more complete and finished work.

Some of the subjects will bear special treatment, and give scope to the fullest amount of previous reading and thinking on the part of the pupil. We may note with this view the biographies of Alfred, Dunstan, Henry I., Becket, Richard I., Robin Hood, Roger Bacon, Wolsey, Raleigh, Clive, Nelson, Stephenson, Franklin, &c., such critical periods in National history as the Conquest, the Reformation, the Commonwealth, the Revolution, American War of Independence, and such remarkable incidents in National life as the Armada, the Gunpowder Plot, the Voyage of the Mayflower, the Great Plague and the Great Fire of London, the South Sea Bubble, &c.

After very considerable experience and success in thus teaching History, we can confidently add that teachers will be astonished at the faculty and power developed by such Exercises in pupils even under twelve years of age.

I.

Introduction

1 Describe the situation of the British Isles —2 By what names was Great Britain known to the ancients?—3. What is the origin of the names Britain, Albion, Wales, Scotland?—4. By what name do the Welsh call themselves?—5. What was the ancient name of Ireland and what was its meaning?—6. What was the origin and meaning of the name Caledonia?—7. What is meant by the British Empire?—8. Who were the original inhabitants of the British Isles?—9. Of what races does their population now consist?—10. What Continental people is akin to the Celts of Britain?—11. In what five districts of the British Isles are people of Celtic race still to be found?—12. What maritime race is supposed first to have visited Britain?—13. What inducement had the Phœnicians to keep up the communication thus established?—14. Under what name does Herodotus mention the Scilly Islands?

II.

Introduction—*continued*

1. From what Latin writers do we obtain some information about ancient Britain?—2. Describe the physical features of the country at this early period —3. What was the food of the Britons?—4. Describe their clothing —5. What use did they make of *woad*?—6. What is said of their character?—7. Describe their war-carriages.—8. What does Cæsar say of their conduct in battle?—9. When danger menaced their country, how did the tribes act?—10. The people of the south were more civilised than the rest. In what respects, and why? Describe their ornaments and weapons —11. What remains of their architecture exist? What was its character?—12. Give some account of the Druids —13. What duties did they fulfil besides those of the priesthood?—14. Briefly describe their religious rites and state what you know of their doctrines —15. Give a full account of their three chief festivals —16. What traces of Druidical customs still linger in England?

ROMAN PERIOD

III.

Chapter I.

1 What Roman first invaded Britain?—2 What inducements did Britain present to him?—3 Whom did the Roman general leave to guard the Venetic Isles?—4. Draw a map of the coast of France adjacent to these isles —5 With what forces did Cæsar land in Britain?—6. What Roman officer led the landing?—7. How long did Cæsar remain in Britain on this first occasion?—8 Draw a map of the coast of Kent and mark the towns of Deal, Dover, and Sandwich Mark also the North Foreland South Foreland, and River Stour —9 With what forces did Cæsar undertake his second invasion? Who opposed him? How far did Cæsar proceed? State the result.

IV.

Chapter I—*continued.*

1. At what date did the Romans, for the third time, invade Britain?—2. Who was

Emperor at this time? Whom did he choose as his lieutenants in the British expedition?—3. What was their success?—4. Draw a map of the country brought under Roman rule by these generals. Mark the position of the first Roman colony in Britain What was its ancient name? its modern?—5. Who succeeded Plautius?—6. What tribe and chieftain took the lead in opposing him?—7. By whom was Caractacus betrayed?—8. What was the fate of this gallant chieftain?—9. Who headed the revolt of the Britons in Nero's reign? With what result?—10. By what Roman general, and in whose reign, was the conquest of Britain completed?—11. Who relates the wars of this general?—12. What was the policy of Agricola?—13. How far north did he advance? What great battle did he fight? Give its date and the probable site

—

V

CHAPTER I —*continued*

1. What measures were taken by Julius Agricola to secure the southern provinces of Britain from invasion?—2. Was Agricola the only general who protected South Britain by such means? Who followed his example? Give dates —3. Can you relate anything concerning Albinus, Severus and Constantine?—4 Describe the career of Carausius —5 Was the Roman conquest a benefit to Britain?—6. Who was the first Christian martyr in England? —7. The reign of Diocletian is referred to, on what account?—8. Under what Emperor did the Romans abandon the island? Why? At what date? How long had they been in Britain?—9 What traces of the Roman occupation still remain in our country?—10. What do you know of Scotland and Ireland during this period?—11. What were the Roman divisions of the island?

SAXON PERIOD.

VI.

CHAPTER I

1. Describe the condition of the land after the Romans had withdrawn —2. What is the commonly received story of the Saxon invasion?—3. What was the character of the Saxon race?—4. Can implicit reliance be placed on the story of Vortigern and the Saxon settlement?—5. Of what tribes were the invaders?—6. How was the country divided by them?—7. Draw a map of Britain, marking the seven kingdoms.—8. Who founded the kingdom of Kent? When?—9. What kingdoms were founded by Ella and Uffa, and at what dates?—10. Who founded the kingdoms of Wessex and Northumbria? When?—11. What kingdom was founded in the year 527 A.D, and by whom?—12. Which was the most important kingdom of the Heptarchy? Who founded it, and at what date?

VII.

CHAPTER I —*continued.*

1. Give an account of the state of England under the Heptarchy —2. What is meant by the term Bretwalda?—3 Give some account of King Arthur —4. What circumstance is said to have led to the introduction of Christianity into Saxon England?— 5. Relate what you know of Augustine's mission —6. Who was Ethelbert?— 7. Who was Edwin? Of what great city was he the founder?—8 What do you know of Columba?—9. Where is Iona? Where is Lindisfarne?—10 Mention some words introduced into our language by the Roman monks —11. To what three kingdoms were the seven reduced? —12. Who were the most famous Kings of Mercia?—13 What important events followed on Offa's death?—14. In what year were the Anglo Saxons first called English? —15. Who was the first King of all England?—16 Which kingdom of the Heptarchy absorbed the others?

VIII.

CHAPTER II.

1. What does the word Egbert mean?—2. Who first invaded Britain during the of Egbert?—3. Where did they first ? Give the date —4. Where did Egbert defeat them?—5. Draw a map of Devon and Cornwall, marking the rivers, and the two places above referred to —6. When did Egbert die? How long had he reigned? What was his character? Where was he crowned?—7. What do you know about the Danes?—8. Who succeeded Egbert? What do you know concerning him? Who was his second wife?—9. Draw a sketch map of the south-eastern

counties of England, the coast line stretching from the Naze to Portland Bill, and mark on it the towns at which Ethelwulf died and was buried, as also the city of Winchester —10. Relate concisely what you know of Ethelwald, Ethelbert, and Ethelred —11 Where are Aston, Merton, and Bury St Edmunds, and for what were they noted?

IX.

CHAPTER II —*continued*

1. What was the tax called Peter's pence, and when was it first levied?—2. Who became King on the death of Ethelred I? What was his age when appointed to the throne?—3. To whom was he married?—4 Give some account of his character —5. Illustrate your statements by facts from the life of Alfred —6 Relate Alfred's first operations against the Danes —7. Describe geographically the position of Athelney —8. Relate the circumstance, in connection with Alfred's life, which makes this place famous —9 What is meant by the term Danelagh? What district was so called?—10. When was Alfred again troubled by the Danes?—11. Where did Hastings land?—12. Where and how did Alfred defeat him?—13 How would you divide Alfred's reign, and what characterized each division?

CHAPTER II —*continued*

1. By what means did Alfred protect his kingdom from invasion?—2. What was his personal appearance?—3 Describe the condition of England at his accession.—4. By what measures did he encourage learning and education?—5. He is said to have founded the University of Oxford What have you to say concerning this tradition?—6. Mention some of King Alfred's translations from the Latin —7. What claims has he to the title of "Great"?—8. Did Alfred establish trial by jury?—9. What proofs can you offer that Alfred did *not* divide England into shires and hundreds?—10. What have you to say concerning Alfred's administration of the laws?—11. How did he divide his time?—12. Where did he die? Where was he buried? By what title did Alfred call himself in his will?—13. Make a list, with dates, of the Kings from Egbert to Alfred.

XI.

CHAPTER II —*continued*

1. Who succeeded Alfred?—2. What title was assumed by him?—3. With what title were the Kings of England, from Egbert to Alfred, content?—4 Relate the most important events of Edward's reign —5. Give an account of Athelstan's reign State its leading event, giving the date. —6. Which were the *Five Burghs*?—7. Where and how was Edmund assassinated?—8. Who was Edred? What was his character? Where did he die? What do you know of his reign?—9. Relate the events of Edwy's reign —10. Who was Archbishop of Canterbury during the reign of Edwy?—11. How did Edwy incur the hatred of Dunstan? What position did Dunstan then fill?

XII.

CHAPTER II.—*continued.*

1. Whom did King Edgar create Archbishop of Canterbury?—2. How did Edgar reduce the power of the Anglo Danish settlers?—3. What tribute was imposed by him on the Welsh?—4. Where is Chester? What circumstance is said to have occurred there during Edgar's reign?—5. Who were the sons of Edgar?—6. Relate the events of the following reign —7. Describe the tragedy at Calne, giving the date —8. What was the Dane-geld?—9. What was the character of Ethelred?—10. What iniquitous scheme was devised and carried out by this monarch, and with what result?—11. Where did Sweyn die? To whom did he leave his crown?—12 What events followed the death of Sweyn?—13. Where is Sandwich? For what noted in this reign?—14. To whom was Ethelred married?—15 How many of his sons survived him? What were their names?—16. What do you know of Edmund Ironside?—17. At what place was the division of the kingdom agreed to?

XIII.

CHAPTER III.

1. On receiving the crown of England what were Canute's first proceedings?—2. By what means did he endeavour to reconcile the Saxons to his usurpation?—3. Relate two stories illustrative of Canute's magnanimity - 4. Over what countries did he rule?—5. From what King is he

said to have exacted homage?—6. Give some account of his pilgrimage to Rome —7 Where is Shaftesbury? What happened there?—8. Where was Canute buried?—9 Who were his sons by his first wife? Who was his second wife?—10 How were his dominions divided?—11 How was the dispute between Harold and his half brother settled?

XIV.

CHAPTER III —*continued*

1. Where is Southampton and who landed there during the reign of Harold Harefoot?—2 What was the fate of Alfred the son of Ethelred and Emma?—3. Who was Godwin?—4 On the death of Alfred where did Emma take refuge?—5. Where did Harold die? Where was he buried?—6 What do you know of Hardicanute?—7. Why did Earl Godwin lose favour with the King?—8 What was his peace offering to Hardicanute?—9. Where did this King die? Where was he buried?—10 How did he treat the body of his half brother Harold?—11 Who was his mother? How were the people of England disposed towards him in the early part of his reign?

XV.

CHAPTER IV.

1. Who succeeded Hardicanute?—2 By whose influence did he obtain the crown?—3. Who had a prior claim to the throne? 4 How was Edward received by the English people?—5. What act was rendered necessary by the poverty of the throne?—6 How were his treasures further increased?—7. At what court had Edward spent more than half his lifetime? What was his age at the date of his accession?—8. What effect had his residence at a foreign court on the destinies of England?—9. Whom did Edward marry?—10. Who headed the revolt against the King? What circumstances led to it?—11. Where is Wherwell?—12. What was the success of Godwin's revolt?—13. From whom did Edward request aid to quell this rebellion?—14. What were the consequences of this visit?—15. Who succeeded Godwin? Against what race did he fight successfully?—16. At what age did Edward die? By what name is he known? What were the chief benefits he conferred upon his people? Where was he buried?—17. Who succeeded to the throne on Edward's death?—18. What prince had a better right to the crown?—19. What fear haunted Harold?—20. Where is Stamford Bridge?—21. Who were Hardrada and Tostig?—22. Describe the Battle of Stamford Bridge When was it fought?—23. What important battle was fought in the following month?—24. Give a description of the battle —25 Where are Pevensey Hastings Waltham and the hill Senlac?—26. Make a table of the Saxon and Danish reigns Which was the longest? and which the most important?

XVI

CHAPTER V

Scotland and Ireland during the Saxon Period

1 When does true Scottish history begin?—2 What do we know of the early population of Scotland?—3 What do such names as those of Galloway Galway and Arran prove?—4 When did Columba land in Scotland?—5 What were his followers called?—6 In whose reign and at what date were the Picts and Scots blended into one nation?—7 What was the border line of Scotland and England at this period?—8 Relate the facts connected with Duncan's murder by Macbeth—9 On what did Shakspere found his play of "Macbeth"?—10. Where was Malcolm Canmore during the reign of Macbeth?—11 When was Macbeth slain?—12 Draw a map of Scotland marking Perth Scone and Galloway, also the isles of Arran and Iona —13 What was the condition of Ireland during the Anglo-Saxon period?—14. Into what smaller kingdoms was the island divided?—15. Who was the first great lawgiver of Ireland?—16 What religious system, when driven from England, took refuge in Ireland?—17 Who first preached Christianity in Ireland?—18 Where was he born?—19. Give a brief account of his life —20 What was the condition of Ireland at this time as to learning?—21 Who delivered Ireland from the Danes?—22 Where was the last great battle fought?—23 Draw a map of Ireland, marking Galway Tara, Dublin, Clontarf, and the Isles of Arran —24. What was the fate of Brian Boru?—25 What benefits did he confer on Ireland?

XVII.

CHAPTER VI.

Social Condition of the Anglo Saxons

1 What was the title of the head of the Anglo Saxon nation? How was he appointed and what was his office? From what Anglo Saxon verb is the word Cyning derived?—2 How was the Cyning chosen? —3. How was the consort of the Cyning styled? Which of the Queens was allowed to sit on the throne beside her husband? What were the position and style of the Anglo Saxon Queen?—4. What class of nobles was highest in rank? What were their powers and privileges?—5. What was the title borne by the lower order of nobility? What qualification was necessary to this dignity?—6. What was the lowest class of freemen?—7 Whom may we rank with the Ceorls? In what were they engaged?—8 In what condition were more than two thirds of the Anglo Saxon nation?—9 What was the Norman name for a slave?—10 Describe the ceremony of degradation —11 What was the market value of a slave? What town was famous for its slave market?—12 What was the great council of the Anglo Saxons called?—13. At what seasons did they assemble?—14 What were their duties and powers?—15. Whose appointment lay in their hands?—16 What remark have you to make on the conclusion of bargains of sale and purchase among the Anglo Saxons?—17 What were the officers called in whom the execution of the laws was vested? What was the title of the chief officer in each county? Of what office in modern time was this the original.—18 What was the social condition of the Anglo-Saxons? What were the chief crimes? How were these crimes punished?—19 What was the price of a freeman's life called?—20. To whom was the "were gild" paid?—21. How were slaves punished?—22 How was theft punished by the later Anglo Saxon Kings? By Canute?—23. How could a man accused of crime clear himself?—24. Describe the Ordeals —25. When was masonry first used for the chief buildings? Describe the houses of the Anglo Saxons —26. Relate what you know of the daily life of the Anglo Saxons How did the nobles pass their time? Describe a Saxon feast What was the principal article of food? the favourite drink? What was the chief pastime after supper? Where did the guests sleep?—27. How did the ladies spend their days?—28 What materials were used by the Anglo Saxons for clothing? Describe their dress —29 What is known of the Anglo Saxon coinage? What were their gold coins? What were the silver and copper coins? What was the value of each?—30. What do you know of the religion and superstitions of the early Saxons? What were their names for the days of the week? How did the Anglo-Saxon priests spend their leisure time? What were the only seats of learning?—31 What does the English language owe to the Anglo Saxon, and what to the Danish? —32. Who wrote the *Creation*, *Alfred's Life*, *Eighty Homilies*? Who translated *Æsop Bede*, and the *Psalms*? What works did Gildas and Bede write? State what you know of Erigena —33 Give the dates of—Landing of Augustine Accession of Egbert Death of Alfred, Battle of Ethandune, Battle of Hastings

EARLY NORMAN KINGS.

XVIII.

CHAPTER I.

1 Trace the genealogy of William the Conqueror from Rollo —2 Who was the wife of the Conqueror?—3. What were his proceedings after the Battle of Hastings?—4. What measures had been taken by the Witan?—5 Where is Berkhampstead? What happened there?—6. Who was the chief minister of Edgar Atheling?—7. Where and when was William crowned? What disastrous event occurred at the coronation? 8 What were the first proceedings of William's reign?—9 What important fortress was built by William?—10 What city was the capital of England at this period?—11. When William returned to Normandy who were left as Regents in England?—12. What was their conduct towards the Saxon people?—13. What was the result?

XIX.

CHAPTER I.—*continued.*

1. What was the success of the rebellion which broke out during William's absence?—2. How was the West reduced to peace?—3. Relate the various revolts which took place in 1069 —4. What ter

rible revenge did the Conqueror take?—5. How did the King act towards his English subjects?—6 Who was appointed Archbishop of Canterbury in the room of Stigand?—7. Give some account of Hereward the Saxon —8 Who was the wife of Malcolm of Scotland?—9 What is known as the "Bridal of Norwich?"—10. Relate the events of William's latter days—11. Where are the towns of Rouen, Mantes, and Caen, and for what noted?—12 What was Domesday Book? What was the Curfew Bell?—13 Which are the Cinque Ports Draw a map, marking their sites —14. What islands were first annexed to England at the Conquest?—15. What judicial courts had their origin in this reign?—16 What was the revenue of the Conqueror?—17. What tax was revived during his reign?—18. How did his reign end?—19. What was his personal appearance?—20 Describe his character —21 What is stated of his bodily strength?—22. What oppressive laws were enacted by William I?—23. How did William form the New Forest, and for what purpose?—24. How many children of William the Conqueror are of importance in English history? Mention their names —25 How were the dominions of William divided after his death?—26 What great Pope was a contemporary of William the Conqueror?

XX.

Chapter II.

1. Why was the second Norman King of England surnamed Rufus?—2. By whose influence did William secure the crown?—3 Give an account of Odo's plot to set Robert on the English throne—4. Which of the two brothers had the support of the English nation? Why?—5. How did Rufus act with regard to Normandy?—6. What agreement was eventually made?—7. Relate the operations of the Scottish King against England—8. What is said to be the origin of the name Percy?—9. Where is Bamborough Castle?—10 Give an account of the revolt of Robert Mowbray —11. Who was the chief instrument of William's extortion?—12. How does he figure in the next reign?—13. What plan was devised by him for supplying the King with money?—14. Name one of the chief sufferers by this system —15. What agreement had been made by William concerning the Norman castles seized by him?—16. Where is Bayeux? Who was Bishop of Bayeux?—17. What was the character of Robert?—18 Of what fortresses in the territories of his brother did William make himself master?—19. How did he obtain possession of them?—20. How did Henry Beauclerc act on peace being made between his brothers Robert and William?—21. Where is Alnwick? Who was killed there?—22 Where is Rochester? Who had fortified Rochester Castle, and what use was made of it, in the early part of William's reign?—23. When Rochester Castle was taken, what agreement was made between Rufus and the Bishop of Bayeux?

XXI.

Chapter II —*continued.*

1. For what price did Robert offer to transfer the government of Normandy and Maine to his brother William?—2. For how many years was this arrangement made?—3 What was Robert's reason for making this offer?—4 How much is a merk?—5. What were the Crusades?—6. Who preached the First Crusade?—7. Where did Rufus die?—8. What is known of his death?—9. Where was he buried? How?—10. Who was suspected of the murder?—11. What was the character of William Rufus?—12. What was his personal appearance?—13. What were his chief public works?—14. In what year did he ascend the English throne?—15. What is the date of his death?—16. What is the date of Mowbray's rebellion?

XXII.

Chapter III.

1. Who succeeded William Rufus?—2. Where was he at the time of William's death?—3. Who was the rightful heir to the crown?—4. What measures were taken by Henry to secure the crown?—5. Who crowned Henry I?—6. Where was Robert at this time?—7. Whom did he marry? 8. What makes this marriage important?—9. What were the early acts of Henry?—10. Who was the wife of Robert?—11. What were the proceedings of Robert?—12. For what sum of money did he renounce his right to the English crown?—13. Henry never paid this pension. How was this?—14. When was the Battle

of Tenchebrai fought? Where is Tenchebrai?—15. What was the result of the battle?—16. How did Henry act towards his prisoner?—17. Where is Cardiff? Who died there?

XXIII.

CHAPTER III —*continued.*

1. After the imprisonment of Robert, by whom was the war carried on?—2. What was the result of the war?—3. When was the Battle of Brenville fought? Who was the victor? Where is Brenville?—4. In what dispute was Henry I involved with the Pope?—5. What prelate sided with the Pope?—6. What was the result?—7. What occurred in the year 1120?—8. What was the name of Prince William's sister, for whom he lost his life?—9. What was the effect of the news on Henry?—10. What was the fate of William, the son of Robert?—11. Where is Alost?—12. When did Queen Matilda die?—13. Where was the first stone bridge built in England? Who ordered its erection?—14. What was the name of Henry's daughter?—15. How did he endeavour to secure her accession to the English throne?—16. Who was the second wife of Beauclerc?—17. How did Henry acquire the surname of Beauclerc?—18. Who was Maud's second husband?—19. To whom had she been previously married?—20. By what was the death of Henry caused?—21. Where did he die?—22. What was his character?—23. What name, given by his people, suggests Henry's strict administration of justice?—24. What change was made in the coinage during his reign?—25. What manufacture was introduced into England during Henry's reign, and by whom?—26. Where did the Flemings settle?—27. What curious account is given of the teaching at Cambridge at this time?—28. What now took the place of the Saxon poems?—29. What were the subjects of the Norman Romances?

XXIV.

CHAPTER IV

1. What was the character of King Stephen?—2. How did he obtain the throne?—3. Trace his descent from the Conqueror —4. Where was Henry I buried?—5. What concessions were made by Stephen to the barons, clergy, and people?—6. What was the result of his concessions to the barons?—7. Who was the first to draw the sword in support of Maud?—8. Where and when was the Battle of the Standard fought? Describe it —9. How many times within one year did David of Scotland ravage the northern counties of England?—10. Where are Northallerton and Carlisle?—11. Where are Bamborough and Newcastle?—12. To whom was Northumberland ceded?—13. With what forces and on what coast did Maud effect a landing?—14. What castle was first occupied by her?—15. What did Stephen permit her to do?—16. When was the Battle of Lincoln fought, and with what result?—17. How was Stephen treated by Maud?—18. Who was the head of her party?—19. What circumstance led to Stephen's liberation?—20. During the short time in which Maud was acknowledged Queen, how did she act towards he subjects?—21. What was the result of this conduct?—22. State what you know of the siege of Oxford —23. Where is Wallingford?—24. How long after the escape of Maud from Oxford did she remain in England?—25. Where was her sway acknowledged?—26. Who were her chief supporters?—27. On their death, whither did she go?—28. What territories were held by Henry of Anjou?—29. Whom had he married?—30. Relate the events which occurred during the remainder of Stephen's reign —31. Where did Stephen die? Where was he buried? What was his personal appearance?—32. What was the name of his son? What territories did he inherit?—33. Give the opening and closing dates of the Second Crusade

XXV.

CHAPTER V.

Scotland during the Norman Period

1. Whom did Malcolm III of Scotland marry? In what year was this?—2. What influence had this marriage on the Scottish people?—3. What difference was produced in the royal household?—4. What counties now reckoned as English were at this time claimed by the Scottish Kings?—5. How far did William the Conqueror penetrate Scotland?—6. Where was Malcolm slain? At what date was this?—7. What events followed the death of Malcolm?—8. How long did Edgar, son of Malcolm Canmore, reign?—9. What spirit did he display?—10. Who then suc-

ceeded to the throne?—11. What was the chief event of his reign?—12. Who succeeded Alexander I and in what year?—13. What was the chief event of his reign?—14. To what acts of his reign did he owe the name of "The Sair Sanct?"—15. What do you know of his death? In what year did this occur?—16. What princess, afterwards Queen of England, was educated at the court of Malcolm Canmore?

XXVI.

CHAPTER VI.

Social Condition of the Normans

1. What was the origin of the Feudal System?—2. When was it introduced into England?—3. From what did it derive its name?—4. What was its leading feature?—5. Who was supposed to be the owner of all land?—6. How was the land allotted?—7. How was a Feudal Army raised?—8. What were the lowest classes of the Normans called?—9. What was closely interwoven with the Feudal System?—10. What was the rank of the King as a knight?—11. What was the training of a knight?—12. Describe the vigil, and ceremony of taking the vows of knighthood—13. What was the armour of a knight? What were his weapons?—14. What was a favourite weapon with the clergy?—15. Who were the Templars? When was the Order founded? What was their garb? What were the distinguishing marks of the Crusaders?—16. What was the chief sport of Chivalry?—17. Describe a tournament—18. What was meant by a combat at *outrance*?—19. What was the quarter staff?—20. What was the trial by combat?—21. What were the *Grand Assize* and the *Curia Regis*?—22. What is the distinctive feature of the Norman castles?—23. Describe a Norman castle Of what was it often the nucleus?—24. What was the manner of life among the Normans? How many meals had they each day, and at what hours were these taken?—25. What was the food of the Normans? In what did it differ from that of their predecessors the Saxons? How is this change illustrated in our language?—26. How were the banquets of this period served? Describe the sleeping rooms of the great—27. What was the dress of the Normans?—28. What characters illustrative of the social history of the time might have been seen amongst the Normans?—29. What was the dress of the Norman ladies?—30. State what you know of the Norman coinage What was the value of the zechin?—31. In what classes of words was the Norman language rich?—32. Into what language did pupils construe Latin in the schools?—33. What change passed on the Saxon tongue during the Norman Period?—34. By whom were surnames brought into general use? Give some examples—35. Who were the authors and what was the subject of the *Saxon Chronicle*?—36. Name the chief chroniclers under the Norman Kings—37. What work contains a Latin version of the Celtic legends concerning Arthur?—38. Give the dates of—Bridal of Norwich, Beginning of the Crusades, Drowning of Prince William Landing of Maud, Storming of Ely Battles of Tenchebrai and the Standard, and Siege of Oxford—39. Draw a genealogical tree connecting the Conqueror with the Plantagenets

PLANTAGENETS PROPER.

XXVII.

CHAPTER I.

1. Who were the heads of the Plantagenet line? What was the origin of this name?—2. Where was Henry II crowned? In what year?—3 What were the first measures of his reign?—4. What remarkable man occupies a prominent place in the history of Henry's reign?—5. Relate the traditional account of his parentage—6. What was the first step of his preferment?—7 Relate the steps by which he rose to the archbishopric of Canterbury—8 What change took place in his manner of life from the time of his appointment to the see of Canterbury?—9. Give a concise account of the struggle between Becket and the King—10. What were the "Constitutions of Clarendon," and how did they come to exist?—11. What circumstance led to Becket's death?—12. By whom, and in what year, was Becket murdered?—13. What country was annexed to the English crown during this reign?—14. Into how many provinces was it divided?—15. Draw a map of Ireland, marking the border lines of the *modern* provinces.—16. To what dignity was the province of Meath specially at-

tached, and who then claimed this dignity?—17. In whose hands were the ports of Ireland?—18. What was the state of the people?—19. What circumstances led to English interference in the affairs of Ireland?—20. Who was the principal English invader?—21. In what year did Henry II receive the homage of the Irish chieftains?—22. What princes alone refused submission?—23. Whom did Henry appoint to the lordship of the islands?—24. What was the conduct of Prince John? What was the consequence?—25. What occurred four years after Becket's death In what year was this?—26. What news was received by Henry immediately after his penance?—27. For what, besides military skill, was Glanville celebrated?—28. On what terms was William released? Why is this circumstance important?—29. What domestic troubles disturbed the later years of Henry's reign?—30. Where did he die? What led to his death?—31. Where was he buried?—32. What were the names of his sons? Which of them survived him?—33. Whom did his daughter Maud marry? How is the Royal Family of England at the present time descended from this daughter of Henry?—34. What was the character of Henry? Whom did he resemble?—35. When was glass first used for the windows of private houses?—36. What have you to remark concerning commerce and the administration of justice during this reign? What city now became the capital, and why?—37. How did the Crusades affect commerce?—38. Who was the English Pope? Give the dates of his Papacy.—39. Give the opening and closing dates of the reign of Philip Augustus.

XXVII.

CHAPTER II.

1. Where was Richard I crowned?—2. To what end were Richard's earliest measures directed?—3. How did he raise money?—4. What disastrous circumstances attended the coronation of Richard?—5. Enumerate the cities and towns in which the Jews were massacred—6. Where did the chief massacre take place?—7. Where did Richard muster his forces for the Third Crusade? Who was his ally? What was the number of the united armies?—8. By what route did the monarchs proceed towards Palestine?—9. What events occurred during the residence of Richard in Sicily and Cyprus?—10. Who was the leader of the Saracens in Palestine?—11. What city was undergoing a siege by the Christian forces?—12. In what other battle did Richard defeat Saladin?—13. When did Richard take leave of the shores of Palestine?—14. What misfortunes befel Richard on his homeward journey?—15. In what castle was Richard first confined? By whom?—16. Who subsequently obtained possession of his person?—17. What is the legendary account of the discovery of his place of confinement?—18. How was the secret of his prison really disclosed?—19. What ransom was paid by the English people for the release of Richard?—20. In what year did he reach the English shores? How many months had he spent in England since his accession to the throne?—21. What was the state of his kingdom on his return?—22. What events occupied the remainder of Richard's reign?—23. Relate the events which led to Richard's death?—24. What was the fate of the youth who caused his death?—25. Where did Richard die, and where was he buried? Where was his heart buried?—26. What were the personal appearance and character of this prince?—27. What outlaw, and what demagogue, lived in the reign of Richard?—28. What were the social effects of the Crusades?

XXIX.

CHAPTER III.

1. To whom did Richard I bequeath his crown?—2. By what council was the choice confirmed?—3. Who had a better right to the crown, and why?—4. Where is Bretagne?—5. What became of Arthur and Eleanor? Where was the Castle of Mirebeau? Where is Rouen? What was Eleanor called?—6. Who was the first wife of John? Who was his second?—7. What was the result of his second marriage?—8. Relate the events which led to John's struggle with the Papal power—9. What was an Interdict?—10. How did John act during the Interdict? What caused him at length to yield? What agreement did he make with the Pope?—11. Where was Philip of France when this agreement was made?—12. What were his proceedings?—13. What naval commander scattered the French fleet?—14. By what events were John's hopes of

victory in France blasted?—15. Where is Bouvines?—16. What was the result?—17. What circumstances led to a common feeling, perhaps for the first time, between the Anglo Norman and the Anglo Saxon races?—18. What measures were taken by the Barons of England?—19. What was John's remark when he heard their demands? How did the Barons become masters of London?—20. Where, and at what date, was Magna Charta signed?—21 Describe the position of Runnymead —22. What were the most important provisions of this Charter?—23. What other important document was signed at the same time?—24. What was John's conduct after signing the Charter?—25. How did the Barons meet the treachery of the King?—26. What were the perils to which England was thus exposed?—27. Where did Louis land?—28. What misfortune befel John on the shores of the Wash?—29. When did his death occur? What was the cause of it? Where was he buried? Where is Newark? What were his character and personal appearance?—30. Where is Ghent? Who was Earl of Flanders in the year 1214 A D? How was he treated by Philip of France? Why?—31. By what Pope was the realm of England placed under an Interdict?—32. Whom had the Pontiff chosen Archbishop of Canterbury?—33. Who was nominated by the monks?—34. What important work was finished during the reign of John?—35. What custom was begun by the citizens of London?—36. Who was the first *Lord* Mayor of London?—37. What remark have you to make concerning the English fisheries during this period?—38. How many children were left by John? Give their names Who was their mother? Which of them afterwards became King?—39. What people were extirpated in Southern France during this reign?

XXX.

Chapter IV.

1. Relate the circumstances which attended the accession and coronation of Henry III —2. What was the first act of his reign?—3. Where was Louis of France defeated? Date of the battle —4. What naval success was achieved about the same time, and by whom?—5. What was the surname of Henry III? How old was he at the death of his father? Who was appointed Regent?—6. On the death of Pembroke, who succeeded to the Regency?—7. Who was Papal legate in England at this time?—8. In what year was Henry declared of age? Who became his chief favourite?—9. How often has Magna Charta been ratified? Of what was its third ratification a condition?—10. What was the success of the French expedition? Where were Poitou and Guienne?—11. What charge was incurred by Henry? On whom did he cast the blame? What was the result?—12. How did De Burgh act?—13. Why was he sent back by the King to the sanctuary from which he had been carried? What measures were taken to force him to surrender? What was his fate?—14. At whose request did Henry engage in a second war with France? In what year was this? What successes were gained? By whom? What arrangement was finally come to? Where are Taillebourg and Saintes?—15. What royal alliances were formed between England and Scotland during this reign?—16. Who were the Poictevins and the Provençals? What was the result of Henry's fondness for them?—17. Who headed the rebellion? Who had just been created King of the Romans?—18. What course was pursued by the Barons?—19. What were the proceedings of the "Mad Parliament"? Where was it assembled? In what year did it meet?—20. What were the *Provisions of Oxford*?—21. How was the civil war kindled?—22. Where was Henry defeated? What was the date of this battle?—23. What treaty was made?—24. By whom was a Parliament called in the following year? Who were summoned? Why is this event of importance? Give the date —25. What occurred at Evesham? Where is Evesham? Relate what you know of the battle —26. How long did Henry reign? Where was Edward at the time of his death?—27. What was the character of Henry III? What do you know of his personal appearance?—28. Name some of the important improvements of this reign.—29. What license was granted to the people of Newcastle-on Tyne?—30. By whom was science much benefited?—31. Who invented the mariner's compass?—32. What constitutional changes may we trace to this reign?—33. What savage conqueror ravaged Asia in this reign?—34. What important commercial league was formed on the Continent? Give the date —35. For what

event in Byzantine history was the year 1261 noted?

XXXI.

CHAPTER V.

1. How was Prince Edward's life endangered while in Palestine?—2. Who was his wife? How did she act, according to the tradition?—3. How long was he in the Holy Land?—4. Where was he when the news reached him of his father's death?—5. What occurred while he was in Guienne? Where is Chalons?—6. What arrangement was made with the Countess of Flanders?—7. Where and when did the coronation of Edward I take place?—8. Who was present at the coronation?—9. What was the great aim of Edward's ambition?—10. What prophecy of Merlin is on record?—11. Who was prince of the Welsh at this period? How did he treat Edward's demand of homage?—12. How long was Edward occupied in the conquest of Wales? Where and how was Llewellyn slain? What was the fate of his brother David? With what barbarous act is Edward charged? What English poem is founded on the story?—13. Give the date of this conquest of Wales—14. Where was the first Prince of Wales born?—15. What event confused the succession to the Scottish throne? How many competitors appeared? Who were the most important of these? Of whom were they descendants? What were their claims relatively? Illustrate by a genealogical tree—16. On what ground did Edward claim a right to interfere? Whom did he appoint King? In what year did this occur?—17. What war arose shortly after? What was the origin of the war?—18. On what plea was Edward summoned to France? How did he act?—19. Whence were his supplies derived?—20. What was the tax he imposed on wool?—21. By what despotic means did he raise money?—22. Where was the fleet prepared for the invasion of France? What events forced Edward to abandon this project?—23. How did Edward goad Baliol, King of Scotland, to revolt? What was the result? Who was left Guardian of Scotland?—24. Who were the Scottish heroes of the war which followed? What was its result?—25. What province was recovered by treaty from France?—26. What was the last effort of King Edward I? By what news was he roused?—27. Where did he die?—28. What was his last wish?—29. Who was his first wife? In what year did she die? How many sons did she leave?—30. Who was Edward's second wife? Mention the names of her sons—31. What was the personal appearance of Edward? What was his character?—32. What were the chief constitutional changes of this reign?—33. Who were banished from England during this reign? In what year did this take place?—34. Who took the place of the Jews in England?—35. What useful novelties were introduced into England during this reign?—36. What were brought from Scotland by Edward? What was his object in this removal?—37. What great structure was completed by this monarch?—38. Where did he place the coronation chair of Scotland?—39. Give the dates of the reign of Rudolf of Hapsburg—40. What massacre occurred in 1282, and what battle in 1302?—41. Give the date of William Tell's defiance of Austria

XXXII

CHAPTER VI

1. Where was Edward I buried? What of the Scottish war?—2. Whom did Edward II immediately recal from exile? What charge was committed to this vicious favourite?—3. For what purpose did Edward sail to Boulogne?—4. How were the jealousy and anger of the English Barons aroused against the King's unworthy favourite?—5. Where was Gaveston seized? What was his fate? Where is Blacklow hill?—6. What were the proceedings of the Parliament before the death of Gaveston? Who were the Ordainers?—7. Name some important cities which had fallen before the Scottish King—8. To save Stirling how did Edward act?—9 Where and when was he defeated?—10. What town was besieged five years after by the English King, and with what success?—11. About the same time who seized the crown of Ulster in Ireland? Where was he crowned King?—12 Where was he slain?—13. Where is the field of Bannockburn? When was the Battle of Bannockburn fought?—14. What do you know of the condition of England during the years 1314 and 1315?—15. Who were Edward's favourites after the death of Piers Gaveston?—16. What was the fate of each?—17. Who was beheaded by the King's order at Pontefract?—18. What was the conduct of the Queen? Who fled

with her?—19. What declaration did the Parliament make?—20. Where did Edward II die? What is known of his death? What is the date of his death? Where was he buried?—21. What were the names of his children?—22. What was the character of Edward? What was his personal appearance?—23. What was the interest of money during this reign? What came into use about this time in England? What treaty was concluded between England and Venice? What treatment did Edward inflict on the Templars? Whose example did he follow in this?—24. What Republic was founded in 1308?—25. Give the date of the Battle of Morgarten

XXXIII.

CHAPTER VII

1. What were the surnames of the Kings John, Henry III., and the first three Edwards?—2. At the beginning of Edward the Third's reign who held all power in England?—3. Why was it difficult to overtake a Scottish army at this period?—4. What reward was offered by the King to him who should discover the route of the army which had invaded the northern counties?—5. Who won the prize? What battle was the result?—6. By whose advice was Scotland acknowledged to be a distinct and independent kingdom?—7. How was the treaty cemented?—8. What circumstances led to the overthrow of Isabella's power?—9. Where was Mortimer seized?—10. How was he treated? How did the King act towards his mother?—11. What led to the Battle of Halidon hill? What was the result of this battle? When was it fought?—12. What was the great effort of Edward the Third's policy?—13. What was the nature of his claims to the French crown? What law existing in France, formed a barrier to Edward's claims?—14. How did he raise supplies for the war?—15. What was his success in the first two campaigns?—16. Where are Sluys and Tournay?—17. What were the events of the seventh year of the war?—18. Describe Edward's march to Crecy—19. Describe the Battle of Crecy When was it fought?—20. What weapon may be said to have won the day?—21. What King was among the slain? By whom were his crest and motto adopted?—22. When was the Battle of Nevil's Cross fought, and by whom?—23. What were Edward's proceedings after the Battle of Crecy?—24. How long did this siege continue and how was it brought to a close?—25. Shortly afterwards what terrible calamity befel England and the south of Europe? What rendered the mediæval Plagues so virulent?—26 Who were the Flagellants?—27 In what year was the war with France renewed? Who was King of France at this time? Who headed the English armies? From what did he obtain his name?—28. How were the English occupied during the first campaign?—29. By what event was the second campaign signalized?—30. Describe the battle When was it fought? On what kind of ground? What weapon decided the day? What illustrious prisoners were taken?—31. When was David of Scotland ransomed?—32. By what treaty was the French King freed? What were the provisions of this agreement?—33. What was the honourable conduct of the French King?—34. Where did the Black Prince rule? What was the result of his war in Spain?—35 Name his antagonist in Spain and his chief victory?—36. Whom had he married? What was the name of his son?—37. What French possessions remained to Edward at the time of his son's death?—38 Give an account of his latter days?—39. Where and when did he die? Where was he buried?—40. Who were his most distinguished sons?—41. What was his character? What important change during his reign took place in the English nation?—42. What facts show the rising importance of the English language?—43. What change was made in the English Parliament? What is meant by *purveyance?* What shook the Papal power in England? What title was in this reign revived in England? Who invented gunpowder?—44. What was the chief statute of the reign?—45. Who was the architect of Windsor Castle? Tell his position in Church and State—46. Give the dates of Rienzi's tribuneship and the Institution of the Golden Bull.

XXXIV.

CHAPTER VIII.

1. What was the surname of Richard II? Whose son was he?—2. How old was Richard at the time of Edward the Third's death?—3. How was the power vested during the King's minority? Who were excluded?—4. How was the coronation of Richard celebrated by the citizens

of London?—5. What was the first memorable event of this reign?—6. What was the cause of this rising?—7. Where did it break out? What were its limits westward and northward?—8. Who were its leaders? What were their demands? What was their motto?—9. Describe the insurrection —10. How was it crushed?—11. What countries attempted an invasion of England? With what success did they meet?—12. What were Richard's proceedings in return for this attack? What was his success?—13. In what battle were the English defeated? What was its date? How is this battle named in old English ballads?—14. How was the government frequently interfered with?—15. Who was elected head of the council?—16. What was the date of the "Wonderful Parliament"? Give its other name, and tell what its deeds were —17. At what age did Richard free himself from guardianship?—18. Who was Richard's first wife? Whom did he marry after her death?—19 What event of great importance characterizes this reign?—20. Who were the Lollards?—21. Who was the protector of John Wycliffe?— 22. Against whom were Wycliffe's early writings levelled?—23. What town was the Reformer's refuge? What literary work did he perform there?—24. Give the derivation of Lollard —25. What was the date of the Lollard Remonstrance?—26. What was the fate of the Duke of Gloucester?—27. How was Richard made an absolute monarch?—28. What quarrel led to Richard's fall?—29. Where did the Duke of Hereford land? Where was Richard at this time? Where was he made prisoner? Give an account of his deposition When did Richard die? What is known of his death? What was his character? What were his personal traits? —30. When was the Order of the Garter instituted? What similar Order was instituted during the reign of Richard II? What other changes took place?—31. What remarkable statute was passed in 1393? State its terms?—32. Name two battles and a treaty which occurred on the Continent during this reign —33. What Asiatic conqueror was contemporary with Richard?

XXXV.

CHAPTER IX.

Scotland and Ireland during the first Seven Plantagenet Reigns

1. Write out a list of the Scottish sovereigns from 1153 to 1371.—2. Who was the father of Malcolm IV?—3. What was Malcolm's nickname? What concession did he make to England? Describe his chief conquest —4. Where did he die? In what year?—5. Who succeeded him? What was his surname? Why? What was the most important event during his reign? Describe his captivity What submission did he make to England? Narrate his quarrel with the Pope Give the length of his reign —6. What do you know of the next King?—7. How old was Alexander III at the date of his father's death? Who was his wife? What was his surname? What was the leading event of his reign? What was its result? What was the fate of Haco? What do you know of his administration? When and how did he meet his death? Whom did his daughter Margaret marry?—8. Who was heir to the throne at the death of Alexander III? What proposal did Edward I of England make and how was it frustrated?—9. At what age and when, did the Maid of Norway die?—10. Relate as fully as you can the struggle for the crown which followed her death —11. Who were the leading competitors? Show their relationship by a tree of descent Whom did Edward appoint? Describe the humiliation of Baliol Who were then the English officials in Scotland? How did Edward strive to humble the Scottish pride?—12. Who was Sir William Wallace?—13. Describe his first collision with the English What victory was gained by him in 1297 A D? State its results On hearing of this disaster what were the proceedings of King Edward I? What victory was won by him in the year 1298? What was the fate of the brave general of the Scots?—14. Who was Robert Bruce? Who was his rival? Describe their interview and its issue Where and when was Bruce crowned? What happened at Methven, Rathlin, and Loudon Hill? Describe the Battle of Bannockburn What fruitless siege occurred in 1319?—15. When was the independence of Scotland acknowledged? Give the date of Bruce's death —16. What solemn charge was left by Bruce at his death with Lord Douglas? Where was Douglas slain? Where was the heart of Robert Bruce buried?—17. What was the age of David II at the death of his father? Where was his minority spent? Who held the regency? What was the leading event of the mi-

nority? Who was the victor at Dupplin Moor? Give the date Describe the Battle of Halidon Hill What was the defeat sustained by David in 1346? What was his character?—18. What was the state of Ireland previous to 1172 A D ?—19. What was the result of the Synod of Kells?—20. Tell what you know of Macmorrogh —21. How was Ireland governed during the Plantagenet Period?—22. What part of the island was occupied by the English?—23. What was this district called?—24. Describe the treatment of Ireland under Henry III and Edward I —25. Relate what you know of the attempt made by Edward Bruce on the north of Ireland —26. What occurred during the reign of Edward III ?—27. What enactments were made in consequence? Describe the Statute of Kilkenny —28. What four counties acknowledged the English rule under Edward III ?—29. How often did Richard II invade Ireland?

XXXVI.

CHAPTER X.

Social Condition of the People under the Plantagenets Proper

1. From what time may the decay of the Feudal System be dated? When was it in its prime?—2. What is the name given to the style of architecture belonging to this period? Give examples —3. What was the furniture of a farm house?—4. Relate what you know of trade at this period What derisive epithet was applied to Edward III by the King of France? Of what four classes was the army composed?—5. What was the rate of wages for haymakers? labourers? carpenters? masons? To what law were the men of Staffordshire, Derbyshire, Lancashire, &c , an exception?—6. What was the favourite employment of the clergy?—7. Describe the dress of the period —8. What was peculiar in the shoes? What was the most striking part of ladies' dress?—9. Relate what you know of the sports of the Plantagenet Period. What was the *Quintain*?—10. What was the state of literature at this period?—11. What was the *Scriptorium*?—12. What was the Period of Old English?—13. Mention some eminent English authors who flourished under the later Plantagenets —14. Who wrote the *Acts of Bruce, Piers Plowman, Confessio Amantis*?—15. What was Wycliffe's position at Oxford?—16. Write the dates of the chief constitutional changes of the period —17. By what marriage did the House of York gain a place in the Royal Family next to the chief branch?

HOUSE OF LANCASTER.

XXXVII.

CHAPTER I.

1. Who was King by right on the deposition of Richard of Bordeaux? How did Henry IV act towards him? What principle of succession came into use later?—2. What was the first great undertaking of the usurper? Where were the Scots defeated? In what year was this?—3. What was a common report concerning Richard II ?—4. What do you know of Owen Glendower?—5. Who were Henry the Fourth's greatest enemies?—6. What was the cause of their revolt? Who allied himself with them? What other assistance had they?—7. What battle decided the contest? Give the date What was the result? What became of the Duke of Northumberland?—8. What was the cause of Henry's dispute with France? How did Henry meet the claim? When was war openly declared?—9. What events gave Henry the ascendency in Scotland and in France?—10. How were the adherents of the Houses of Orleans and Burgundy called respectively?—11. What advantages accrued to Henry, and how did he obtain them?—12. What disturbed the later years of Henry's life?—13. Give two remarkable instances illustrative of Prince Henry's better nature?—14. Where was Henry buried? What was the cause of his death? Where did he die?—15. How often was Henry IV married? What were the names of his wives? What were the names of his children?—16. What was his character? What was his personal appearance? Give an idea of the difficulty of controlling Parliament at this time —17. By what constitutional advances is this reign characterized?—18. Who was the first victim of religious persecution since the Conquest? How was he executed? When did this event take place?—19. What is the earliest mention of cannon in England?

XXXVIII.

CHAPTER II.

1. What were the earliest acts of King Henry V ?—2. What do you know of Sir John Oldcastle? What was his fate?—3. What was the surname of King Henry V ?—4. What demand was made by him in France?—5. What was the answer?—6. What were Henry's proceedings?—7. Who was appointed Regent?—8. How was the expedition delayed?—9. Who suffered death in consequence of the discovery of this plot?—10. Whence did King Henry sail to invade France?—11. What was his first operation?—12. With what forces had he invaded the country?—13. Though his army was reduced to one half its former number, what daring resolve did he form? Trace his course in a sketch map —14. What obstacles were encountered and overcome?—15. What was his line of march after crossing the Somme?—16. Where were the French forces stationed to oppose his advance?— 17. What was the strength of the French army? What were the odds? How did the English archers defend themselves against the French cavalry?—18. Describe the battle, and state its result —19. Whither did Henry then go?—20. How was he received?—21. When was the war renewed?—22. In what year was Rouen taken? What was the result of its fall?—23. What were the leading conditions of the Treaty of Troyes? In what year was it concluded? What unforeseen occurrence enabled Henry thus to dictate terms of peace to the French monarch?—24. How was Henry's next visit to England brought to a termination?—25. Where had the English been routed, and by whom?—26. Who had reinforced the Dauphin?—27. How did Henry endeavour to render the Scots neutral? With what success?—28. Who was slain in the battle at Beaujé?—29. What was the result of the next conflict?—30. What event paralyzed all hostile efforts on the part of the French?—31. Under what circumstances did the death of Henry of Monmouth occur? What was the cause of his death? Where did he die? Where was he buried?—32. How many sons did he leave? Whom did his widow Catherine marry? Of what royal line was she thus the founder?—33. What was the character of Henry V ? What was his personal appearance?—34. What important point was gained by the Commons in this reign?—35. What was the yearly revenue of the State?—What is Calais said to have cost a year?—36. Why may the English navy be said to have been founded in this reign?—37. What were the fleets before employed by our monarchs?—38. Who was thrice Lord Mayor of London during the reign of Henry V ? How did the nursery tale originate?

XXXIX.

CHAPTER III.

1. What was the age of Henry VI at his father's death?—2. Who had been appointed Regent of France by Henry V ? Whom had he made Protector of England?—3. What title was assumed by the Dauphin on the death of his father? What was the boundary between the French and English provinces in France?—4. What battles were won by the English? What was the date of each?—5. How was the English cause weakened?—6. What resolution in council was made in the year 1428, which ultimately led to the triumph of Charles VII ?—7. As a preparatory step, what city was invested?—8. Relate what you know of the "Battle of herrings "—9. How was the fortune of war suddenly changed?—10. What double mission did Joan of Arc declare herself deputed to perform? Describe her relief of Orleans —11. Where was Charles VII. crowned?—12. What became of the Maid of Orleans?—13. In what year and how did her death take place?—14. What step was considered necessary by the English in consequence of the coronation of Charles VII ?—15. What congress met in 1435? What was its object?—16. What two great blows shook to its foundations the English power in France?—17. In what year did the English agree to a two years' truce?—18. Whom did Henry VI marry in the following year?—19. What French provinces were made over to her father?—20. In what did the value of these provinces consist?—21. How did the populace of England receive the news of their cession to René?—22. Relate the conquests of Charles VII —23. What was now the sole remnant of the English Empire in France? Who was the last of the great soldiers of this war? When did he die? By what name is this war known in history?—24. In what year was King James I. of Scotland released? Who was his Queen?

—25. Who were the pillars of the House of Lancaster?—26. After the decease of these two great men, what prince aspired to the English crown?—27. What was the nature of his claim?—28. By whose advice had the provinces of Anjou and Maine been ceded to Rene?—29. What was the fate of this nobleman?—30. What was the popular feeling in England concerning the Duke of Suffolk?

XL.

CHAPTER III —*continued*

1. Give an account of the Kentish rebellion —2. Who was the leader of the revolt?—3. What were his pretensions?—4. Where were the King s troops defeated?—5. Whither did Henry withdraw?—6. How was the rebellion quelled?—7. What became of Cade? Where was he discovered?—8. Who was supposed to have instigated this revolt?—9. What action on the part of the King roused the anger of the people?—10. What was the cause of the prejudice against the King s favourite?—11. What calamity at this critical period befel the King?—12. Who was chosen Protector?—13. In what year did the Wars of the Roses begin? Why so called?—14. Who were the chief supporters of the House of York? What class of the people were specially involved in this war?—15. How many battles were fought during the remaining years of Henry's reign?—16. What was the date of the first battle of St Albans? Who was the victor? Who was made prisoner in this battle?—17. What events followed?—18. What was the next battle? Where was it fought, and who was the victor?—19. What was the date of the third battle? Where was it fought, and with what result?—20. What arrangement was made by Parliament?—21. What was the course pursued by Margaret of Anjou? What was the name of the Prince of Wales?—22. When was the first Lancastrian victory obtained? Where was the battle fought? Who was slain in the battle? What was the effect on the Yorkists?—23. Who succeeded to the title and claims of Richard Duke of York?—24. What was his age? What were his character and personal appearance? How were the people affected towards him?—25. What was the fourth victory of the House of York? When obtained, and by whom?—26. Where did Margaret of Anjou gain her second victory? Who led the Yorkists in this battle? What was the result of the Lancastrian victory? Why was it of little avail? When was Henry deposed? What was his character?—27. What was the governing body in England? What were the functions of the Commons? To whom was the franchise in this reign limited? What were the inducements to serve as M P at this period?—28. What was the revenue of the King? What were his debts?—29. What public establishments were founded in 1440 and 1451? When and by whom was printing invented?—30. What other facts show the progress of science and art?—31. Make a list of the sovereigns of the House of Lancaster with dates —32 What great event of European history occurred in 1453

HOUSE OF YORK

XLI.

CHAPTER I

1 Who was the first monarch of the House of York?—2. What victory established the kingdom of Edward? How did Margaret act? What were the events of 1464? Where were these battles fought and with what result? Whither did King Henry flee after the Battle of Hexham? Where was he immured when seized?—3. Whom did Edward IV marry?—4 How was the Earl of Warwick induced to support the Lancastrian cause? What historical name does this Earl bear? Of what family was he the head? What important governorship did he hold?—5. What were his proceedings in conjunction with the Duke of Clarence?—6 Where did he meet Margaret of Anjou? How was the union of Warwick with the Lancastrians cemented? How long was Warwick absent, and where did he land?—7. What was the result of his invasion of England?—8. Whither did Edward IV flee?—9. Who was the husband of Edward's sister? What service was rendered by him to the English monarch?—10. Where did Edward land?—11. What were the forces of Edward by the time he arrived at Nottingham?—12. By what prince was he joined?—13. What was the date of the Battle of Barnet? Where is Barnet?—14. Who perished on the Lancastrian side in this battle?—15. Where did

Margaret and her son Edward land? When did this occur?—16. What became of them? Where is Tewkesbury?—17. What was the fate of Edward the son of Margaret?—18. By whom was Margaret ransomed, and how many years did she survive the murder of her son?—19. What was the probable fate of King Henry VI?—20. What occasioned a fierce dispute between Clarence and Gloucester? How were they finally satisfied?—21. What project was then formed by Edward IV, and what motives had he to such a war?—22. What new method of raising money was invented by this monarch?—23. Under what circumstances was the Treaty of Pecquigny made?—24. What were the chief conditions of this treaty?—25. How was this treaty brought about?—26. How did the people of England receive the news of it?—27. How did Edward avoid for the future increasing the burdens of the nation?—28 What is the darkest stain on Edward's memory? What led to this tragical event? What was the common rumour regarding it?—29. What strange feature was there in Edward's foreign policy? How was the marriage agreed upon at Pecquigny frustrated?—30. At what age did Edward die? Where was he buried? How many children did he leave? Name three of them—31. What was the chief quality of Edward's character? What was his personal appearance? By what means did he maintain his throne?—32. Into what were the Petitions of the Parliament formed in this reign?—33. By what remarkable and important event is the reign of Edward IV distinguished?—34. Who invented printing? Who first printed from metal types? In what year was this? When did types cast in hollow moulds come into use? (See conclusion of Henry the Sixth's reign)—35. Who introduced printing into England? What had been his calling? In whose service had he recently been? Where had he learned the art? What was the first specimen of printing in the English language? Where printed, by whom, and in what year?—36. In what year did Caxton set up a press? What chamber was allotted to him? In what year did he issue from it the first book printed in England? What was its title? How many works did Caxton issue from his press? In what year was printing introduced into Scotland? When into Ireland?—37. Describe the postal arrangements made in this reign—38. Where is Pecquigny? Where is Ghent?—39. Draw a map of England, and mark the sites of the battle fields on which were fought the eleven battles of the reigns of Henry VI and Edward IV What remarkable sovereigns flourished in Spain at this time? What important marriage was celebrated in 1477?

XLII

CHAPTER II.

1. How long did King Edward V reign? What title did Gloucester assume?—2. At what place was Edward seized by the Duke of Gloucester? Whither was he led? Whom did Gloucester also seize?—3. What was Gloucester's next step? Who were the most prominent supporters of Edward? In whom did Rivers encourage letters? What book was printed for him?—4. What was the fate of Lord Hastings?—5. What became of Lord Rivers?—6. Who first publicly declared Richard the true heir to the crown? How were the minds of the citizens prepared?—7. Who offered the crown to Richard?—8. How did Richard receive the petition presented by this nobleman?—9. What was the fate of Edward V, and his brother the Duke of York? (See Chapter III.)—10. What is the story commonly believed as to their death?—11. Is it's truth undoubted?

XLIII.

CHAPTER III.

1. Who was the wife of Richard III?—2. By what means did he gather round his throne a band of adherents?—3. For what purposes did he make a royal progress through the country, and where was he again crowned?—4. On the death of Edward V and his brother, what scheme was formed by the Lancastrian party for dethroning Richard?—5. What friend of the King declared in favour of Richmond?—6. When was the rising in favour of the Tudor prince? What baffled Richmond? Where did Buckingham draw the sword? What unforeseen event divided his army?—7. How was Buckingham betrayed into the hands of Richard, and with what treatment did he meet at his hands?—8. How was the scheme of Richard for marrying the Princess Elizabeth defeated?—9. What was his next project? What suspicion did he incur in consequence?—10. By whom was he dissuaded from this union? Who

was the object of Richard's chief suspicions?—11. When the news came of Richmond's intended expedition, where did the King take his station?—12. When and where did Richmond land? What time elapsed before a battle took place?—13. Where did the two armies meet?—14. What do you know of the battle?—15. Who placed the crown on Richmond's head? Where was the corpse of Richard buried?—16. How has the character of Richard been represented by historians? What allowance should be made in accepting the usual idea of this King?—17. What was his personal appearance? Give his nickname.—18. Give the names and dates of the twelve battles fought between the Lancastrians and the House of York. How many of these were won by the Lancastrians?—19. Make a list of the Yorkist sovereigns, with the dates, and the relations of the sovereigns to each other.—20. What King of France was contemporary with Richard III?

XLIV

Chapter IV.

Social Condition of the People under the Houses of York and Lancaster

1. What was the great social feature of the period during which the Houses of Lancaster and York held the throne?—2. Was Slavery introduced at the Conquest?—3. When did the process of emancipation begin?—4. What Englishman attained the Popedom, and when?—5. What custom prevailed among the clergy when called to the death bed of a slaveholder?—6. When was Villenage finally extinct in England?—7. What was the nature at this period of the English government?—8. What three great principles limited the power of the King?—9. What change took place in the domestic architecture of England?—10. Describe these buildings.—11. Where may this style still be noticed?—12. What was the daily life of the higher classes?—13. At what hour did the working classes dine? What is meant by the "livery"?—14. What was the difference between a Miracle Play and a Moral Play? Give an idea of the length of some Miracle Plays.—15. What change in dramatic representation took place during the Tudor Period?—16. What changes took place in bookmaking?—17. Give a description of the books of this early period.—18. What name is given to the language of the period? In what letters do we find glimpses of the social life of the time? Who wrote *The King's Quhair*, the *Siege of Troy*, *De Laudibus Legum Angliæ*? Name two of the translations of William Caxton. Give the dates of the Battles of Shrewsbury, Agincourt, Vernueil Towton Barnet, and Bosworth. Give the dates of the Treaties of Troyes, Arras and Pecquigny. Trace the descent of Henry VII from Edward III.—19. What system of orthography was in use?

TUDOR PERIOD.

XLV.

Chapter I.

1. What changes in the condition of the English people characterize the period in which Henry VII began to reign?—2. Who were the rivals of Henry? How did he act towards them?—3. What was the reason for a delay of the coronation? When did the ceremony take place?—4. Whom did he marry? Who were his chief confidants? Whom did he make Archbishop of Canterbury? and whom Bishop of Winchester?—5. Give an account of the first insurrection which disturbed Henry's reign. In what port did Henry encourage trade?—6. Who was Margaret of Burgundy?—7. Relate what you know of Simnel's rebellion. Who was Lord deputy of Ireland at this time? What treatment did Simnel receive at his hands? What were Henry's proceedings? Where was the Queen imprisoned? What nobleman joined Simnel? Where did the rebels land? Where was the decisive battle fought? Tell the fate of Lincoln and of Simnel.—8. What court was established by Henry? What was its constitution? What was "maintenance"?—9. What was the ruling principle of Henry's foreign policy? What events led to his war with France?—10. What was the effect in England of the taxation to which the people were subjected in consequence of this war?—11. What was the fate of the leaders of this rebellion?—12. By what means was peace re established? With what feelings did the English people receive the news of this peace?—13. Who was the great impostor of Henry's reign? What were his pretensions? At whose

court were his pretensions first actively encouraged? Who was his agent in Burgundy? What was the consequence of Clifford's treachery? What claims had Sir William Stanley on the King's favour? What proof have we that the King disregarded these claims?—14. Where was Warbeck's first attempt on England made? Whither did he retire on the failure of this expedition? How did Henry act towards the country which thus afforded an asylum to the pretender?—15. Whither did Warbeck sail after his expulsion from Flanders? What law prevented his success? At what court was he afterwards entertained? Whom did Perkin Warbeck marry?—16. What measures were taken by the King of Scotland for placing the pretender on the English throne?—17. What do you know of the Cornish rebellion? What was its success?—18. What was the result of James the Fourth's second attack on England? Whither did Warbeck retreat? Where did he land in England? Where was the flag of rebellion unfurled by him?—19. With what force did he besiege the city of Exeter? Did he succeed in taking the city? What was his next move? In the prospect of battle how did Warbeck act? What became of his army?—20. What became of Perkin Warbeck's wife? By what name was she known in the English court?—21 Relate what you know of Warbeck's subsequent history What means did Henry take to satisfy the people that Perkin was an impostor?—22. What is the greatest stain on Henry's memory? What excuse was made for it?—23. How was the remainder of Henry's life occupied? How was the old enmity between England and Scotland set at rest? Why is this event of great historical importance? Give its date —24. To whom was Henry's eldest son married? What was his name, and how long did he live after his union with this princess? What was his character?—25. Who was the second husband of Catherine of Aragon?—26. In what year did the Queen of Henry VII die?—27 To whom had Richard III bequeathed his crown? Who claimed the estates of John de la Pole, and with what success was his claim attended? By whom was this nobleman delivered up to Henry?—28. Who were the chief agents of Henry the Seventh's extortion? To what profession did they belong? Give an instance of this King's rapacious extortion?—29 When and of what did Henry VII die? What were his dying commands? What were the names of his children?—30. What is Lord Macaulay's account of the general character of the Tudors? What was the leading feature in Henry the Seventh's character?—31. Which was the most important of the laws passed during this reign? How did this law benefit the Commons?—32 What effect had the Wars of the Roses on the English aristocracy? Mention a fact strikingly illustrative of your statement —33. What celebrated vessel was built by this monarch's order? What was its burden? What was its cost?—34. What event gives to this reign its deepest interest? In what way was Columbus connected with the history of this reign? By what event was the negotiation interrupted?—35. In what year and by whom was Labrador discovered?—36. Who in the same year doubled the Cape of Good Hope?—37. What was the date of the discovery by Columbus of the Bahama Islands?—38. What importance would you assign to these events?—39. Who were the Kings of France during this reign?—40. Give the dates of the Fall of Granada and the League of Cambray

XLVI.

CHAPTER II

1. Who was the second King of the Tudor line? At what age did he ascend the throne? How were the rival claims of the Houses of York and Lancaster united in his person? With what feelings did the nation regard his accession? What was one of his earliest acts? What was a prominent feature in Henry's character, directly opposed to one of his father's vices? Who was at this time his chief minister? What graceful tastes did he possess? Who was Henry's first wife?—2. Who was at this period King of France? What three monarchs formed a league to oppose his attempt on Italy? How was Henry induced to join the league? Whither were his troops sent, and why were they withdrawn without attempting to effect the object for which they were sent? What was the indirect result of this campaign?—3. Whither did Henry sail in 1513? What town was invested? When was the "Battle of spurs" fought? What town was then taken? During Henry's absence from England, who had invaded

his realm? In what battle were the invaders signally defeated? By whom?—4. Who was a prominent figure during the first twenty one years of this reign? When and where was he born? Notice in order the successive steps in his rise to power What feature in his character pleased the gay Henry VIII? In what year was he created Papal legate? What was the character of his public life? Give an instance of his splendour and pride?—5. Who ascended the French throne in the year 1515? What project engrossed his attention and disposed him to live at peace with England? What means were used by him to secure this? What were the first fruits of his intriguing? What event of great importance occurred in the year 1519? Who was chosen his successor? Who were then the leading Powers of Europe? What were the dominions and resources of Charles V? What were the advantages respectively of his two powerful rivals? By what means did he win the friendship of Cardinal Wolsey?—6. Where and when did the meeting between Henry and Francis occur, which has been called "The Field of the Cloth of Gold'? Relate what you know of this meeting and its results Where did Henry and Charles shortly afterwards meet each other?—7. What event occurred on Henry's return to England? What cause was there for this execution? What office died with him?—8. What great series of events was now in progress on the continent of Europe? When were Indulgences first invented? With what object was the sale of Indulgences now revived? What was an Indulgence? Who opposed himself to the sale of Indul

What was the date of his fixing on the door of the church in Wittenberg his famous ninety five theses? What doctrine did he uphold in these propositions? When did he maintain at Leipsic the authority of the Bible as the only rule of faith? When, where, and by what means did he sever the last tie which bound him to the Church of Rome? What section of the English people looked gladly upon these acts? What measures did Henry VIII of England take against the reformer and his doctrines, and how was he rewarded by the Roman Pontiff? Was his attack unnoticed by Luther?—9 In the war between Charles V and Francis I, with whom did Henry at first side? What was the cause of the failure of his two invasions of the French territory? How near Paris did his army advance on the second occasion? What means was he compelled to take in order to supply his needs? What time had elapsed since the meeting of a Parliament? How did the Commons answer Henry's demands? What was the most fruitful source of Henry's income now? How was Wolsey rebuked by the Commons when he made his demands for the King?—10. What was the cause of a change in Wolsey's foreign policy? When was the Battle of Pavia fought, and with what result? When was Rome taken by Bourbon? What league then originated?—11. How did Henry act towards Queen Catherine, his consort? How long had she been his wife? Who was Anne Boleyn? What difficulties lay in the way of a divorce? In what spirit did Henry meet Wolsey's objections to the divorce? Explain the difficult position of both Wolsey and the Pope —12. How did the Cardinal act? When was the court opened for the trial of the case and who were the judges? What touching scene took place on the first day? How was Henry's anger roused against Wolsey? What was the result to this ambitious prelate? To what places did he retire? Where and when did he die? What were his last words?—13. What change about this time took place in Henry's mind? When did the Reformers assume the name of Protestants? Who were the King's chief advisers? State some of the changes in Cromwell's life What led to the elevation of these two men?—14. When was the King of England first owned as Head of the Church? What prohibitions were severally made by the Parliaments of 1532 and 1533? When was Anne Boleyn declared Queen? When did Catherine die, and what was the name of her daughter? How did the Pope punish Henry?—15. On what question, when the divorce was thus settled did the dispute between the Pope and Henry centre? How was the point decided, in 1534, by Parliament? Relate what you know of Elizabeth Barton, "the holy maid of Kent" What distinguished men were beheaded in the year 1535, and why? Of what literary work was More the author? What did Pope Paul III. now do?—16 What motives had Henry for the suppression of the monasteries? Who acted as the King's Vicar General in the control of the Church, and directed the destruction of the monastic houses? Ac-

cording to some, what grounds for this step existed? What was Henry's double motive? In what year were the inferior monasteries suppressed? When were the greater religious houses destroyed? How many monasteries were dismantled? What income did the King derive from this wholesale act of destruction? How many new bishoprics were established?—17. When, and by what means did the *real* union of Wales with England take place? How many members were allotted to Wales?—18. What was the fate of Anne Boleyn? On what charge was she convicted? In what year was this? What was the name of her daughter? Who was Henry's third Queen?—19. What version of the Scriptures was used in England during the earlier part of this reign? In what year was the translation of the New Testament published, and when was it followed by that of the Old? When and where did William Tyndale suffer martyrdom? Who published the next English version of the Scriptures, and in what year? From what were these translations made? What royal order placed the Bible within reach of every one who could read? When was Cranmer's version put forth, and by what name was it known?—20. Relate what you know of the Pilgrimage of Grace How did the discontent arise?—21. When was Prince Edward born? When did Jane Seymour die?—22. What were Henry's religious opinions? What particular doctrine did he retain? What was "The Bloody Statute"? Give the other name What decision of Parliament was made about this time? What was in effect the result of this decision?—23. Who was Henry's fourth wife? Who proposed this union, and why? What were Henry's feelings towards his consort and Cromwell? What was Cromwell's fate? After the divorce of Anne of Cleves, who was raised to the throne as Henry's fifth consort? Who rejoiced at her accession? How did her union with Henry terminate? Who perished with her?—24. How did Henry display his fickle nature in religious matters? Name two of the later martyrs of the reign —25. What wars occurred in the latter years of Henry's life? Who was his sixth wife? What story is told of her address on an occasion when her life is said to have been in danger?—26. Who was Henry's last victim? What was his crime? For what was he otherwise noted? What nobleman's death was averted by that of the King Give a relation of the circumstances attending Henry's decease? How did he bequeath the throne?—27. What was his character? Name the great historical feature of his reign. What Popes were contemporary with Henry VIII? Who was the great Sultan at this time? What are the dates of the Battles of Pavia and Mohacs, the Conquest of Mexico and Peru, and the Foundation of the Mogul Empire?

XLVII.

Chapter III.

1. What was the age of Prince Edward at the time of Henry's death? What arrangement was made for the government of the kingdom during his minority? Who was chosen Protector? What title did he receive? What prelate was a leading member of the Council of Regency?—2. What arrangement was directed in Henry's will to be enforced, if possible, with regard to Prince Edward's marriage? What means were taken to bring about this union? When was the Battle of Pinkie fought, and with what result? What caused the Protector to return to London? What expression did the Earl of Huntly use with regard to the proposed marriage? Whither was Mary of Scotland sent?—3. What was the great event of this reign? What was the creed of the Protector? Under whose care did the Church of England take its present form? What means were taken to secure purity of doctrine? What other proceedings firmly established the Reformed religion in England?—4. What plot was on foot against Somerset's power at this time? How was this conspiracy checked? What member of the Council of Regency was a powerful enemy to the Protector?—5. What was the condition of the people at this time? What useful ends had monasteries served, and what evils resulted from their suppression? What new grievances had the working classes? What disturbances resulted from the pressure of these grievances? Who was Ket? What was his fate?—6. What successes were obtained by the French, as allies of Scotland, against England? What circumstances led to the fall of Somerset? Why was the Princess Mary not molested? What sentence was passed on Somerset?—7. What order of the Council led to the imprisonment of Gardiner?—8. To what

rank was the Earl of Warwick raised? Whose son was he? On what charges did he cause Somerset to be arrested and condemned to death? Before what tribunal was Somerset arraigned? At what date was he executed? What proof was there of popular sympathy with the ex Protector?—9. Who now virtually ruled England? What ambitious project was conceived by him? On what grounds did he persuade Edward to exclude Mary and Elizabeth from the succession? What objection did he make to the Queen of Scots? Whom did he consider the succession to rest with? What marriage had he previously arranged? Why did the King desire to settle the succession on Lady Jane Grey? By what means was the succession transferred to the youngest branch?—10. What followed closely on this act? What reason is there to suspect Northumberland of causing the King's death? Where did Edward VI die? At what age? What was his character? What literary work of his still exists?

XLVIII.

CHAPTER IV.

1. On the death of Edward VI, who was proclaimed monarch of England? By whose order was this done? What was her age? In what languages was she versed? What was her character? With what feelings did she accept the crown? Whose claim to the throne was favoured by the nation? What force did Northumberland raise? For whom did the citizens and councillors of London declare? What arrests followed the accession of Mary?—2. What was the age of Mary at this date? What were her character and religious principles? What was her great object? What were the earliest acts of her reign? How did she violate a promise she had made to the men of Suffolk? What became of Cranmer, Ridley, Latimer, &c?—3. Of whom did Mary become the wife in 1554? Why did she desire this alliance? What was the age of her consort? What were the feelings of the English people towards him? What reason have you for thinking that Philip II failed to reciprocate the affection of his consort?—4. What disturbances were caused in England by this marriage? Who led the Kentish rebellion? What number of his followers suffered death? What nobleman was concerned in this rising, and for what act of violence was his guilt made the pretext? Describe the death of Jane Grey.—5. Why has this Queen been called "Bloody Mary"? By whom were tolerant measures advised? What was the number of persons who during this reign suffered martyrdom? What was the chief scene of these tragedies? What continental cities afforded an asylum to the proscribed Protestant ministers? Name three celebrated exiles. What was the origin of the Puritans?—6. Who was the first victim of this persecution? Relate what you know of the martyrdom of Hooper, Ridley, and Latimer. Quote Latimer's words.—7. When was Cranmer executed? What had he been previously induced to do? Give an account of his death.—8. With what country was Philip II of Spain at war and what part was taken in the war by England? What loss was sustained by the English? How did it happen? In what year did this occur? How long had the English held this place?—9. Give an account of Queen Mary's latter days.—10. What was this Queen's strongest passion? What was the effect on her of her early misfortunes? In what year did the Emperor Charles V abdicate?

XLIX.

CHAPTER V.

1. Whose daughter was Queen Elizabeth? Where had she resided during the reign of her half sister Mary? What was one of the first measures of her reign? In what year was the restoration of Protestantism completed? By whose advice was Elizabeth guided? To what number were Cranmer's Forty two Articles reduced?—2. With what countries was Elizabeth's foreign policy chiefly concerned? What event united France and Scotland more closely than ever? On what ground did Mary Stuart, Queen of Scotland, claim the crown of England? How did Elizabeth act towards the Scottish Queen? What great struggle had commenced in France? Who was the leader of the Huguenots? By what means did Havre fall into the hands of the English? How long was it retained?—3. What were the peculiar opinions of the Puritans? What were the chief causes of the Puritan schism? What was the nature of these Acts? By what name are the Puritans often called?—4. For how many years was the Queen of Scotland a prisoner in

England? Give the date of her flight into England What nobleman offered her his hand in marriage? What were the consequences of this offer? What circumstances led to the death of this noble man?—5. What was the success of the attempts made to release the Queen of Scotland? Why did Elizabeth dread her escape? What was the nature of Antony Babington's scheme? By what means were the letters which passed between Babington's associates and the Scottish Queen placed in Walsingham's hands? What was the result?—6. Where was the trial of Queen Mary appointed to take place and before what tribunal? How did she act when on trial? What was the chief charge against her? What was the chief evidence against her? Were the original letters produced? What was her defence? Who were her advocates? How was her demand to be confronted with the witnesses met? What was the issue of her trial?—7. How was the warrant for her execution delayed? Who pleaded for her? Relate what you know of the death of Mary Queen of Scots What is your opinion of this act of Elizabeth?—8. Relate what you know of the discoveries of Drake, Hawkins, Frobisher, and Raleigh What other countries, besides England, were foremost in maritime enterprise? What iniquitous traffic began in this reign?—9. What was the greatest event of Elizabeth's reign? Who sent out the Invincible Armada? With what purpose? What was Philip's grand object? What other motives had he? What was the strength of the armament he sent out? What movement was made by the Duke of Parma simultaneously with the sailing of the Armada? Who was the admiral of this fleet? What was the strength of the royal navy of England at this time? To what was it raised by the exertions of the nobility and people? How did the Catholics of England act at this crisis? Who was admiral of the English fleet? How was the army divided?—10. Near what English sea-port was the Armada first descried? What appearance did it present? How did Effingham act on the approach of the Armada? In what direction did the Armada sail, and where did the Spaniards cast anchor? What prevented Parma from making his proposed movement? By what stratagem was the Armada thrown into disorder? What was the only homeward route open to them? State the result. How many vessels reached Spain?—11. For how many years did Cecil continue to be the chief adviser of Elizabeth? What office did he hold? In what year did his death occur? Who was Secretary of State? Who was the chief favourite of her middle life? What ambitious hope entered his mind? Name a story founded on this circumstance —12. Relate what you know of Elizabeth's second favourite, Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex In what year did he command at Cadiz? Describe his conduct in Ireland, and his return from that island In what year was he executed? Why? Relate the circumstances which are stated to have prevented the pardon of Essex, and to have caused the death of the Queen —13. What was the age of this monarch at the time of her decease?—14. What was the character of Queen Elizabeth? What proof of her wisdom was given on the occasion when the monopolies which she had granted were opposed by the Parliament? What does the author state to have been her great fault?—15. What great poets and philosophers flourished during this reign? Name their chief works —16. Name two important events which during this reign occurred on the Continent What advantage accrued to England from the severity of the Duke of Alva and the massacres which occurred in France?—17. Make a table of the Tudor Sovereigns, and state the length of each reign What are the dates of the Battles of Dreux, Lepanto, and Ivry, the Massacre of St Bartholomew, the Siege of Leyden, and the Edict of Nantes?

L.

Chapter VI.

Stuart Sovereigns of Scotland—Ireland

1. What was the origin of the Stuart line in Scotland? Who was the first King of the Stuart line? What famous battle was fought during his reign? Who were the opponents in this battle? What befel the Douglas? Who were the victors? In what year did the decease of Robert II occur? What kind of King was he?—2. Who succeeded to the throne? What name did he assume, and why? What was his character? Who during his reign conducted the affairs of State? What was the fate of David of Rothesay? What remarkable event occurred during this reign on the North Inch of Perth? What work is founded upon this incident? What mea-

sures were taken by the King to secure his son James from the machinations of Albany? Into whose hands did this prince fall? What was the effect of this loss on the King?—3. How many years did James remain in England? How long was Albany Regent? When did the martyrdom of John Resby occur, and where? What battle was fought in 1411? What was the scene of the battle, and between whom was it fought? Who won the victory? In what year did the death of Albany occur? To whom did he leave the Regency? What benefits had accrued to Prince James from his imprisonment in England? What was his chief poem? What was the condition of Scotland at the time of his liberation? Relate what you know of the measures taken by him to restore order and good government What saying on this subject is ascribed to him? What was the most dangerous part of his task? What was the date of his death and under what circumstances did it occur? Who was Paul Crawar? What university was founded in 1412?—4. What was the age of James II at the date of his father's death? By what surname was he known? Who contended for the custody of his person? What family finally gained the ascendency? Relate what you know of his reign What crime committed by this monarch led to a war with England, and to his own death? Describe an ancient cannon —5. How old was James III on his accession? What wise ruler took the helm at first? By what feuds was the land convulsed? What vice did James display? Describe the conduct of the nobles Who was their leader? Relate the events which ended in the King's death —6. Who succeeded him? What were the leading events of his reign? Describe the naval power of Scotland Who were the leading authors of the time? What events signalized 1502 and 1509? What was the immediate cause of the war which ended in the Battle of Flodden? Give a description of the battle What was the great mistake committed by James in this battle?—7. How old was James V on his accession? What poet was his tutor and custodian? By whom was he confined at Falkland, and how did he escape? Name the martyrs of St. Andrews Who was the second wife of King James V? What court was established in this reign? Give the date What poem commemorates the King's adventurous spirit? By what names did his people call him? What quarrel closed his reign? Describe the disaster of Solway Moss Where did he die? Who were the most prominent men in Scotland at this time? What led to the Battle of [illegible]m Moor? What led to Wishart's [illegible]? When was the Battle of Pinkie fought?—8 What was the disposition of the Scottish people towards their Queen? 9. When was John Knox born? What was the date of his secession from the Romish communion? Where was his first Protestant sermon preached? Where did he find a refuge, and what was the result? At whose request was he liberated from slavery? Whither did he flee in the reign of Mary I of England? Under what name did the Protestant nobles oppose Mary of Guise? Who was she? When did Knox return to Scotland, and on what day did he again mount the cathedral pulpit of St Andrews? What were the effects of his fiery declamations? What drew Mary's anger upon him?—10. What nobleman was the second husband of Mary Stuart? Relate what you know of David Rizzio What was the name of Mary's son, and in what year was he born? When and under what circumstances, was Darnley murdered? Who was suspected of the crime? Who was Mary's third husband? What was the result of her unpopularity? Where did she surrender to the insurgents? Where was she imprisoned? Whither did Bothwell flee, and what was his end?—11. Who became Regent of Scotland? What was the scene of Queen Mary's final struggle for her crown? What was her subsequent history?—12. What was the fate of Moray, "The Good Regent"? How long did he rule? What noblemen in succession held the Regency? When did John Knox die? By whom was King James VI educated? At what age did he begin to reign? What was the *Raid of Ruthven*? Whom did the King marry? What was the most striking event of his reign as King of Scotland? Relate what you know of this strange conspiracy Who ranks second to Knox among the Scottish Reformers? When did James succeed to the throne of England?—13. In whose reign did the Scotch obtain a footing in Ulster? Name the three hostile races then holding Ireland —14. What successful Viceroy ruled Ireland under Henry VI.? How did he appease the feuds of the nobles? How did the Irish display their affection for him? To what county was the English rule now con-

fined?—15. Did the Irish favour the Red or the White Rose faction? What pretenders made their first appearance in Ireland?—16. Describe Poynings' Law Give the date What was its effect, and why was it so named?—17. Who was Lord Deputy under Henry VII? Relate an anecdote showing his audacity and wit What victory did he gain in Galway?—18. Who were his sons? Which bore the name of "The Silken Knight"? Describe his career —19. What sides did the Irish Parliament and the Irish clergy take in the religious struggle of the times? Where was O Neill defeated?—20. What title did Henry VIII then assume? What title was given to O'Neill? Name some churches which were ruined by the Reformers —21. What was the chief event in Ireland under Mary? What names were given to the confiscated territory?—22. When was the conquest of Ireland completed? Describe Shane O'Neill's visit to London Why did he revolt? What led to his death?—23. Who led the rebels in the south? Where was he defeated? What celebrated Englishman received grants of his land?—24. Describe the rule of Perrott What was the date of the foundation of Dublin University?—25. Who now rose in revolt in the north? Whom did Elizabeth send to take command in Ireland? How did he act?—26. What general finally subdued Ireland? How did he weaken O Neill? To what country did the rebel chief look for aid? Why could only slight aid be given? How many foreign soldiers landed? When? Describe the issue What brought O'Neill to submission? Give the dates of the rebellion

LI.

Chapter VII.

Social Condition of the People under the Tudors

1. In the reign of Henry VIII what was the average number of persons annually hanged for robbery? To what number was this list of executions reduced in the reign of Queen Elizabeth? To what was this remarkable change probably owing? When was the first law to relieve the poor passed? What was then the population of England? What was the Queen's revenue? What was the highest legal interest? In whose reign were crowns, half-crowns, and sixpences first issued?—2. Why was the Tudor style of architecture also called Florid? Mention a famous ecclesiastical building which is a good example of this style What improvements were made in domestic architecture during this period? Describe the dwellings of the poor When did chimneys begin to be built? Quote a description by Erasmus of the floors of the poorer houses What was the effect of these uncleanly habits? Of what material chiefly were houses built in Elizabeth's time? What changes were made in furniture, &c? What vehicles first came into use about the year 1580? How had ladies been accustomed before this date to travel?—3. During the Tudor Period what improvements were made in farming and gardening? What vegetables, fruits, &c, were introduced? Whence were potatoes brought, and by whom? In what English county were they first planted? By whom were they introduced into Ireland? What other plant was introduced by him? At what price were beef, mutton veal and pork sold during the reign of Henry VIII? At what season of the year was fresh meat eaten? What were the social customs of the period? By what were masters and servants divided at table? In what style did the noblemen live? Quote two examples in support of your assertion —4. What was the costume of country people at this time? By whom were pins introduced? What absurd fashion was occasioned by the corpulence of Henry VIII? Whence does the expression "pin money" arise? What was the farthingale? Whence and when was it introduced? What do you know of the ruffs worn at this period? What change did Queen Elizabeth make in her costume from the third year of her reign? How many dresses were found in her wardrobe at the time of her death? What description of this Queen is given by Hentzner? How did the gentlemen of this period wear their hair? What kind of beards were in fashion? What invention, &c; supplied materials for stocking-weaving and the making of sail cloth? How were the woollen manufactures improved?—5. What have you to observe concerning the tournament during this period? What was the boot-joust? What have you to say of the horse-races of the Tudor Period? What of hunting and hawking, bear baiting and bull baiting? What was the favourite time for these amusements? What were the principal country sports?

What game was the original form of cricket?—6. Within doors what was the chief game? How was it played? What other games were practised? At what time did the dancing parties cease? What were the fashionable musical instruments?—7. What was the great season of sports? Describe the festivities and masquerades of the season. Who led the sports? What did the "mummers" wear? Describe the festivities observed on May day. What was the morris dance, and whence probably derived? How were the dancers dressed? What was the hobby-horse?—8. What three forms of superstition influenced the minds of the people during this period? What fatal consequences resulted from the popular belief in Witchcraft? What were the objects of Alchemy? How did these phases of superstition benefit science?—9. Which of our Kings is stated to have laid the foundation of our navy and commerce? When did our Russian trade begin? When did our early commerce receive its mightiest impulse? When was the charter of the East India Company granted? What measures were taken by Queen Elizabeth to improve the commerce of England?—10. What remarkable feature of this period was owing chiefly to the Reformation? What distinguished scholar was Professor of Greek at Oxford during the reign of Henry VIII? What were the literary attainments of the Tudor monarchs? What remark did Ascham make concerning Elizabeth? By whom was Christ's Hospital founded? What public school was about the same time founded by Sheriffe? What language was spoken and written in England during the reigns of the first four Tudors. What change took place in the language about the time of Elizabeth's reign? What were Interludes? Who was the most successful writer of these? Draw the genealogical tree connecting the Tudors with the Stuarts.—11. Who wrote the *Life of Edward V*, the *Book of Martyrs*, *Arcadia*, the *Ecclesiastical Polity*, the *Jew of Malta*, *Novum Organum*, and the *Dance of the Seven Sins*?—12. Name with dates, the chief works of Tyndale, Sackville, Spenser, Raleigh, and Gavin Douglas.—13. Who painted the Tudor monarchs? Who were the three great Italian painters about 1500?—14. Give the dates of the Battles of Flodden and Pinkie, the Execution of Mary Stuart, the Disgrace of Wolsey, the Loss of Calais, the Defeat of the Armada. Give a complete chronology of the Reformation in England.

STUART PERIOD

LII.

CHAPTER I.

1. What was the nature of James the First's claim to the English crown? What measures did he take to please his new subjects?—2. Into what three great parties was the English nation at this period divided? On what grounds did each of these parties anticipate favour from the hands of King James? What was the intention of James as to the religion of England?—3. How did this monarch act at the conference of 1604 at Hampton Court? What was almost the only good fruit of this conference? How many persons were employed on this work? How did the type of this translation differ from that of preceding versions?—4. What conspiracy against the King and Government was made in the year 1605? Who were the chief conspirators? How long were they at work? What measures were taken to insure the destruction of the heads of the nation? How was the plot discovered? What penal laws were inflicted in consequence of this plot? What day had been fixed for the commission of the crime?—5. What was the great object of James in his government of Scotland? With what success did he meet? What wise measures were taken by his orders in the north of Ireland?—6. Who were the principal favourites of King James?—7. On what charge had Sir Walter Raleigh been committed to the Tower? How long did he remain in prison? What was his occupation while there? How far does this work extend? What means did he take to procure his freedom? What was the result of his expedition? How was he dealt with on his return?—8. Who became Chancellor in 1616? For what books was he celebrated? What charge was brought against him? What sentence was passed upon him?—9. What great contest began in this reign? What was the ruling passion of the Stuarts? How were the clergy affected towards the King? What was the doctrine of Cowell's book, and how did the Parliament act with regard to it? What was the result of this opposition in Parlia-

ment? What were the great "abuses" complained of by the Commons? How have the Commons power to check the King? How did James succeed in filling his purse notwithstanding this check? What new title was created at this time? —10. What was the sorest subject of contention? Who was the promoter of the match? What was the object of James in pressing this marriage? What was the feeling of the nation respecting it? How did the Parliament act? What followed their third remonstrance?—11. How was the match between Prince Charles and the Infanta broken off? Whom did he eventually marry? What was the result of the Spanish alliance being refused?—12. What was the immediate cause of the Thirty Years' War? What slight connection had James I with the contest? In what year did it terminate?—13. When did James die? Which of his children survived him? What marriage was made by his daughter Elizabeth? What were his character and personal appearance? When and by whom were logarithms invented? Who discovered the circulation of the blood? Give, with dates the leading foreign events during this reign

LIII.

CHAPTER II

1. What was the age of Charles I at the date of his accession to the throne? Who was his Queen? What reply was made by the Parliament to this monarch's first demand for supplies? How did Charles receive this refusal to comply with his demand? What three things did he do? Who were his chief advisers? What was the influence of his Queen on his destinies? What is meant by tonnage and poundage? —2. In what year was Charles the First's second Parliament called? What occurred in connection with its sitting?—3. How was the French war brought on? What was a chief object of Cardinal Richelieu's government? Where is La Rochelle? What was the success of Buckingham's first expedition? What was the date of this nobleman's death, and under what circumstances did it occur? Who led the fleet to La Rochelle? What was the date of the fall of this fortress?—4. When was the third Parliament of Charles I called? What famous Petition was drawn up by the Commons in this year? What were the chief provisions of this law? How did Charles receive the Petition? What supplies were granted him by the Commons? For how long did the King observe the restrictions laid on him by the Petition of Right? What member of the Commons died in prison?—5. How did the Commons act on the King's infringement of his promise? How were their remonstrances met by the King? What followed?—6. For how many years was the country ruled by the King without a Parliament? Who were his principal advisers during these years? What part had Wentworth taken at first in politics? What was Wentworth's scheme of "Thorough"? In what country was this scheme tried, and with what success? What do you know of Laud?—7. What three unlawful tribunals were directed chiefly by these two ministers? What do you know of these three courts?—8. What was the most notorious of the illegal taxes levied by Charles? What was its origin? When and by whose advice was this tax revived? What peculiar hardships attended its revival, and why was it illegal? How did the resistance to this tax commence? Where was the case tried, and with what result? In what year did this occur?—9. Relate what you know of the Puritan emigration In what year did the voyage of the *Mayflower* take place? What three remarkable men were prevented by Government from joining in this movement?—10. What was the policy of Charles towards Scotland? What appointment was made by him during his visit to Scotland in 1633? What was the consequence of his order that a Service Book should be read in the churches of Edinburgh? How was this order enforced? What was the National Covenant? In what year was it signed by the Scottish nation? What were the proceedings of the General Assembly held at Glasgow?—11. When was the fourth Parliament of Charles I. called? What impeded the King in putting down the Scottish opposition to his orders? How did this fourth Parliament act towards the King? What was Charles's next resource? How did the Lords act under these circumstances? What events had meanwhile taken place in the north?—12. When did the fifth Parliament of this reign begin to sit? By what name is it known? For how many years did this Parliament exist? What events marked its first session? Who led the impeachment? What was the charge? What was the result of the impeachment?

What decided Charles to sign the warrant? When did Strafford's death occur? What was the fate of Laud?—13. What covenant did Charles make with the Irish people early in his reign? Describe the reaction in Ireland resulting from Strafford's policy in that country Who was the leader of the plot and what was its chief aim? Where did the rebellion chiefly rage? State its events. What benefits did Strafford confer on Ireland?—14. What political parties appeared about this time? What classes of people were in favour of the King? Who were on the other side? By what names were these parties respectively known? What were and are essentially the principles of these parties, and by what names have they in later times been known?—15. What was the date of the first pitched battle between these two parties in the House of Commons? To what resolution did the House come? What were the proceedings of Charles? What tyrannical order was made by the King early in 1642? What were the names of these members and how did the Commons act towards the King? What did he do? What were the effects of the King's violent proceedings? Whither did Charles go, and whither did his Queen flee?—16. What demand of the Commons, refused by the King led to the civil war? When were the gates of Hull shut upon him? When and where was the royal standard unfurled? How many men gathered round it?—17. What was the character respectively of the antagonist armies? What advantage had the Commons? Who were the leaders of the rival forces? Who led the Royalist cavalry?—18. Where and when was the first battle fought? Where did Charles establish his headquarters during the winter? By what three events was the campaign of 1643 marked? What was the date of the Battle of Newbury? What leader of the Parliamentary cause fell early in the war? Where and how did this occur?—19. Who was Oliver Cromwell? What were his rank and his age when the Battle of Edge Hill was fought? What was his personal appearance? What measures were taken by him for improving the army of the Parliament? What was his regiment called?—20. What accession did the Parliamentary cause receive early in 1644? Whence did Charles receive some trifling aid? What was the success of the Parliamentary forces in the south? What great victory was obtained by them in the north? To whom was the victory due? What was the date of this battle? What was the immediate result of this victory? When was the second Battle of Newbury fought?—21. Of what religious party was Oliver Cromwell the chief? What were the tenets of this party? What were their political views? By what nickname were they known? When was the Self denying Ordinance passed, and what was it? Who was made commander in chief of the Parliamentary army? Who was in reality the general of the entire army? What was his title?—22. What do you know of Cromwell's army?—23. Which was the decisive battle of the civil war? When was it fought? What was the success of the Royalist arms in Scotland? Where and by whom was Montrose finally defeated? Whither did King Charles flee?—24. Into what two factions had the Parliament resolved itself during the war? Upon what condition did the Scots offer to support the fallen monarch? What stipulation was made by the Scottish Presbyterians on giving up the person of the King?—25. Where and by whom was the King seized? Where was he eventually confined What measures were taken by the Scots and the Royalists of Essex and Kent? Give an account of Cromwell's proceedings Where did he defeat Hamilton?—26. How were the threatening murmurs of the Presbyterian party in the House of Commons met by Cromwell? What national crime was then resolved on? Do you consider Cromwell to have voluntarily sacrificed the King's life? State Macaulay's view —27 By what court was Charles I tried? Where did the trial take place? How was the court constituted? Who was the president? Who acted as solicitor for the nation? What charge was brought against Charles? What was the carriage of the King during this trial? For how many days did the case proceed? What was the sentence of the court?—28. When and where was the King beheaded? By whom was he attended? Give a description of the circumstances attending his death Give the names of nine Kings of England who between the years 1066 and 1649, met violent deaths —29. Mention the names of the children of this monarch —30. What was the character of Charles I.? What were his leading political motives? What was his most fatal vice? What was his personal ap-

pearance?—31. What taxes were first imposed on the country by the Parliament in order to meet the expenses of the civil war? What famous Dutch painters were patronized by Charles? What improvements took place in this reign?—32. Make a list of the battles of the civil war their dates, leaders and results —33. Draw a map of England, and mark on it the sites of the leading battles and sieges in the civil war —34. Make a list of the most eminent men on each side in the contest with the King —35. What celebrated King of Sweden was contemporary with Charles? —36. Name six chief events in the Thirty Years' War

LIV.

CHAPTER III.

1. On the death of Charles I what kind of government was established? How long did the new form exist? Where was the government vested? Who was the President of the Council? Who was the Foreign Secretary? Who directed the army? What post was occupied by Sir Harry Vane? Who were in reality the rulers of the nation? How was the Duke of Hamilton treated?—2. Who were the Levellers, and how were they treated by Cromwell?—3. Relate what you know of the subjugation of Ireland Who was the leader of the Irish Royalists? What three cities were the only strongholds of the Parliament? Who was appointed, by the Parliament, Lord Lieutenant of Ireland? By what means was the country subdued? What was the chief operation of the war? Name two other towns which suffered heavily Who were left in charge of the conquered island?—4. How was Cromwell received on his return to England? What title did he receive from the Parliament? How had the Scottish nation acted on the death of Charles I? What was the success of the expedition of the Marquis of Montrose? Where did Charles II land in Scotland? What was the date of his landing? How were the forces of the Parliament under Cromwell met by the Scots? Who was the leader of the Scottish army? Where was the decisive battle fought? What was the date of this battle? What mistake on the part of the Scotch gave the victory to Cromwell? What important cities immediately submitted to Cromwell?—5. When was Charles II crowned in Scotland? What document did he sign? What movement did Cromwell make? What did the Scots immediately do? Where did Cromwell overtake and defeat them? What name did Cromwell apply to his victory? What was the date of this battle? Give a narrative of the subsequent adventures of the King before his arrival in France Where did he embark? Under whom was Scotland placed?—6. What war ensued? What was the prize disputed? What were the names of the Dutch admirals? What English admiral was opposed to them? What victory was gained by the English in 1652? Why did the Parliament refuse to terminate the war with Holland? What decisive step was resolved on by Cromwell? Give a description of the dismissal of the Long Parliament What was the date of this event?—7. What assembly succeeded the Long Parliament? By what nickname was it known? On its dissolution, in whom did the supreme power centre?—8. Under what title did Cromwell conduct his government? What document created the office? Describe his installation What plan of government does he seem to have formed? What thwarted this scheme? What time elapsed before his second Parliament was called?—9. When was the Dutch War brought to an end? Mention an important condition of the treaty of peace For what was the foreign policy of Cromwell remarkable? What conquest was made in 1655? Mention other important successes of the English arms and policy abroad What French fortress was ceded to England, and by whom? Name a signal victory of Blake —10. What was the principal support of Cromwell at home? What was the success of his attempt to restore the House of Lords? Whom did he place upon its benches? What proposal was made by his second House of Commons? What right did he content himself with? Did the Commons acknowledge his newly created peers? State the result —11. What troubles clouded Cromwell's closing days? When did his death occur? Why was the day a remarkable coincidence? What was the name of his wife? What were the names of his children?—12. What were the predominant features in Cromwell's character? What was his personal appearance?—13. Who succeeded to the Protectorate? In how many months did he resign? What was the date of his death? What was his character?—14. How did

General Monk's act? Describe the condition of the Parliament —15. Of what did the new Parliament consist? What should the assembly be more correctly called? By whose means was Charles II restored to his throne?—16. What two Puritan sects deserve notice? Who founded the Society of Friends or Quakers? What are their peculiarities?

LV.

CHAPTER IV.

1. When was Charles II proclaimed King of England? Where did he land? How was he received by the English people? By what historical name is this event known?—2. Who was made Lord Chancellor? By what marriage had he become closely connected with the Royal Family?—3. What were the early acts of Charles the Second's reign? What Church was restored? How were the bodies of Cromwell, Ireton, and Bradshaw treated? What was the fate of the Marquis of Argyle? With what title was General Monk rewarded?—4. What was the condition of religious affairs in England? Who were the *Triers?* What was the Act of Uniformity? What was the Corporation Act?—5. What grant was made to Charles II by his first Parliament? How did Charles provide for the support of his authority?—6. What were the habits of this monarch? Whom did he marry? What dowry did he receive? What fortress was sold by him to the French? Into what war did he plunge for the sake of the supplies voted by Parliament?—7. How was the war with Holland conducted? Name a victory gained by the Duke of York In what condition was the English fleet sent out? To what unprecedented humiliation was England subjected? What was the date of this event?—8. What terrible calamity occurred in the year 1665? What marked the infected dwellings? What was the estimated mortality?—9. What event distinguished the following year? On what day did the fire break out? Where did it begin? How long did it last? What was the extent of the ruin? What beneficial results were occasioned by this fire? Who was the architect of St Paul's Cathedral? What monument of the Great Fire still remains?—10. What restrictions had Cromwell placed on amusement? What was the natural result, when the bonds were relaxed? What was the condition of the Court? the Parliament? the Theatre?—11. What was now the subject of strife in Ireland? What son of the Protector had been Lord-Lieutenant? To whom had lands been assigned? What change did Charles propose to make? What Act was passed? State the result —12. What was the policy of Charles towards Scotland? Who was made Archbishop of St Andrews? Who was made Chief Commissioner? Why did both hate the Covenanters? What measures were taken to force Episcopacy on the Scottish people? When did the rising of the Kirkcudbright peasantry occur? What battle was fought? Describe the "boot," an instrument of torture What is meant by a "conventicle"?—13. How did Lord Clarendon lose the favour of the King? What was he accused of? Whither did he flee? What work employed him in exile? When and where did he die?—14. What was the object of the Triple Alliance? Who formed it? What is the "Balance of Power"? How was it regarded by the English people? What disgraceful compact with the French King was made by Charles? By whom were the secret negotiations between the two courts conducted? What title was bestowed on this woman by Charles? What were the principal terms of the secret Treaty of Dover? When was it signed?—15. Give the names of the five ministers who composed the infamous Cabal.—16. In what year was the Dutch War renewed? Relate what you know of this war In what year was peace made? Where was the treaty of peace signed? Mention the different wars with the Dutch during the century, their dates, leading features, and results —17. What disgraceful act was perpetrated by Charles in 1672? What was the result of this act on the trade of the country?—18. What state of public feeling was indicated by the passing of the Test Act? When did this occur? Against whom was this Act specially levelled?—19. Give an account of the Popish Plot Describe the personal appearance of Oates. What was his character? What circumstances apparently confirmed the testimony of this infamous man? How was he rewarded? What was the state of public feeling after Oates had come forward with his story of this plot? What venerable nobleman was judicially murdered in consequence?—20. After the dissolution of the Cabal, who was ap-

pointed Prime Minister? How was his downfall hastened? Who then became the confidant of Charles? What was his favourite scheme? How did this plan work? What do you know of Viscount Halifax? What is a *Trimmer*?—21. On what day did the Habeas Corpus Act receive the royal assent? What provision does this Act make for the liberty of the subject? State some earlier instances of despotic imprisonment For how many years had Charles the Second's first Parliament sat? When was it dissolved?—22. What was the success of the Bill brought into Parliament to exclude the Duke of York from the succession? Whose oratory threw out the Bill in the Lords?—23. What party nicknames had their origin in this reign? Explain the terms, and state their probable origin —24. What was the condition of Scotland at this time? Who presided at the council table? What was the grievance of the "Highland host'? Give an account of the murder of Archbishop Sharp Where did this occur? Relate the incidents of Drumclog and Bothwell Bridge Who were the *Cameronians*? Who succeeded Lauderdale? Mention one of his favourite amusements What became of many of the Covenanters?—25. What was the nature of the Rye house Plot? What two popular men were beheaded on the discovery of this plot? How did Charles rule during the remainder of his reign? — 26. In what communion did this monarch die? What was the cause of his death? Did he leave a child to inherit his throne?—27. What was probably the only good point in Charles the Second's disposition? What were the prominent features of his character? Name some of his amusements —28. When was the Royal Society founded? What two words, ever since in common use, sprang from the tumults and impostures of this reign? What public service was rendered to London by William Dockwray? Mention the newspapers which, during this reign, were the organs of the Government Who was the editor?—29 Give the dates of the murder of the De Witts, and the defeat of the Turks at Vienna.

LVI.

CHAPTER V.

1 What promise was made by James II in his speech from the throne when he met his Parliament? What were the religious principles of this monarch? What was the state of public feeling towards him? What yearly revenue was voted him by the Commons?—2 What country was the refuge of the Rye house conspirators? What two enterprises were resolved on by them?—3. Where did Argyle land? What was the success of his summons? Where was his army scattered, and where was he made prisoner? What was his fate?—4. When and where did Monmouth land? With what reception did he meet? In what town did he assume the title of King? Detail his military operations Where was the battle fought which decided Monmouth's fate?—5. Describe this battle What unforeseen hindrance led to the defeat of Monmouth? Where was Monmouth captured? What was his fate? —6. To whom was the punishment of the rebels first intrusted? Who was his successor? What name has been given to the assize which he opened at Winchester? What was the first trial for treason? What was the estimated number of Jeffreys' victims?—7. What was the grand design of James? How did he set at nought the Test Act? By what means did he release all Roman Catholics from penalties? Under whose control was the Church placed by him? What measures were taken by him for coercing the nation into submission? Who was the King's confidential adviser? Under whom was Scotland placed? What appointment was given to Tyrconnel? By what nickname was Tyrconnel known? How did the King treat the sons of Edward Hyde, Earl of Clarendon?—8 What were the proceedings of James against the University of Cambridge? Whom did he appoint to the vacant presidency of Magdalene College, Oxford? Who was chosen by the Fellows? What was the result?—9 When was the first Declaration of Indulgence published? Why was it illegal? What permission was given by it? When was the second Declaration proclaimed? What Order in Council followed a week later? How was this Order received by the clergy? What was the result? Who drew up a petition against it? What was the popular opinion concerning the son born about this time to the King?—10. Before what court did the trial of the Seven Bishops take place? What was the charge against them? Detail the incidents of the trial What was the opinion of the judges? When did the jury retire? When

was their verdict given? What was it? How was the verdict received by the populace?—11 By whose advice did James bring into England several regiments of Irish soldiers? What was the name of the doggrel ballad which inflamed the whole nation against James and his Irish troops? —12 What important document was transmitted on the day of the acquittal of the Seven Bishops? How was this Petition received? Who warned James? When did he awake to the sense of his danger? How did he act? What forces did he possess? What were the feelings of the nation?—13. Where did the Prince of Orange land? Give an account of his march towards Exeter What was the date of his landing? What nobleman was the first to desert from James? By whom was he followed? Whither did the King hasten, and with what purpose? What was William's policy? What seaport was put into William's hands by the Earl of Bath? How did Lord Churchill act? Who followed his example?—14 How did James attempt his flight? What childish act is recorded of him? How was his flight arrested? What was the success of his second attempt? How was he received by the French monarch? How was the Prince of Orange received in London?—15. How was the assembly called by William styled? In what did it differ from a Parliament? What were the proceedings of this assembly? What were the terms of the Declaration of Rights? What nobleman took the lead in offering the crown to William?—16. How did the great Revolution terminate?—17 Where, and in what circumstances, did James spend the remaining years of his life? When did his death occur? What was his character? What was the name of his first wife? What were the names of her daughters? Who was the second wife of James? What was the name of his son?—18. What were the chief advantages of the great Revolution?—19. In what year was the Edict of Nantes revoked?

LVII.

CHAPTER VI.

1. When was King William III born? When was he elected King? What was the date of the birth of Queen Mary II? Where were these monarchs crowned? What was the fate of Jeffreys?—2. Who was the leader of the Scottish insurrection? What nobleman held out against William in the Castle of Edinburgh? What was the result of the insurrection? Where and under what circumstances did the death of Claverhouse occur?—3 How did the Irish revolt commence? What was the first great operation of the Roman Catholic army? How was the siege raised? How long had it lasted? Where did William land? What was his force? Where was the decisive battle fought? What heavy loss was sustained by William? When was the battle fought? After the flight of James who carried on the war? Who was slain at the Battle of Aughrim? Where was the last stand of James's army made? Where was the treaty signed which made William unquestioned King of Ireland? What severe measures followed?—4 Relate what you know of the Massacre of Glencoe and the circumstances which led to it When did this occur?—5 What was the great object of William's foreign policy? How were Louis's preparations for the invasion of England defeated? In what three engagements of the war did William gain renown? How and when was the war brought to a close?—6 How did the National Debt arise? How did the Commons during this reign acquire increased influence?—7. When did the death of Queen Mary occur? What three remarkable steps were taken during the next eight years by the Commons, in their encroachments on the power of the Crown? Give a full account of each —8 What colony was founded in 1698? By whom was it founded? How was this enterprise defeated?—9 When did the death of William III occur? What was the cause of his death? Where did he die?—10 Give a general account of his life and character Who was his most intimate friend? What was his personal appearance?—11. When and by whom was the Bank of England founded? What was its capital? Who founded the Bank of Scotland? What hospitals were founded by William and Mary? What continental monarch during this reign worked as a ship carpenter in the dockyard at Deptford?—12 Give the dates of the Battle of Narva and the Grand Alliance

LVIII.

CHAPTER VII.

1. When was Queen Anne born? What was the date of her accession to the

throne? Who was her husband? What party was in power at the date of her accession?—2. What was the cause of the war of the Spanish Succession? What nations united to defeat the machinations of Louis? Who led the allied armies? What were the chief theatres of the war? What was an early important achievement of the war? By whom was this effected? What was the date of this event?—3. What four great battles were gained by Marlborough? What were the dates of these victories? What were the four chief incidents of the war in Spain? What treaty closed the war? Give the date.—4. Who were the principal Whig ministers of Anne? What were the two great questions between the Whig and Tory parties at this time? What was the object of the Occasional Conformity Bill? What was its success?—5. What circumstances led to the union of Scotland with England? What was the *Act of Security*? How was the union effected? What were the six chief terms of the union? When did this important event occur?—6 What has been the effect of the union on Scottish interests? How did Louis XIV take advantage of the discontent excited in Scotland by the union? What was the result of this expedition?—7. By whose means had the Whigs retained their ascendency over the Queen? Who supplanted this lady in the Queen's favour? What were the politics of this woman? Name one of the earliest results of her influence.—8 Who was Sacheverell? By what means did he render himself liable to an impeachment by the Commons? How long did the trial last? How was this turbulent person encouraged? What was his punishment?—9. What was the immediate result of this trial? Who came into office? What accusation was brought against Marlborough? Whither did he retire? What was his character?—10. What were the principal terms of the Treaty of Utrecht? When Harley and St John differed, which did Anne favour?—11 What important question was debated in Parliament in the year 1713? What was the result of the debate?—12 When did the death of Queen Anne occur? What was the cause of her death? How many children had she? What were her character and personal appearance?—13. What occurred on the Eddystone Rock in 1703? When was St Paul's Cathedral finished? What was the cost of building it? Mention the chief literary characters of this reign.—14. Give the dates of the War of the Spanish Succession, and of the Battle of Pultowa.

LIX.

CHAPTER VIII.

Social Condition of the People under the Stuarts

1. What was the general appearance of the country during the Stuart Period? Mention some wild animals common in England at this time What was the average price of a horse? What were the breeds most prized? What foreign horses were in use? What do you know of the working of our mines during the Stuart Period? Where was coal in use?—2. What was the population of England at the close of the seventeenth century? What cause is assigned for the greater increase of population in the northern counties than in the southern? What had been the condition of the Border counties previously to 1603?—3 What was the second sea-port of the kingdom? Which was the chief manufacturing town? What business throve most at Bristol? What was the population of Manchester about this time?—of Leeds and of Sheffield? What do you know of Birmingham and Liverpool? Which were the fashionable watering-places?—4. What was the population of London at the death of Charles II.? How many bridges were there? Give a description of the metropolis at this period. When were the streets of London first lighted? What dangers beset the streets at night? When were the coffee-houses set up? Why are these houses of importance in the history of the Stuart Period?—5. What do you know of the country gentry? What were the wines drunk by the wealthy? What were the accomplishments of the ladies? By whom and when was tea introduced into England? When did this beverage begin to be used daily by the middle classes? At what hour was the meal taken in the city of Edinburgh during the reigns of the Georges? What name was given to the meal? What were the leading principles of the British national character?—6. What was the condition of the country clergy? What was a *Levite*? What of the London clergy?—7. What was the average income of the yeomen or small farmers? What were their chief characteristics?—

8. What was the condition of the labouring classes? In what counties were the highest wages paid? What was the average pay of an agricultural labourer? What were the weekly earnings of those engaged in manufactures?• What was the chief food of the poor? What means of complaint were open to the poor? What was the proportion of the pauper class to the rest of the community? —9 Compare the average mortality in London during the year 1685 and at the present period What reasons can you assign for the difference? What was the moral condition of the people?—10 Describe briefly the costume of a Cavalier and of a Roundhead What head dress was introduced by Charles II ?—11. What was the condition of the roads? How did the middle class travel? How did the rich travel? In how many hours was the journey from Oxford to London accomplished by "The Flying Coach" in 1669? What was the time occupied in a winter journey from Chester, York, or Exeter to London? What have you to remark concerning the inns? To what do we owe the improvement of our roads since this period? What were the postal arrangements? What was the chief danger of travelling?—12. Describe the newspapers of the period What was the *News Letter*? Where were the chief printing presses of the country? Where was the only press north of the Trent? What was the state of learning? Who was the first astronomer royal? To whom did Natural Philosophy owe its birth as a science? What was the favourite study of the latter Stuart days?—13 Name the chief works of Drayton, Ben Jonson, James I of England, Walton, Clarendon, Baxter, Otway, Locke —14. Who wrote *Nymphidia River of Forth Feasting, Leviathan, Lycidas, Areopagitica, Hudibras, Absalom and Achitophel, John Bull*?—15 Name the architect and painter of the Banqueting House at Whitehall, the architect of St Paul s, and the chief painters under Charles II and Queen Anne —16 Give the dates of five celebrated trials belonging to this period Name, with dates, seven important Acts passed during this period Name, with dates, the three chief battles of the Civil War Give the dates of the Battles of Dunbar, Sedgemoor, Boyne, Blenheim, Almanza, La Hogue —17. Draw out the Tree of Genealogy connecting the Houses of Stuart and of Brunswick.

GUELPH PERIOD.

LX.

CHAPTER I.

1. Write out the heads of the chapter, with dates In what year was King George I born? Of what country was he Elector? Who were his parents? What was his claim to the throne? What was the name of his wife? How did he act towards this princess? What party in the State was favoured by this monarch? What two main principles guided his policy? Who were the *Jacobites*?—2. What committee of the House of Commons sat in 1715? Who was the chairman of the committee? What was the age of this minister? To what post had he been appointed in 1708? What measures were taken against the Tory leaders? What became of Harley, Earl of Oxford? How did Ormond and Bolingbroke act?—3. What was the feeling of the nation? How was it shown? What measures were immediately taken by the Government? What enactment was made with reference to riots? What price was set upon the head of the Chevalier de St George called the Pretender?—4. How were the brightest hopes of the Pretender blasted? How did the rebellion commence in Scotland? Who headed the movement in the north of England? What successes were gained by the royal troops, November 13, 1715?—5. Where did the Pretender land in Scotland? By what names was he known? How did he act? On hearing of the advance of Argyle, what proceedings did he take? What was the fate of the Jacobite leaders?—6. What was the most remarkable constitutional change of this reign? When was this Act passed? Why is it a wholesome statute?—7. How did George I embroil himself with Sweden? What event saved England from invasion? What was the Quadruple Alliance? What naval success was obtained by England? What was the end of the war? Who was the Spanish minister at this time? What expedition did he send out?—8. When was the Convocation of the English clergy dissolved? To whom is the political influence of the English Church now chiefly confined?—9. What scheme was the ruin of thousands by its failure in 1719? Who originated it? What was the condition of the English nation in the following year?

What was the amount of the National Debt at this time? Give an account of the South Sea Scheme, and its failure. What ruined the company?—10. How did Walpole endeavour to save the public credit? What ministers resigned office? Who became Chancellor of the Exchequer? How many years did he retain the office? In what did his chief talent lie?—11. What occasioned the banishment of Atterbury, Bishop of Rochester? What unimportant war commenced in the year 1727? What rival had the East India Company?—12. Where did the death of George I take place? What was the cause of his death? What was the date of it? Who were his children?—13. What was this monarch's character? What was his personal appearance? What are the most noteworthy points of progress during this reign?—14. Who was Czar of Russia during this reign? Give the dates of the Treaty of Nystadt and the Pragmatic Sanction?—15. What were the chief works of Newton, Defoe, Swift, Addison, Steele, and Pope?

LXI.

Chapter II

1. Give a list with dates, of the leading events of this reign. What was the age of George II at the date of his accession to the English throne? Who was his wife? What was her character? What political party was in the ascendant at this time?—2. Who was Prime Minister during the first fifteen years of this reign? What were his character and habits? What was the secret of his long reign as Premier?—3. In what year was a new charter granted to the East India Company? What sum was paid by this Company for the charter? When was the first charter granted? What was the most noticeable point in Walpole's career? When was this Bill introduced? What was the object of it? How was the Bill met, and why was it withdrawn? What attempt was unsuccessfully made in the following year by the Opposition?—4. What were the Porteous riots? When did they occur? What were the results?—5. When did Queen Caroline's death occur? What were the immediate causes of Walpole's fall? Who were the *Patriots*?—6. How was the Spanish War occasioned? What did Walpole say when war was declared? What were the chief events of this war? Describe the expedition of Anson. How was he received in England?—7. What religious sect arose during this reign? Who was the founder of the body? By whom was he aided?—8. In what year did Walpole resign office? With what title did he retire to his country seat? By whom was he succeeded? Who then took office? How long did they hold it? What Continental war occurred during their administration? What circumstances occasioned this war? What was the *Pragmatic Sanction*? Which side was taken by the British? Name the last battle at which a British sovereign commanded in person. What battle was fought two years after? What was the issue of the war? In what year did the death of Maria Theresa occur?—9. What troubles occurred in Britain during the year 1745? Where did the young prince land in Scotland? What was his age? How many adherents had he? Where was his standard raised? With what force was his southward march commenced? Where was he proclaimed Regent? How did he approach Edinburgh? How was he received at Edinburgh? What was the date of his entrance into the capital of Scotland? Where did he reside?—10. By whose forces was Edinburgh threatened? What victory was gained by the young prince on September 21? Describe the battle.—11. What was the number of the young Pretender's troops about six weeks after the Battle of Prestonpans? How had the King's forces been reinforced during these six weeks? What was the conduct of Prince Charles?—12. How did he enter England? How far did his army advance southward? What caused his retreat? Where was he finally routed? Describe the battle.—13. Whither did Charles flee? What reward was offered for his head? For how long did he remain in Britain? What lady aided him in his flight? Where did he finally re-embark? Where did he land in France? What were the results of the failure of his expedition? Draw on the map of Britain a line denoting Charles's route from the time of his landing to his defeat at Culloden?—14. Where were the latter days of the young prince spent? By what title was he known? In what year did his death occur? Who was the last male heir of the Stuart line? When did his death take place?—15. When was the Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle concluded? What was the result of the disbanding of the army which

had been engaged in the Continental war?—16. Who was the Great Commoner? Where was he educated? In what year was he first returned as a member of Parliament? What post did he hold in the army? What was the occasion of his dismissal? What office did he obtain under the Pelhams? How was he distinguished as a statesman? What were his oratorical powers? By what malady was he tormented?—17. Under whose administration did the Seven Years' War begin? Give the date of its opening What were the causes of the war? What war grew out of this? What was the subject of dispute? Where was the strife carried on?—18. When did Pitt become Secretary of State? For how long was he Minister? What occurred during his ministry? What occurred on his dismissal from office?—19. What European nations had founded colonies in Hindostan? What was the central station of the French in India? Who was governor of this colony? What scheme was formed by him? What means did he take towards carrying out this scheme? By whom was his tide of conquest turned? When had he joined the army? How did he soon distinguish himself? How did he obtain complete command of the Carnatic? What was his most remarkable achievement? Relate the circumstances of the tragedy of "the Black Hole at Calcutta In what great battle was Surajah Dowlah defeated? What was the result of this battle? In what year was it fought?—20. What possessions were held by the British and French respectively on the North American Continent? What chain of forts did the French attempt to establish? What led to the conquest of Canada? What British general may be called the conqueror of Canada? What was his last battle?—21. What victory over the French was gained during the year 1759 in Germany? What naval success was achieved by the British?—22. What was the cause of George the Second's death? When did his death occur? How many children had he? What was the name of his eldest son? What was the date of this prince's death? How was it occasioned? What was the name of his eldest son?—23. What was the character of George II? What were his attachments? How were science, art, and literature treated during his reign? What was his personal appearance?—24. What remarkable change in reckoning time was made in this reign? When had this change been made in Russia, &c? What European nation still reckons time by the old style? What well known magazine was started in this reign? When was the British Museum founded? When was the first canal made in England? Describe the costume of this period—25. What remarkable sovereigns ruled in Prussia and Hungary at this time? Name the chief authors of the reign, their works, and their social stations Who were the leading artists? Tell some works of the 'satirical painter of the age"

LXII

CHAPTER III.

Life in England under the Early Georges

1. How were private houses distinguished at this time? Give a description of the roadway and the footpaths How were they divided?—2. What were the modes of conveyance? What sort of lamps were there? Who were the "link boys"? What danger infested the country roads?—3. Who were the 'Mohocks"? Describe their treatment of men and women—4. What place did the coffee house hold in the life of the time?—5. What wood became common for furniture? Describe the additions to comfort and convenience What of the ceilings and windows?—6. What were then the most fashionable districts of London?—7. What was the hoop? Describe the use of the fan—8. What significance had patches often? Where did a lady spend her morning often? Describe the dress of a gentleman. In what works may we find pictures of fashionable life and talk during this period?—9. What was the usual dinner hour? Name the chief promenades How was the face concealed?—10. What was the vice of the age? Name some of the games and dances fashionable Where were duels usually decided?—11. Describe the audience at the theatre What peculiar habits displayed themselves at church?—12. What were the chief country resorts? Why was there little Continental travel?—13. Describe the two classes of authors What was meant by "Grub Street"? How were new books usually read? When did a citizen dine, and where did he spend his evening?

LXIII.

CHAPTER IV

1. What secret alliance was formed be-

tween France and Spain? By what name is this alliance known? What was the advice of Pitt on hearing of the secret treaty? How was his counsel treated? How did he act? What rewards were bestowed on him? Who became Premier? Relate the events of the war with Spain and France. In what year was peace made? When did the Seven Years' War end? By what name is this peace known?—2. Who succeeded the Earl of Bute as Premier? For what is his ministry remarkable? What was the occasion of this prosecution? What difficulty stood in the way of his conviction? What was the result of the trial? What was the popular feeling with respect to Wilkes? How was this feeling shown in 1768? How did the House of Commons act? What punishment was inflicted on Wilkes? Describe the struggle between the electors of Middlesex and the House of Commons? What was the result of the struggle? What post was conferred on Wilkes? What famous *Letters* appeared in those times? Against whom were they directed? — 3. What Act, relating to America, was now passed? How did the Americans reply to the impositions laid on them? How did Grenville act? What took place during the ministry of his successor? What was this minister's name? Who were next called to office? What new taxes were then imposed? How did the Earl of Chatham act in 1768? Who became Premier in 1770? What strife about this time took place between Parliament and the London printers? Who took a lead in demanding the right in question? Which party eventually gained? — 4. How did the American War begin? Which of the States was foremost in resistance? What daring act was committed at Boston? How did the Government retaliate? What were the proceedings of the States in 1774? How was this petition received? What was the advice of Chatham and Burke? — 5. When did actual war break out? Where was the first skirmish? When was the Battle of Bunker's Hill fought? What was the result? Who led the American army? Where were the head-quarters of the British army? Who was the general? By whom was he succeeded in October? What was the second remarkable event of this campaign? At the close of the campaign, what was the strength of the British army in America? — 6. What success was obtained by the Americans early in the campaign of 1776? What famous document was issued on the 4th of July? What advantages were gained by the British in the following month?—7. What aid did the Americans receive at the opening of the third campaign? Who was the most distinguished of the French officers? What events occurred which raised hopes that the colonies would be eventually subdued? What event changed entirely the current of affairs? — 8. What was the condition of the American army in Valley Forge? When did the fourth campaign open? Who had superseded General Howe? What city was almost immediately abandoned by him? — 9. What lamentable event befel Chatham in the year 1778? — 10. What events of importance occurred in the sixth campaign, 1780? Who was Major André? — 11. What was the second great disaster to the British arms? In what year did this occur? When was the independence of the States acknowledged? What form of government was chosen by the emancipated nation? Give a list of the Thirteen Original States, in the order of their foundation? — 12. What was the state of affairs in Europe towards the close of the American War? What was "The Armed Neutrality"? What was the chief event of the war? — 13. When did the Gordon riots occur? What was the occasion of these disturbances? Describe the mischief done? — 14. When and where was James Cook born? For what is his life remarkable? How many voyages did he make? Where did he meet his death? In what year did it occur? — 15. Who became Prime Minister in 1783? What was his age? How many years had he been in Parliament? — 16. What event occurred in India during 1761? Who was appointed Governor-General of India in 1773? Over whom were his chief victories obtained? What were the two chief stains in his administration? How was he treated on his return to England? Where did the trial take place? Who led the impeachment? What two famous orators followed on the same side? By whom was Hastings defended? For how many years did the trial last? What was the result? Where were his last days spent? Who became Governor-General of India in 1786? What were his achievements? Under Marquis Wellesley what was achieved? Who won the Battles of Assaye and the Jumna? — —

17. Describe the penal laws enacted against the Irish Catholics under Anne What drew forth the *Drapier Letters*? Who wrote them? How did the members of the Irish Parliament hold their seats? How often did the Lord Lieutenant visit the country? What Viceroy tried a soothing policy? Describe the attempt of Thurot What effect had the American War on Ireland Name the two chief societies of the Irish people How was the discontent of the people kindled into rebellion?—18. Make a list of the chief authors, artists, and inventors of the period, stating their chief works, with dates.

LXIV.

CHAPTER V

1. Make a list, with dates of the leading events during the remainder of the reign? What was the greatest event of the eighteenth century? When did it commence and end? By what three causes was it chiefly excited? What great national crimes were committed during its progress? What was the immediate result of the murder of Louis XVI? How many years did the strife, then commenced, continue?—2. When did Napoleon Bonaparte first distinguish himself? In what study had he excelled at school? What action rendered Napoleon conspicuous in France? Whom did he marry? In what year did his marriage take place? What command did he obtain by her influence? What was the success of his first campaign?—3. What policy was advocated by Pitt? Who was his great opponent? What nation declared war against Great Britain in 1797? What was the position of England at this time? Give an account of the mutiny at the Nore What two great victories were obtained by the British navy? What events distinguished the following year?—4. What measures were taken in 1780 by the Irish malcontents? What was the success of their machinations? What more dangerous conspiracy was formed in 1791? How was the plot defeated? What insane proceedings followed? In what two counties did the rebellion chiefly rage? How was the rising suppressed? In what year was the Battle of Vinegar Hill fought? Where did the French troops land? What was the success of this attempt?—5. What was the object of Napoleon's Egyptian expedition? What island did he seize on his way? Where did he land? In what battle were the Mamelukes defeated? What brilliant naval victory was gained over the French by Nelson? Describe the battle What was the effect of this victory? From what city was Napoleon repulsed by Sir Sidney Smith? What became of the French army after the departure of Napoleon?—6. When did the union of Ireland with Great Britain take place? How was Ireland represented in the British Parliament? How was the union regarded by the Irish people? What rising took place? What occasioned the resignation of Pitt? By whom was he succeeded?—7 How did the Emperor of Russia menace Britain at this time? By whom was the Danish fleet destroyed? Where did this occur? On the death of Paul, who succeeded to the Russian throne? What was his policy towards England? When was the Treaty of Amiens signed?—8. Who became Prime Minister in 1804? What vast scheme was formed by Napoleon? Under what title did he govern France? What part of his scheme was defeated by the watchfulness of Nelson? To what part of Europe did Napoleon then turn his armies? What was Nelson's last battle? When was this battle fought? Describe his death When was the Battle of Austerlitz fought? What was the date of the Battle of Jena? What were the results of these battles? What two great statesmen died in 1806? State their ages What Decrees injurious to the commerce of Britain were issued by Napoleon from Berlin? What were the measures taken in return by Britain?—9 Whom had Napoleon made King of Holland? To whom had he given the throne of Naples? What was the origin of the Peninsular War? What aid was sent by Britain to the Spanish nation? Where did Wellesley land in the Peninsula? What was his first battle? Give the date What was the Convention of Cintra? Describe the march and retreat of Sir John Moore In what battle was Sir John Moore slain? When was this battle fought? When was the Battle of Talavera gained by Wellesley? What occasioned his retreat upon the frontiers of Portugal?—10. What reverse was sustained by the Austrians during the year 1809? Relate the events of the Walcheren Expedition What was the object of it? Under whose command was it placed?

What was the success of the expedition?—11 When was the Battle of Busaco fought? Who were the combatants? Give a description of Wellington's famous lines of Torres Vedras Who were the *guerillas*? Whom did Napoleon marry during this year? What occasioned the appointment of the Prince of Wales to the Regency of England? On what day did the Regency begin?—12. What three important victories marked the fourth campaign in the Peninsula? What success attended the British arms in the East? Give an account of Wellington's third invasion of Spain What two great fortresses fell before him? What victory opened the way to Madrid? When did Wellington enter the Spanish capital? What was his reason for retreating upon Portugal? What tragic occurrence took place during this year in the lobby of the House of Commons? What heavy blow had the empire of Napoleon received? Describe this disastrous campaign —13. Where and when was the decisive battle of the Peninsular War fought? How did Wellington enter France? When was the Battle of Toulouse fought? What great battle had been lost by Napoleon ten days earlier? What event followed his defeat? Whither was the fallen Emperor allowed to retreat?—14. How did a war with America arise? How long did it last? What were the most important events of the war? Name the most famous of the naval duels Where and when was peace made?—15. How was Wellington rewarded for his successes in the Peninsula? When did the Congress of Vienna assemble? What alarming intelligence broke up the Congress? What measures immediately taken by the Allies? What was Wellington's plan? How did Napoleon endeavour to defeat this plan? Where was Wellington when the news of Napoleon's advance reached him? Where were the Prussians? What two battles took place on the 16th June? To what place did Wellington retreat? Describe the positions and numbers of the two armies. What was Napoleon's plan of action? How did Wellington meet it When did the Prussians arrive? Describe Napoleon's last effort, and its result Give the numbers of the slain. What were the last scenes in the life of Napoleon?—16. What was the National Debt of England in 1763?—in 1783?—in 1815? What was the state of the country at the close of the war? What event of importance occurred in 1816? When did the death of the Princess Charlotte occur? When did Queen Charlotte die? When did the reign of George III. close? What was his age at the time of his death? How many children had he? Give the names of the four eldest What was the character of George III?—17. When and by whom was the first Sunday school opened? What celebrated philanthropist lived about the same time? In what year, and under what name was the *Times* newspaper established? When were London streets first lighted with gas? Who launched the first regular steam boat? In what year was the first steam vessel in Europe started?—18. Name in succession the various changes of government in France during the reign of George III When did the Empire of Austria begin?—19. Give the dates of the leading events in Napoleon's career and of the Partitions of Poland —20. Name with some particulars the authors of *The Village, Ancient Mariner Pleasures of Hope, Thalaba Waverley Gnaour, Excursion, Queen Mab Endymion* Who were the leading artists and inventors of the time?

LXV.

CHAPTER VI.

1 When was George IV born? What conspiracy was discovered a few days after his accession? Who was the leader of the gang? Where was the seizure made? What was the fate of the conspirators? What rising took place at the same time in Scotland?—2. How did George IV act towards his wife? Where had she lived during the Regency? Why did she come to England? What steps were taken against her? What indignity did she suffer at Westminster Abbey? Who defended her? What was the result? When did her death occur? How was King George received in Ireland? Whither did he proceed in the next month? What country was next visited by this monarch? What news did he receive while in Scotland? By whom was Castlereagh succeeded as Foreign Secretary? How was the new Secretary known in literature?—3. When did the war with Burmah commence? Relate the events of the war What colonies did Britain acquire? What commercial disaster occurred in 1824? In what year did the premiership of the Earl of Liverpool terminate? Who was called

to the head of affairs? How long did he hold the office? Who was his successor? —4. What caused the Greek War? What English poet devoted his fortune to the cause of Greece? In what year did Britain commence the war with Turkey? Who were her allies? In what action was the Turkish navy destroyed? Who was placed on the throne of Greece?—5. What was the most remarkable political event of this reign? When did the Duke of lington become Premier? What oppressive Acts were repealed in 1828? When had they been passed? What important Bill was passed in 1829? What Irish member was foremost in securing this measure? When did the death of King George IV occur? What were his personal appearance and character?—6 What improvement in road making was introduced in 1820? When was the first iron steam boat launched? When and by what vessel was the first steam voyage to India accomplished? When was the University of London opened? What were the discoveries of Captains Parry and Ross during this reign?—7 Name the chief foreign events, and give a list of the chief authors of the reign, stating their principal works For what were George and Robert Stephenson famous?

LXVI.

Chapter VII.

1. What was the title of William IV previous to his accession to the throne? In what year was he born? What was his claim to the throne? What was the name of his wife?—2. What important event occurred in France shortly after his accession? What change took place in Belgium? When did the Duke of Wellington resign the premiership? What was the cause of his retiring from office? Who succeeded him? In what year was the Liverpool and Manchester Railway opened? What new epidemic disease broke out in the October of 1831? What was the extent of its ravages in Britain? —3. What was the great political event of this reign? Who proposed the measure in the House of Commons? When did this take place? For how long did the struggle continue? Where did riots occur? What was the effect of the opposition to the Bill in the House of Lords? Who was called on to form a Ministry? What was his success? What was the feeling of the lower classes towards him? Who was recalled to the Ministry? When was the Reform Bill passed? What three great changes were made by the passing of this Bill?—4. When did the agitation of the slavery question in the House of Commons commence? Who first brought forward the motion for the liberation of the slaves in the British colonies? Who were his fellow workers? When was the Bill finally passed? What compensation was voted to the slave holders? In what year were the slaves set free? When did the death of Wilberforce occur?—5. What change was made in the Poor Laws during the year 1834? What was the occasion of Earl Grey's resignation? By whom was he succeeded? How long did these ministers retain office? Who succeeded to the head of affairs? How long did he retain office, and who was his successor? What Act was passed in 1835? What are the most noteworthy points in the foreign policy of this reign?—6. When did the death of the King occur? What children had he? What was his character? Name the chief foreign and the chief literary events of the reign

LXVII.

Chapter VIII.

1. Give a chronological list of the chief events of Queen Victoria's reign In what year did the reign of Her Majesty Queen Victoria commence? Of whom is she the daughter? When did her coronation take place? On whom was the crown of Hanover bestowed? Why?—2. When did the Canadian rebellion occur? By whom was it headed? Describe its suppression What Act of Parliament was passed in 1840 to strengthen the Government of the colony?—3. What were the demands of the Chartists? What rebellious proceedings were taken by these men? Who was their leader?—4. When did the marriage of the Queen take place? When was the Princess Royal born? What was the date of the birth of the Prince of Wales?—5. When did the Afghan War take place? What was the occasion of this war? Describe the chief events which occurred during the struggle When was Cabul taken? What was the cause of the war in the Levant? Describe the fall of Acre How was the war concluded?—6. What was the occasion of the first war with China? When was war declared? How

long did it last? What three victories did Britain gain? What were the terms of peace?—7. What riots took place in 1843? Give an account of the state of Ireland about this time What was "The Repeal Rent"? When and how did the Government interfere? Where and when did O Connell die?—8. In what year did the Disruption in the Church of Scotland occur? By what was it occasioned? How was the English Church about the same time disturbed?—9 Describe the circumstances which led to the conquest of Sinde Who were the *Ameers*? What victories secured the conquest?—10. Describe the Punjaub Who were its inhabitants? What outrage did they commit? Name, with dates the four battles won by Britain in the first war Who were the British leaders? Relate the events of the second war —11. What has been the most important political event of Her Majesty's reign? Who was the leader of the Anti Corn Law League? What was the conduct of Sir Robert Peel in relation to this question? Who wished to keep foreign grain out of the country? To what sum was the duty finally reduced? When were the corn laws repealed? Who became Premier on Sir Robert Peel's resignation?—12. What calamity befel Ireland in 1845? What was the date of the railway mania? When was the electric telegraph first used?—13. What revolution occurred in France in the year 1848? Give the dates of the two previous revolutions in that country Where did the French monarch take refuge? Who became President of the French Republic? In what year was the title changed for that of Emperor? What Chartist demonstration occurred in 1848? Who was the head of the 'Young Ireland Party'? What were the results of their proceedings?—14. In what year did the death of the Queen-dowager Adelaide occur? What other events of importance occurred in the year 1849?—15. When and how did the death of Sir Robert Peel occur? Mention a striking event which occurred in the same year —16. To whom is the credit due of starting the first idea of the Great Exhibition of 1851? Who designed the structure? Describe the building What were the results of the Exhibition?—17. When did the Russell Ministry resign? What war broke out in 1851? What important discovery was made in this year?—18 When did the second Burmese War break out? What was its cause? What were the events and the result of the war?—19. Who succeeded Lord John Russell in the direction of affairs early in 1852? Who became Premier on the resignation of these ministers?—20. What was the date of the death of the Duke of Wellington? When did he die? and where was he buried?—21. How did the war with Russia commence? When was war formally declared? Who were the three allies? What was the first operation of the war? What operations took place in the Baltic? and on the Danube? What was the great theatre of the war? Who commanded the French and English armies? When did they land? What was the first battle State its date and result What position did the allies take up at Sebastopol What port did the British hold? When did the bombardment of Sebastopol begin? Describe the actions of October 25 and November 5 What sufferings did the winter cause? Who led the motion of mismanagement in the Commons? What was its result? What new features of warfare were seen in the Crimea? What expedition and battle occurred in 1855 Describe the changes of command that took place What movement of the French decided the fate of the city? What fortress did the British attack? When did the Russians evacuate the city? What did they previously do? Describe the events at Sveaborg and Kars When was peace concluded?—22. What caused the second Chinese War? State its principal events What advantages did Britain gain by the Treaty of Tien tsin? What happened in Persia?—23. When and where did the Indian Mutiny break out?—What was its immediate occasion? Narrate the occurrences at the three chief centres of rebellion Describe the acts of Havelock Who finally relieved Lucknow, and crushed the mutiny What was its last event?—24 What cast a gloom on commerce in 1857? How did the Law of Conspiracy originate? Who formed a new ministry Describe the provisions of the India Bill Who were admitted to Parliament in 1858?—25. On the return of Palmerston to office who became Chancellor of the Exchequer? What were the leading foreign events of 1859 and 1860? In what did the Volunteer movement originate? What has been a result of the movement?—26. When did the third Chinese War begin? By what outrage was it occasioned

What operations did the British undertake? What ally had they? What led to the surrender of Pekin? Name a district ceded to Britain by the Chinese?—27. What treaty did Lord Elgin then negotiate? What people alone had previously been admitted to trade?—28. State the population of the British Isles According to what Census is this estimated?—29. What were the opening and closing dates of the American Civil War? What part did Britain take in the difficulty? Name the occurrences which caused a fear of entanglement —30 Whither was the *Trent* sailing? What vessel fired at her? Who were arrested? On what mission were they bound? How was the dispute settled?—31. Name the ship which caused a difficulty How did the trouble arise? What did the American Government maintain and demand?—32. What saddened the year 1861? What two important undertakings had the Prince originated?—33. How did the American War affect Lancashire? How did the nation afford relief? How did the operatives endure the trial? State the only exception —34. Whom did the Prince of Wales marry? Give the date Where did she land, and how was she received?—35. What were the events of 1864?—36. What minister died in 1865? Who succeeded him?—37. By what name was the fatal cattle disease called? Where did it break out? Describe its spread What means were taken to suppress the disease?—38 By what treason was Ireland disturbed? Give the derivation of the name Whence did the society draw its supplies? What was its object? Who raised a voice of wise warning? How was an insurrection prevented? Name the chief conspirator Relate what happened to him What Act was suspended, and with what effect?—39. Describe the symptoms of the plot beyond Ireland What happened at Chester, Manchester, Clerkenwell and Sydney?—40 What vast undertaking was successfully accomplished in 1866? Describe, with dates, the two previous failures What ship was employed in the work? What was achieved besides the laying of the new cable? What cable was laid in 1869?—41. What was the chief political event of 1867? By what Government was the measure passed? Describe its provisions Who were the leading members of the Conservative Government?—42. What caused the Abyssinian War? Where was Theodore's fortress? What British army was sent thither? Name the landing place, and the general Describe the country How were the cannon carried? What was the principal obstacle? Where was Theodore posted? Where were the first shots fired? With what result? How was Theodore forced to release the prisoners? What was his fate? What was done to Magdala?—43 Who were the leading ministers that succeeded Disraeli? With what measure has Parliament been occupied during 1869? Describe the progress of the Bill When does the Act come into force?—44. Name the chief foreign events from 1839 to 1849—from 1849 to 1859—from 1859 to 1869 —45 Name the chief works, with dates of Macaulay, Alison, and Carlyle Who are the two greatest novelists of the reign? What two lady authors have achieved eminence? Name their works Who are the leading poets of the time? What do you know of Lytton, Chalmers and Hugh Miller?—46 Who are the leading artists of the reign? Describe the achievements of Brunel Paxton, and Rosse, of Maclure Baker, Speke, and Livingstone Who were the practical inventors of the Electric Telegraph?

LXVIII

CHAPTER IX.

1 What has wrought a wonderful change on life during the present century? Who launched the *Comet*, and when? Who was the constructer of the Rocket? Give the date What were the earliest ocean voyages by steam? Name the most remarkable steamboats of the age —2. Who established the Penny Postage? Give the date When did the first trial of the Electric Telegraph take place, and where? What was the first Submarine Cable? What caused the Ocean Cable of 1858 to fail? Name the various cables laid between 1858 and 1866 —3. When did an iron ship first cross the English Channel? What is a war ship plated with iron called? Describe the armour of a ship How is the gun defended? How are steel cannon now built? What missiles do they throw? What change has taken place in fire-arms? What modern inventions have been brought into use in war?—4. State some of the peaceful applications of iron Give great instances —5. What have been the three chief regions of recent exploration?

Who solved the mystery of the North West Passage? Tell the fate of Franklin In what capacity did Livingstone go to Africa? Give his various discoveries with dates State the discoveries of Speke and Baker Who accompanied the latter?—6. Who was the most successful explorer of Australia? What two discoveries did he make? Name some explorers of Australia who perished How far did they penetrate, and of what did they die?—7. Tell what you know of the Thames Tunnel—the Rosse Telescope—Photography—the Sewing Machine—and recently discovered Planets How has public health been improved? What have encouraged provident habits among the working classes? When was the Paper Duty repealed, and with what results?

LXIX

CHAPTER X

1. What assemblies of Saxon and Norman days contained the germ of our Parliament? By what changes was the House of Commons organized? When was the organization of Parliament distinctly defined?—2. What are the Three Estates of the Realm? In what does the strength of the Constitution lie?—3. Does the Salic Law prevail in Britain? What are the checks upon the royal power? What are the chief branches of the royal prerogative? To what religious communion must the Sovereign belong?—4. In what does the business of Parliament consist?—5. What are the two kinds of Lords State their numbers and classification To how many ranks do the temporal peers belong? What power of creating peers does the Sovereign

How are the Scottish representative peers elected, and for how long? What of the Irish peers? Who is the Speaker of the Lords? On what is he said to sit? What function does the Upper House exercise as a court? How may a peer vote by? What kind of a Bill cannot originate in the Lords?—6. What sole right does the House of Commons possess? Give the number of members under Edward I, Henry VI., and in 1801 How did the Reform Bills of 1832 and 1867–8 distribute the seats?—7. In what three ways may Parliament be dissolved? What obliges Parliament to meet annually? How is a new Parliament summoned? How is the election decided?—8. What are the *Chiltern Hundreds*? How can a member of Parliament give up his seat? On what law is the practice founded?—9. What is the chairman of the Commons called? What oath must members of both Houses take? What privileges do members of Parliament possess?—10. How many Lords make a *quorum*? How many members of the Commons form a *quorum*? With what words do the Lords and Commons, respectively, vote? How do the Speaker and the Lord Chancellor vote? Which side prevails when voting is equal in the Lords?—11. When were Bills first introduced by the Commons? What kind of Act can the Crown originate? Describe the process by which a Bill becomes an Act of Parliament In what language is a Bill endorsed after passing either House?—12. How is the royal assent given? When was the assent last refused?—13. Explain the maxim, "The King can do no wrong" What title do privy councillors possess? What is the *Cabinet*? What causes a change of Government? How is it accomplished? What nine Ministers belong necessarily—what five usually—to the Cabinet? Name two other officers frequently attached to the Cabinet What is the *Budget*? Who arranges and presents it? What are the chief items of the revenue? What are the chief items of the expenditure State, in millions, the revenue and expenditure of 1868—14. On what three great principles is the administration of justice in Britain founded? How many form an English—how many a Scottish—jury? What are the English verdicts? What are the Scottish?—15. Name the three kinds of law Describe them What are the principal courts in England and Ireland? What are the two Scottish courts? How is justice administered in the country?—16. Write out, with dates lists of the general events the constitutional changes, the changes of dominion, the wars, battles, and treaties of the Period—17. Draw a tree showing the genealogy of the Brunswick family

BRITISH COLONIES.

Give a complete list of the British Colonies in each division of the globe State also—1 Their geographical features 2 Their date and the mode of their acquisition by Britain? 3 Their earlier history 4. Their more recent history 5 Their value to Britain

INDEX.

Aberdeen, Earl of, 320
Abyssinian War, 328
Acre taken, 316
Afghan War, 315
Agincourt, Battle of, 123
Agricola, Julius, 15
Aix la Chapelle, Treaty of 276
Alabama, The, 325
Albert, Prince, 315, 325
Albuera, Battle of, 298
Alchemy and Astrology, 198
Alexander I of Scotland, 63
Alexander II of Scotland, 105
Alexander III of Scotland, 105
Alexandra, Princess, 326
Alfred the Great, 24
Algerian pirates, 302
Alma, Battle of, 321
Almanza, Battle of, 250
Alnwick, Siege of, 52
American War of Independence, 288
American Civil War, 325
Amiens, Treaty of, 296.
Ancrum Moor, Battle of, 187
Angus, Earl of, 185
Anne of Cleves, 163
Anne, Queen, 249
Anselm, Archbishop, 53
Anson, Commodore, 273
Architecture, Tudor, 194.
Argyle, Execution of Marquis of, 226
Argyle's (Earl of) invasion, 236
Armada, The Spanish, 177
Arras, Congress of, 127
Arthur, King, 20
Arthur, Murder of Prince, 79
Athelney, Isle of, 25
Athelstan, King, 27
Atlantic Cable, 327
Aughrim, Battle of, 245
Augustine's mission, 20
Austerlitz, Battle of, 296

Bacon, Francis Lord, 205
Badajos taken, 299
Balaklava, Battle of, 321
Baliol and Bruce, 88, 106
Ballot, Vote by, 329
Bank of England founded, 248.
Bannockburn, Battle of, 91, 108
Barcelona reduced 250
Bareilly, Fall of, 323
Barnet, Battle of, 133
Barrosa, Battle of, 295
Beatoun, Cardinal, 187
Beaufort, Cardinal, 128
Becket, Thomas à, 71
Bell-the Cat (Angus), 185
Berkeley Castle, 92.
Berlin Decrees, 297
Berwick, Siege of, 108
Bishops, Trial of the Seven, 2
Blake, Admiral, 221
Blenheim, Battle of, 249
Blondel the Minstrel 76
Bloody Statute, The, 163
Blorehe[illegible]th, Battle of, 129
Boadicea, Queen, 14
Boleyn, Anne, 159
Boston Harbour, 287
Bosworth Field, Battle of, 139
Bothwell Bridge, Battle of, 233
Bouvines, Battle of, 80
Boyne, Battle of the, 245
Breadalbane, Earl of, 245
Breakspear, Nicholas, Pope, 141
Brenville, Battle of, 56
Bretigny, Treaty of, 97
Brian, King of Munster, 40
Britain, Origin of name, 9
Britannia Bridge, 333
Britons, Ancient, 10
Bruce, Edward, 111
Bruce, Robert, King, 107
Brunnaburgh, Battle of, 27
Buckingham's Rebellion, 188.
Budget, The, 340
Bunker's Hill, Battle [illegible]
Burke, Australian explorer, Death of 33
Burleigh, Lord 178.

Burmese War, 320
Busaco, Battle of, 298

Cabal, The, 231
Cabinet, The, 339
Cabot, Sebastian, 153
Cade's rebellion, 128
Cæsar, Julius, 13
Calais, Siege of, 96
Calcutta, Black Hole of, 277
Cambridge University and James II, 23
Cameron of Lochiel, 274
Cameronians, 234
Campbell, Sir Colin (Lord Clyde), 323
Campeggio, Cardinal, 159
Canada, Invasion of, 287
Canada, Rebellion in, 314
Canning, Sir George, 307
Canute, King, 31
Caractacus, 14
Carausius 16
Carberry Hill, Queen Mary at, 189
Carey, Sir Robert, 190
Carisbrook Castle, 215
Caroline, Queen, 306
Carr, Robert (Earl of Somerset), 205
Catholic Emancipation, 308
Cato Street Conspiracy, 306
Cavaliers, 212, 257
Cawnpore Massacre at, 323
Cecil, William (Lord Burleigh), 174
Cenis, Mont, Tunnel, 335
Ceorls 41
Chalus, Siege of 77
Charles I, 208 217
Charles II, 226
Charleston taken, 288
Chartists, The 314
Chepman, Walter, printer 185
Chevy Chase, Battle of, 182
Chinese Wars, 316, 323, 325
Cholera, The, 310
Christianity in Britain, 17
Christmas in Tudor times, 197
Church of England established, 174
Ciudad Rodrigo taken, 299
Civil List, The, 247
Clarence, Duke of, 134.
Clarendon, Constitutions of, 71
Clarendon, Death of, 230
Claudius, Emperor, 14
Clive, Robert, 277
Clontarf, Battle of, 40
Cloth of Gold, Field of the, 157
Cochrane, Robert, royal favourite, 185.
Coinage, Roman,
Columba's mission, 21
Columbus, Christopher, 153

Commons, House of, founded, 85
Commonwealth, The, 219
Constitutions, The British, 336.
Convention, The, 241
Cook, Captain James, 289
Cope, Sir John, 274
Corn Laws repealed, 318
Cornwall, Discontent in, 150
Cornwallis, Lord, 290
Corunna, Battle of, 297
Cotton famine, The, 326
Covenant, The National, 211
Cowell, Dr, and Divine right, 206
Cranmer, Thomas, 160, 172
Crecy, Battle of, 95
Crevant, Battle of, 126
Crimean War, 321
Cromwell, Henry, 229
Cromwell, Oliver, Captain, 213, in Ireland 219, expels Long Parliament, 221, Lord Protector, 222, death, 223
Cromwell, Richard, 223
Cromwell, Thomas, 160, 163.
Crusades, The, 53, 75
Culloden Moor, Battle of, 275
Curfew Bell, The, 50.

Danelagh, The, 25
Darien Scheme, The, 247
Darnley, Murder of, 188
David I of Scotland, 63
David II of Scotland, 109
Debt, The National, 246, 302
Delhi, Fall of, 329
Derby, Jacobites at, 275
Derby, Lord, 320
Dettingen, Battle of, 274
Discovery, Geographical, 334
Disraeli, Benjamin 320, 328, 329.
Disruption, The, 317
Domesday Book, The, 50
Donald Bane, 62
Dover, Treaty of, 229
Drapier Letters, The, 291
Drogheda, Sack of, 220
Druidism, 11
Drumclog, Battle of, 233
Dudley, Earl of Warwick, 167
Dudley and Empson, 152
Dunbar, Battle of, 220
Dundrennan Abbey, 189
Dunkirk sold, 227
Dunstan, Abbot, 27
Dupleix, Governor of Pondicherry, 277
Dutch War, The, 221

Edgar, King, 28.
Edgar of Scotland, 63

INDEX.

Edgehill, Battle of, 213
Edmund, King, 27
Edmund (Ironside), 29
Edred, King, 27
Edward I , 87
Edward II , 91
Edward III , 94
Edward IV , 132
Edward V , 137
Edward VI , 166
Edward the Confessor, 34
Edward the Elder, 27
Edward the Martyr, 28
Education Acts, 329
Edwy, King, 27
Egbert, King, 23
Eldermen, 41
Elizabeth, Queen, 174
Elizabeth of York, 146
Empson and Dudley, 152
Erasmus at Oxford, 199
Essex (Devereux), Earl of, 178
Ethandune, Battle of, 25
Ethelbald, King, 24
Ethelbert, King, 24
Ethelred I , 24
Ethelred II , 28
Ethelwulf, King, 24
Evesham, Battle of, 85
Exchequer, The, closed, 231
Excise Bill, The, 271
Exeter taken, 48
Exhibition, The Great, 319

Fairfax, Sir Thomas 214
Fala Moor, The Scots at, 186
Falkirk, Battles of, 107, 275
Falkland Palace, 186
Family Compact, The, 285
Fawkes, Guy, 204
Felton, Lieutenant, 209
Fenianism, 327
Fifteen, The, 265
Fire in London, The Great, 228
Fitzgerald in Ireland, 110
Fitzstephen in Ireland, 110
Flagellants, The, 96
Flambard, Ralph, 53
Flodden, Battle of, 186
Fontenoy, Battle of, 274
Forest Laws, 50
Forty-five, The, 274
Fotheringay Castle, 176
Francis I of France, 156
Franklin, Sir John, 334
French Revolutions, 293, 310, 318
French Wars of Edward I , 88
Fuentes d'Onoro, Battle of, 298

Gama, Vasco di, 153
Gardiner, Colonel, 274
Gascoigne, Chief Justice, 119
Gaveston, Piers, 91
Geddes, Jenny, 211
George I , 264
George II , 271
George III , 285
George IV , 306
ient, Peace of, 300
braltar Seizure of, 249 , siege of, 289
Gladstone, William Ewart, 324, 329
Glencoe, Massacre of, 245
Glendower, Owen, 118
Gloucester, Duke of, 128
Gloucester, Richard of, 137
Godwin, Earl, 34
Gordon Riots, 289
Gowrie Conspiracy, 189
Greek Revolt, 307
Gregorian Calendar, 278
Grenville, Hon George, 285
Grey, Lady Jane, 170
Gunpowder Plot, 204
Guthrum, Danish leader, 25

Habeas Corpus Act, 232
Halidon Hill, Battle of, 94
Hamilton of Bothwellhaugh, 18
Hampden, John, 210
Hampton Court Conference, 204
Hanover united to England, 264
Hardicanute, King, 32
Harfleur taken, 123
Harlaw, Battle of, 183
Harold I (Harefoot), 32
Harold II , 36
Hastings, Battle of 36
Hastings, Lord, 137
Hastings, Warren, Trial of, 290
Havelock, General, 323
Hawke, Admiral 278
Hedgeley Moor, Battle of, 132
Hengist and Horsa, 20
Hengsdown Hill, 23
Henrietta Maria, Queen, 208
Henry I , 55
Henry II , 70
Henry III , 83
Henry IV , 118
Henry V , 122
Henry VI , 126
Henry VII , 145
Henry VIII , 155
Heptarchy, The, 20
Hereward the Saxon
High Commission Court, 210
Hill, Abigail, 251

Holmby House, 215
Homildon Hill, Battle of, 118
Horsa, 20
Hotspur, Harry Percy, 119
Howard, Catherine, 163
Hubertsburg, Peace of, 285
Hull shut against Charles I 213
Humphrey of Gloucester, 126
Hyde, Anne, 242
Hyde, Edward, Earl of Clarendon, 226

Ich Dien, 96
Independence, Declaration of American, 288
Independents, The, 214
India Bill, 324
Indian Mutiny, 323
Indulgence, Declaration of, 239
Inkermann, Battle of, 321
Interdict, Papal, 79
Ireland, early history, 89; invaded, 72
Irish Catholics, 291, Irish Union, 295, Irish Church Bill, 329, Irish Land Act, 329
Irishmen, The United, 291, 294, 319
Ironclads, 333
Ironsides, Cromwell's, 214

Jaffa, 76
Jamaica, given to England 222
James I of England, 203
James II of England, 236
James I of Scotland, 183
James II of Scotland, 184
James III of Scotland, 185
James IV of Scotland, 185
James V of Scotland, 186
James VI of Scotland, 189
Japan opened, 325
Jeffreys, Judge, 238
Jena, Battle of, 296
Jews, Persecution of, 76
Joan of Arc, 127
John, King, 79
Joyce Colonel, 215

Kaffir wars, 320
Kars, Siege of, 322
Kells, Synod of, 109
Kent, Holy Maid of, 161
Kent, Rebellion in, 171
Kildare, Earl of, 191
Kilkenny, Statute of, 111
Killiecrankie, Battle of, 244
"Killing no Murder," 223
Kilmallock, Battle of, 192
"King's Q[illegible]," 183
[illegible] of Field, 188
Kirkpatrick, Sir Roger, 109.
Knights Templars, 64
Knox, John, 187

La Hogue, Battle off, 246
Lambert, John, 164
Landen, Battle of, 246
Lanfranc, Archbishop, 49
Langside, Battle of, 189
Langton, Stephen, 79
Largs, Battle of, 105
Latimer, Bishop, 172
Laud, Archbishop, 209, 211
Leipsic, Battle of, 299
Lerida, Siege of, 250
Leslie, General David, 220
Levant, War in the, 315
Levellers, The, 219
Lewes, Mise of, 85
Lexington, Battle of, 287
Lillibulero, 240
Limerick, Siege of, 245, peace of 245
Lincoln, First battle of, 60, second battle of, 83
Lisle, Alice, 238
Livingstone, David, 334
Llewellyn, Welsh Prince, 87
Lochleven Castle, 189
Lollards, The, 101
London the capital, 74
Londonderry, Siege of, 245
Louis, Prince, of France, 81
Lovel, Lord, 147
Lucknow, Siege of, 325
Luther, Martin, 158

Macdonald, Flora, 275
Macdonald of Glencoe, 245
MacMorrogh, Dermot, 72, 109
Magdala, Capture of, 329
Magna Charta, 80
Malakoff, The, 322
Malcolm III (Canmore) of Scotland, 52, 62
Malcolm IV of Scotland, 104.
Malplaquet, Battle of, 249
Margaret, Maid of Norway, 106
Marlborough, Duke of, 249
Mary I of England, 170
Mary, Queen of Scots, 174, 176.
Marston Moor, Battle of, 214.
Martyrs' Monument, 186
Maud, Princess, 60
Methodists, The, 273
Minden, Battle of, 278
Mitchell, John, 319
Money panic, 307
Monk, General 224
Monmouth's invasion. 237

Mons Grampius, Battle of, 15
Montfort, Simon de, 84
Moore, Sir John, 297
More, Sir Thomas, 161
Mortimer's Cross, Battle of, 130
Moscow, Burning of, 299
Mountjoy, Lord, 192
Mowbray, Robert, 53
Municipal Act, 312

Namur, Siege of, 246
Napier, Lord, of Magdala, 329
Napoleon I, 294, at Elba, 299, at St Helena, 302
Naseby, Battle of, 215
Navarino, Battle of, 303
Navarrete, Battle of, 97
Nelson, Admiral, 295
Nevil's Cross, Battle of, 96
Newark, Charles I at, 215
Newbury, Battle of, 213
Nonconformists, 178
Nore, Mutiny at the, 294
Norfolk, Duke of, executed, 175
Normans, Social condition of, 64
Northallerton, Battle of, 59
North, Lord 286
Norwich, Bridal of, 49
Nottingham, Countess of, 179

Oates, Titus, 231
O Connor, Feargus
Odessa bomb
Odo, Bishop, 52
Offa, 21
Oldcastle, Sir John, 122
O'Neill, Phelim, 212
Ordinance, Self denying, 214
Orleans, Siege of, 126
Otterbourne, Battle of, 101
Oudenarde, Battle of, 249
Oxford, Siege of, 60
Oxford University and James II 238

Palmerston, Lord, 320, 326
Paris, Peace of, 299
Parliament, Houses of, 336, the Long, 211, the Mad, 84, the Short, 211
Parr, Catherine, 164
Patronage in Scottish Church, 252
Pavia, Battle of, 159
Pecquigny, Peace of, 132
Peel, Sir Robert, 318
Pelhams, The, 273
Pembroke, Earl of (Strongbow) 72, 110
Penda, 21
Pendragon, 19
Peninsular War 297
Perceval, Mr, 299
Percy, The first, 52
Perrers, Alice, 97
Perrott, Sir John, 192
Perth, Clan fight at, 183
Philadelphia Congress, 287
Pilgrim Fathers, 210
Pinkie, 167
Pitt, William, the elder, 276, 288
Pitt, William, the younger, 290
Plague, The, 96, 228
Plantagenet marriage, 57
Plassey, Battle of, 277
Plautius, 14
Poictiers, Battle of, 97
Poor Laws, 312
Porteous Riot, 272
Potato blight, 318
Potatoes introduced 195
Poynings Law, 149 190
Præmunire, Statute of, 102
Pragmatic Sanction, 273
Preston, Surrender at, 266
Prestonpans Battle of, 274
Pretender, The old (James), 265
Pretender, The young (Charles Edward), 274–276
Pride, Colonel, 215
Printing, Invention of, 131, 134
Privy Council, The, 339
Puritans, The, 174
Purveyance, 98
Pym impeaches Strafford, 211
Pyramids, Battle of the, 295

Quadruple Alliance, 267
Quatre Bras, The British at, 300
Quebec, Capture of 278
Quiberon Bay, Battle in, 278

Raglan, Lord, 321
Railway mania, 318
Raleigh, Sir Walter, 205
Ramilies, Battle of, 249
Rangoon, Capture of, 307
Rebecca & Daughters, 316
Redan, Struggle for the, 322
Reformation, The, 157
Reform Bills, 310, 328
Remonstrance, The Grand, 212
Repeal Agitation, 316
Restoration, The, 226
Revolution, The, 242
Richard I, 75
Richard II, 100
Richard III, 138
Richard, Duke of York 128
Richard son of Edward IV, murdered, 138

Richelieu, Cardinal, 208.
Richmond, Henry, Earl of, 138
Ridley the Martyr, 172
Rights, Declaration of, 242, Petition of, 209
Rinderpest, The, 326
Riot Act passed, 265
Rivers, Earl, 137
Rizzio, David, 188
Robert I of Scotland, 108.
Robert II of Scotland, 182.
Robert III of Scotland, 182
Rochelle, Siege of La, 209
Roman provinces, 16, remains, 17, walls, 15
Rooke, Sir George, 249
Roses, Wars of the, 129
Rouen, Fall of, 124
Roundheads, 212, 257
Roxburgh Castle, Siege of, 184
Rullion Green, Battle of, 229
Russell, Dr William, 322.
Russell, Lord John (Earl), 310, 326
Russian War, 320
Ruthven, Raid of, 189
Ruyter, Admiral De, 228.
Rye House Plot, 234
Ryswick, Treaty of, 246.

Sacheverell, Dr, 252.
St Albans, Battles of, 129, 130
St Brice, Massacre of, 29
St Giles's Cathedral, 211
St Patrick in Ireland, 39
Saintes, Battle of, 84
Salamanca, Battle of, 299
Salic law, 314
Saratoga, Surrender of Burgoyne at, 288.
Sawtre, Rev William, 120
Scotland, 38, 62, 104, 182
Sebastopol, Siege of, 321
Sedgemoor, Battle of, 237
Septennial Act, 266.
Seringapatam, Capture of, 290
Settlement, Act of, 229, 247
Seven Years' War, 277
Severus, Emperor, 15
Seymour, Jane, 162.
Sharp, Archbishop, 229, 233
Sheriffmuir, Battle of, 266
Ship money, 210
Shrewsbury, Battle of, 119
Sikh War, 317
Simnel, Lambert, 147
Six Articles, Statute of the, 163
Smithfield fires, 171.
Solway Moss, 157
Somerset, Protector, 166, executed, 168.
South Sea Scheme, 267
Spanish marriage, 171
Spanish succession, 249
Speke, Captain, 334
Spensers, The, 92
Spurs, Battle of, 156
Stamford Bridge, Battle of, 36.
Stamp Act, 286
Standard, Battle of the, 59
Star Chamber, The, 148, 210
Steinkirk, Battle of, 246
Stephen, King, 59
Stirling Bridge, Battle of, 107
Stoke, Battle of, 147
Strafford, Earl of, 209, 211.
Strongbow (Earl of Pembroke), 72, 110
Sturt, Australian explorer, 334
Suez Canal, 325
Surajah Dowlah, 277
Sveaborg bombarded, 322.
Sweating sickness, 146.
Sweyn, Danish King, 29

Tadcaster, Battle of, 119
Taillebourg, Battle of, 84
Talavera, Battle of, 298.
Tchernaya, Battle of the, 322.
Telegraphs, 332
Tenchebrai, Battle of, 55
Teneriffe, Battle of, 222.
Test Act, 231
Tewkesbury, Battle of, 133
Thanes, 41
Theodore, King of Abyssinia, 329
Thirty, Council of, 233
Thirty Years' War, 207
Thorough, Strafford's, 209
Tien-tsin, Treaty of, 323
Tiler's rebellion, 100
Torbay, William of Orange at, 241.
Torres Vedras, Lines of, 298.
Toulouse, Battle of, 299
Tournament, 65
Towton, Battle of, 132.
Trafalgar, Battle of, 296.
Treasons, Statute of, 98.
Trent Affair, The, 325
Triennial Bill, 247
Triers, The, 227
Triple Alliance, 230
Troyes, Treaty of, 125.
Tudor family, Origin of, 1[illegible]
Tyndale, William, 162.
Tyrconnel in Ireland, 244
Tyrell, Sir Walter, 54

Uniformity, Act of, 227
Union, Treaty of, Scottish 251, Irish, 295.
Utrecht, Treaty of, 251

Van Tromp, Admiral, 221.
Verneuil, Battle of, 126.
Vespasian, Emperor, 14.
Vezelai, Crusaders at, 75.
Victoria, Queen, 314.
Villenage, 141.
Villiers, George (Duke of Buckingham), 205.
Vimiero, Battle of, 297
Vinegar Hill, Battle of, 294
Vitoria, Battle of, 299
Volunteers, The, 324.

Wagram, Battle of, 298.
Wakefield Green, Battle of, 12
Walcheren expedition, 298.
Wales, Conquest of, 87
Wallace, William, 106
Walpole, Robert, 265, 269, 273
Walters, Lucy, 233
Warbeck, Perkin, 148
Ware, Siege of, 26
Warwick, Earl of, King-mak
Washington, George, 287
Waterloo, Battle of, 301
Wellesley, General Sir Arthur (Duke of Wellington), 290, 298, 320
Wentworth (Earl of Strafford), 211.
Wessex, Kingdom of, 22
Whitsand Bay, 150
Whittington, Richard, 125
Wilberforce, William, 311.
Wilkes, John, 285.
William I. of England, 35, 4
William II. of England, 52.
William III. of England, 241, 24
William IV of England, 310
William I of Scotland (the Lion), 73,
Wills, Australian explorer, Death of, 354.
Winchester, Treaty of, 55, 61.
Wishart, George, 187
Witenagemot, The, 42.
Witt, Admiral De, 228.
Wolfe, General, 278.
Wolsey, Cardinal, 156, 160.
Worcester, Battle of, 221.

York, Duke of, 190
Yorktown, Capitulation at, 28
York, Council of, 210